



Library

University of Pittsburgh

*Darlington Memorial Library*

Class.....<sup>D2r</sup> E188.....

Book..... 044.....


v.1











Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2010 with funding from  
University of Pittsburgh Library System









300 310

50

40

30

20

10

WESTERN

OCEAN

ANTILL

NORTH SEA

TERRA FIRMA

290

300

310

320

Williamson, John 1673-1742

WILLIAM & MARY DUBLINGTON  
UNIVERSITY OF DUBLIN

# The British Empire IN AMERICA,

Containing  
The HISTORY of the Discovery, Settlement, Progress and present State of all the  
**British Colonies,**  
ON THE  
Continent and Islands of *America.*

In Two VOLUMES.

Being an Account of the Country, Soil, Climate, Product and Trade of them, *Viz.*

- |                      |                      |                          |
|----------------------|----------------------|--------------------------|
| Vol. I.              | <i>Carolina,</i>     | <i>Montserrat,</i>       |
| <i>Newfoundland,</i> | and                  | <i>Nevis,</i>            |
| <i>New-Scotland,</i> | <i>Hudson's-Bay.</i> | <i>St. Christophers,</i> |
| <i>New-England,</i>  | Vol. II.             | <i>Barbuda,</i>          |
| <i>New-York,</i>     | <i>Barbados,</i>     | <i>Anguilla,</i>         |
| <i>New-Jersey,</i>   | <i>St. Lucia,</i>    | <i>Jamaica,</i>          |
| <i>Pensylvania,</i>  | <i>St. Vincents,</i> | <i>The Bahama</i>        |
| <i>Maryland,</i>     | <i>Dominico,</i>     | and                      |
| <i>Virginia,</i>     | <i>Antego,</i>       | <i>Bermudas.</i>         |

} Islands.

With curious Maps of the several Places, done from the newest Surveys. By *Herman Moll*, Geographer.

LONDON, Printed for *John Nicholson* at the King's Arms in Little Britain, *Benjamin Tooke* at the Middle-Temple-Gate, Fleetstreet, and *Richard Parker* and *Ralph Smith* under the Piazza of the Royal Exchange. 1708.

2618

1-4-1887  
1887  
1887

---

TO  
**JOHN BROMLEY,**  
 OF  
**HORSET-HALL**  
 IN  
*Cambridgeshire, Esq;*

S I R,

**N**othing had been more preposterous, than to have address'd the History of the *British West-Indies* to a Gentleman who has no Interest there. Such a one would have look'd upon this Design with that Contempt or Neglect which is ever the Effect of Ignorance and Prejudice.

But you, Sir, who are so considerable a Proprietor, both in *England* and *Barbados*, are the best Judge how far this Treatise may be use-

useful and entertaining to the *English* Reader in this Island and that. Your Authority will be sufficient to protect it, as well in *America* as in *Europe*. For none in *England* will imagine I durst offer Falsities for Fact to you, who from your own Knowledge could easily detect them; and none in the Plantations will be severe in their Censures upon a Work which comes forth under the Patronage of one of their greatest Names. Whatever Hardships our *American* Colonies, especially the Islands, have met with at home, nothing has ever been able to shake their Loyalty to the Crown of *England*, or their Affection for the People. They have ever been zealous for the Service of the Prince, and as hearty for that of the Publick.

'Tis these Principles that procur'd you the general Voice of the County where you reside, to represent them in the Parliament of *Great-Britain*. 'Tis these Principles that will always render you useful to the Common-wealth, the Glory of your Native Country, and the Delight of ours.

Among the Scandal which the Enemies of the Plantations maliciously throw upon them, one is, The vulgar Descent of the Inhabitants, which is as ridiculous as unjust; for if by their Prudence and Industry they have rais'd Fortunes, that might ennoble them, if they have Sense to acquire Estates, and Souls to enjoy them; is not that really true Nobility, and that which is deriv'd from a long Roll of *Ancestry*, and enjoy'd without any other Reason and Merit, false and chimerical? I say this with the more Freedom to you, Sir, for that with the Advantages of Fortune you have the Happiness to be descended from one of the most ancient and honourable Families in *England*, which has furnish'd the Law with so  
many

many Ornaments, the Courts with so many Judges, the Chancery with a Lord-Keeper, which lately represented two Counties in Parliament; and was always full of Heroes, and Patriots. It cannot therefore be thought, that I have vindicated the Characters of the Gentlemen of the *West-Indies*, to make my Court to you; but to do Justice to that Worth, which is always noble in the Eyes of Men of Reason and Modesty: And tho there is no Herald-Office, no Court of Arms in *Barbados*, it may be said, without Flattery or Vanity, there is no Trading County in *England* of that Extent, where there are so many Gentlemen of so good Estates, and so good Families.

What other Prejudices have been rais'd by the Enemies of the Plantations against their Interest and Reputation, will 'tis hop'd, in the Opinion of the Impartial, be remov'd by the *Introduction*; but the Historian would not here trouble you with such an unreasonable Controversy, which rather deserves your Contempt than Consideration.

S I R,

The Parliament, of which you were a Member, have lately done several things for their Ease and Advantage; and if there were more Gentlemen, concern'd to promote their Welfare, who would, with the same publick Spirit, maintain it in that Assembly; there's no doubt, but so just a Body would soon redress all their Grievances, and they would again flourish as before they were oppress'd by the late Impositions, which have reduc'd them to their present low Estate.

Addresses of this Nature have so long lain under the Reproach of Insincerity and Adula-

tion, that the Character of a Man of Worth and Honour suffers by appearing in this Manner; but there are certain Qualities so conspicuous in themselves, so universally known and admir'd, and yet so rarely to be met with, that when they are found, 'tis an Injustice to Mankind to pass 'em by in Silence: For if the selfish Spirit that prevails in Court, City, and Country, were without Exception, the Race of Men would be the most sordid and worthless of the Creation. The rare and amiable Qualities we are speaking of, are such as your Love for your Country, your Affection for your Friends, and your Humanity to all; your free use of the Goods of Fortune, which is worthy of the Generous Stock from whence you sprung; and whatever might be added to such a Character as this, would meet with Credit for the sake of such Goodness; but tho' there may be much said of Yours without offending the Truth of History, yet I forbear, knowing it might be suspected in this Place. I therefore conclude with desiring your Protection for the following History, and Permission to subscribe my self with all due Respect,

SIR,

*Your most Humble, and*

*most Obedient Servant,*

J. OLDMIXON.



---



---

# THE PREFACE.

**T**HE Author is apprehensive that this Undertaking will meet with many Censures, rais'd by the Prejudice of some Readers, and the Ignorance of others: The Candid and Impartial will, 'tis hop'd, find sufficient Memoirs to entertain them with Pleasure; and such Faults as may have been committed through Misinformation, they will excuse, when they consider what a difficult Task the History of the British West-Indies must be to an Historian, that never was in America.

Whatever particular Account has been, or might be given of any one of our Colonies, 'tis impossible, unless Men of Interest and Capacity would write it on the Spot, for an exact History of all the British Empire in the West-Indies to be fram'd by one Man in America or Europe, but he must inevitably be guilty of Errors, which will find Matter enough for the Criticks to exercise their ill Nature upon. It will therefore be said, such a Design as this should be undertaken in the Plantations; and since it is so reasonable and so useful, why has it not been done? There's none can tell better than the Writer of this History, who must in Justice to himself own, that tho he believes all who look over his Work, and know any thing of the Subject of it, will rather wonder they meet with so much, than so little in it; yet he has found his Industry to inform himself fully of all

## The PREFACE.

Information from Capt. Congreve, who has had a Command in the Regular Forces there several Years.

Mr. Dockwra and Dr. Cox were both so kind as to inform him fully of the Jerseys, and Mr. Pen did him the same Favour for Pensylvania; those three Gentlemen doing him the Honour to admit him into their Friendship.

It will be seen in the History of Maryland, that he had not the same Helps for that Province; but his Authorities are good, as far as they go.

The History of Virginia is written with a great deal of Spirit and Judgment by a Gentleman of the Province, to whom this Historian confesses he is very much indebted; but in some Places he was forc'd to leave him, to follow other Guides; and whoever compares the one History with the other, will see enough Difference to give that which is now publish'd the Title of New. Several old Writers and modern Papers fell into this Author's Hands, which that Gentleman never saw: However he had seen and knew so much, that by his Assistance, the Account of Virginia is one of the most perfect of these Histories of our Plantations.

For Carolina, Mr. Archdale and Mr. Boone, of whom Mention is made in the History of that Colony, oblig'd him so far, as to communicate several important Facts to him, and let him into the Rise and Causes of the Differences among the People of that Province: They have also printed some Tracts on the same Subject, which were very useful to him.

The History of Hudson's Bay may be depended upon, for the Author took it from Original Papers, he having in his Possession the Journal of a Secretary of the Factory, the Commissions and Instructions of some of the Governours, and other Memoirs, out of all which he could gather no more, and does not believe that even by the Company's Books much more is to be gather'd. The Reader will perceive he is not about looking into a spurious Performance, nor that  
he

he will venture much in giving Credit to what he reads, since there is no Dispute to be made of the Goodness of such Information; from which the Historian has deviated as seldom as was consistent with Decency.

Thus with much Pains and Care he went over the British Empire on the Continent, which is 14 or 1500 Miles in Length, from the Northern Bounds of New-Scotland, to the Southern of Carolina, besides the Tract known by the Name of Hudson's Bay, and another bordering on the River Mississippi, to which the Kings of England pretend, but there is no Notice taken of it in this Work, because there never was any Settlement there, tho it has been attempted.

This Country lies in Florida, Southward of Carolina, and was granted by King Charles I. to the E. of Arundel, which Grant some Years ago was assign'd to Dr. Daniel Cox, and he is the Proprietary. He gave it the Name of Carolana; and in King William's Reign sent two Ships thither, with 200 People, to make a Settlement, intending to prosecute that Enterprize, by dispatching away more Ships with more People, over whom Sir William Waller was to have been Governour; but the French disturbing the first Adventurers, hinder'd their settling there, and this Part of the English Territories in America is neglected; tho by the Situation it must be very pleasant, and by the Description that the Author had given of it, 'tis one of the most amiable Places in the World.

This Account was too little to be incerted particularly in the History, and besides the Writer heard of it too late; as he did also of the Governments of Connecticut and Rhode Island, the latter of which it seems is still separate from that of New-England.

About the Year 1630. King Charles I. made a Grant to Robert Earl of Warwick, of that Part of New-England, which lies and extends it self  
from

from a River there, call'd *Narragantset*, for the space of 40 Leagues, upon a strait Line near the Sea-shore, towards the South-West, and by South or West, as the Coast lies towards *Virginia*, accounting three *English* Miles to the League; and also all and singular the Lands and Hereditaments lying and being within the Lands aforesaid, North and South, in Latitude and Breadth, and in Length and Longitude of, and within all the Breadth aforesaid, throughout the Main Lands there, from the Western Ocean to the South-sea, and all Lands, &c. Which Grant the Earl of Warwick made over to William Viscount Say and Seale, Robert Lord Brooks, Robert Lord Rich, Charles Fiennes, Esq; Sir Nathaniel Rich, Sir Richard Saltonstall, Richard Knightly, Esq; John Pym, Esq; John Hampden, Esq; John Humphry, Esq; and Herbert Pelham, Esq; As appears by a Copy of the Patent, bearing Date, Anno 1631, which was shewn the Historian since this History of New-England was printed; and he desires the Reader to add it to that of Connecticut Colony in particular. He mentions it here the rather, because it confirms what has been reported by several Historians, that Mr. Pym, Mr. Hampden, Mr. Pelham, and other great Men in the long Parliament, were about to remove to New-England before the Alterations that happen'd at home kept them here. This Colony of Connecticut surrender'd their Charter in 1688. and have holden no Courts since.

That of Rhode Island, where stands the Town of Warwick, is a Proprietary or separate Government to this Day. To the History of New-England may be further added, that Mr. Bradstreet mention'd in the following Pages, claim'd the Country of Narragantset, call'd the King's Province. But William Stoughton, Esq; and Peter Bulkley, Esq; Agents for Massachusetts, disclaim'd it. The Sachem

them of that Country formally surrender'd it in 1644. and afterwards in 1664. to King Charles II. which entitl'd the Crown of England to the Propriety. Major Atherston is said to have purchas'd it, but that Purchase was declar'd void. The Magistrates of Rhode Island were Justices of the Peace in Narragantset, and there was a Settlement belonging to it, call'd Providence Plantation. For a Letter was shewn the Historian from K. Charles, directed, To the Governour of Rhode Island and Providence Plantation.

Mount Hope, which is often mention'd in the Article of New-England, was begg'd by Mr. John Crown, who is famous for two excellent Comedies written by him, call'd Sir Courtly Nice and the City Politicks. When his Petition was presented to King Charles II. his Majesty knew nothing of the Country's being taken from the Sachem, Philip, as he declares in the Letter, and wonders he should have no better Information. This Mr. Crown's Father was a Proprietary of Part of New-Scotland, and he begg'd Mount Hope as a Satisfaction for his Loss there, but he had never any Recompence for it, and indeed 'tis no hard Matter to calculate, what a Country should be valu'd at that was never thought worth keeping or planting.

This Digression is to render the Account of those Northern Parts of our American Continent as compleat as could be, and if the Gentlemen of the several Provinces will be so just to themselves and this Design, as to communicate any farther Memoirs to the Author, they shall be inserted in their due Place, if this Treatise is printed again, and all the Errors the Historian has committed, be corrected. He hopes there will not be many material Ones, and recommends to the American Readers, not to condemn him presently, if they meet with things out of their Knowledge, but to suspect their own Judgment and Information, as well as his; for he treats of the Plantations historically,  
and

and was therefore to relate Things past as well as present, and 'twill be unjust for any one to conclude, they never were, because they never heard of them, as too many will incline to do.

His Author for that part of the History which may be call'd the Antiquities, was Mr. Delaet, whose Character for Judgment and Care is allow'd by the Learned and Experienc'd. 'Tis true, the Assistance he had from him was not very considerable; nor was what he found in Hackluit, Purchase, or other Collections of Voyages, much more to the Purpose. Smith of Virginia and New-England gives a better Account of that Part of the Continent than any older Writer; and those of foreign Countries knew so little of our Colonies, that there are not historical Events in them relating to those Parts of America sufficient to fill a Sheet, unless he enter'd into the Indian Stories, among which is much Fable and much Impertinence.

There are several Pamphlets in our Tongue in the Temple Library which he look'd over; as also others which he procur'd elsewhere, and several Accounts transmitted to the Royal Society, that furnish'd him with better Materials than any of the Voyagers have publish'd; for in Hackluit's Time little was known of our Provinces. What is in his Collection is in this, and the whole has been perfected by Inquiries of Persons who have been on the Spot. Some of them have been nam'd, and the rest, tho they were not Persons of the same Note, were of as good Credit.

The Author declares once for all, that there is no part of this History which has not been shewn to Persons who have liv'd in those Parts of the World, and been approv'd of by them, yet he is not so vain as to imagine there are not several Faults, for it was impossible to perform such a Work without it: All he hopes, is, there are fewer than will be expected, together with much more Matter.

As to our Islands: Barbados, the chief of them, makes the chief Part of his History, and the Inhabitants of that fruitful and pleasant Island may take his own Word in most Cases, he having been for above 10 Years conversant with their Affairs, and kept a constant Correspondence with them. They will see that he speaks things of his own Knowledge: And as to the Memoirs of Events which happen'd before his Time, he had recourse to the Papers of an eminent Merchant, Sir John Bawdon, his Uncle, with whom he liv'd, and might have made it much larger, if it would not have run out the History of Barbados to a Size very disproportionable to that of the other Histories. Ligon is old, and his Geographical, and even Natural Account of the Island, differs very much from the present. His Description of Ingenio's, of working Sugar, of clothing Negroes, and several other Things, seems strange to an Inhabitant of the present Barbados; neither does his Account of their way of Living, of the Product of the Island, as the Trees, Plants, &c. agree better with the modern ones. All the Fact in his History will be found in this, and every thing which remains in the same State as it was when he wrote. All the rest is new, and taken from Original Manuscripts. The Historian has been particularly diligent in his Collections and Inquiries concerning this Island, for he takes it to be the most beneficial of any of our Colonies to England, Jamaica perhaps not excepted. He has consulted several Persons who have liv'd there, and communicated what he has done to them, that the Gentlemen of Barbados, some of whom have done him the Favour to place him in the Number of their Friends, may meet with nothing here which may in any wise injure his Reputation with them. All may not be pleas'd; but if he has always been a severe Observer of Truth, let his free speaking be excus'd; for sometimes he could not be so without it. He has not designedly run into an Error, nor told a Fal-sity, to gain the good Will of any Man. Such a  
View

*View would have been as vain as it was base; for where there are so many to be displeas'd for the pleasing of one, the Man must have but a small Portion of Sense, as well as Integrity, that would sacrifice the Character of a faithful Historian to that of a wretched Flatterer. He had many Opportunities to have shewn a vitious Complacency to other Mens Interests, as has been already hinted, if he could have been guilty of so much Baseness; an Instance of which he will relate, to give the World an Idea of Mens Dispositions in this Affair. When he was once in Conversation with a Gentleman, a Proprietary in America, on the Subject of his Country there, he summ'd up all he had to tell him in this Rapture: Our Seas flow with Ambergrease; our Rivers are almost choak'd with Gold; and the worst Mineral we have, which we do not think worth taking up, is Copper; for 'tis so near the Surface, that we may almost stoop and have it. This he introduc'd with a most romantick Account of the Situation of his Country, the Groves of Oranges, Forrests of Cedar, the Fields of Spices, the spacious Plains, noble Harbours, and so many other Advantages, that one could hardly believe he spoke true, when the Writer ask'd him, how many Inhabitants there were, and he answer'd, None? Some Gentlemen have not only recommended the Praise of their Province, but even of their part of it, which was generally done with so much Warmth, that they were immediately suspected, and nothing of that Nature reported, which was not confirm'd by Persons of Ingenuity and Disinterest.*

*As for the Leward Islands and Jamaica, the Historian is not altogether unacquainted with their Concerns, and has had several Manuscript Papers to refer to. Bermudas he has said little of; but as much of Providence as the Subject would bear, having been very much assisted in it by Col. Trot, who was once Governour there.*



To these Authorities he may add, *Pere du Tertre's History of the Charibbee-Islands*, *Davis's of Kidwelly*, &c. but there was little to his Purpose, except their Description of the Animals.

The Maps are newly engrav'd; and tho' some of the Surveys are older than the Description given by the Historian, yet there has been due Care taken in that Performance, and the newest Surveys that could be procur'd were made use of. Some Counties and Parishes may have been added in several Places, which are not mention'd in the Maps, though they are in the Book, which was occasion'd by the Niceness of the Engraver, not to add any thing by a verbal Description, for which he had not a regular Survey to authorize his Corrections. 'Twas for this Reason the Six New Counties in Virginia are omitted; for though 'tis known where about they lye, yet unless they were survey'd, to have incerted them, would have made the rest of the Map imperfect. As the Historian desires the Gentlemen of the West-Indies to do for the Memoirs, the Geographer does the same for the Maps; and if they will transmit any Observations, Amendments, or Additions to be made to them, and will let him understand how he may safely do it, he will be careful to give them Satisfaction.

The Author having thus far given the Reader a View of his Work, recommends it to his Candour, and desires him to weigh well the Difficulties of this Undertaking, before he gives his Judgment. There is no History of any Part of the West-Indies in any Language so full and so particular; and there's no Mistake, which he knows to be such, and has not already provided against it, either in the Body of the Book, or the Preface.

Before he enters upon the *History*, he thinks himself oblig'd to remove some general Objections to our Colonies; for while they are left of any Weight in the Minds of Men, the Author cannot expect that this Work will be receiv'd with the Favour he might hope for, after the Pains he has taken to inform and please his Readers.

---

---

T H E

# INTRODUCTION.

---

*The common Arguments against our Plantations in America, answer'd; and the Advantages of them to England, asserted.*

**T**H E main Objection made by the Enemies of our *Colonies* against them, is, That by draining *England* of her People, they weaken us at Home, and consequently are more hurtful than beneficial to the Kingdom. On this Argument are founded all their Reasons to excuse the ill Usage the *Plantations* have met with; of which particular Mention is made in the particular Histories of the Provinces; we shall therefore in this Place keep to the General Interest, and see how far the Objection will hold good.

'Tis said, People are the Wealth of a Nation, and to take away their People is to impoverish them; those that say it, mean only laborious and industrious People, and not such as have no Employ, or, which is worse, are employ'd

ploy'd only in disturbing and robbing such as have any. If this is granted, as it always has been in this Controversy, those who improve their Talents to most Advantage, are of most Value to a Nation. A Man, whose Skill amounts to no more than to earn 3 d. a Day by his continual Labour, cannot add to the Wealth of such a Kingdom as *England*, because it will not supply his necessary Consumption: However even such a one is less a Burthen to it, than one totally idle. He who earns 6 d. a Day, and consumes just so much, is neither burthensome nor advantagious: But he who by his Industry and Labour, not only maintains himself and Family, but enriches them, is, to the Proportion of his Wealth, so much Addition to the National Stock of the Kingdom. On the contrary, he who labours not at all, or so much as not to encrease the National Stock of his Country, is, to use an eminent Merchant's own

*Sir Dalby Thomas's Hist. Acc. of the Rise & Growth of the W. India Colonies.*

Words, *just good for nothing*: He adds, *To leave this Truth plain beyond Dispute, I beg the Doubter but to consider, that if all the laborious People of the Kingdom left working, and were to live on the Natural Produce of it, to be distributed by them in equal Proportions, by way of Charity, as Parish-Poor and Beggars are now supported, how long it would be before the Nation became necessitous, naked and starving, and consequently the Land and Houses worth nothing.*

Many Reasons may be urg'd to prove, that the Increase of People, wilfully or accidentally idle, is so far from being National Riches, that it is the surest and speediest way to inevitable Poverty, and must decay the Value of the Real and Imaginary Wealth of a Nation, proportionably to the Decay of Industry: But this will be so readily consented to, it would be im-

pertinent

pertinent to enlarge upon it here. Who then will deny, That those Men who add most, by their Labour, to the intrinsic Wealth of the Nation, either Real or Imaginary, and consume least, are best employ'd? On the contrary, that those who consume most, and add least, are the worst employ'd? 'Tis true, all who are not mischievously employ'd, or totally idle, are of some Benefit to the Common Wealth, and should find due Encouragement; and those ought to be most protected, and least discourag'd by the Laws, who are most usefully busy'd for the increasing the Value of the Real and Imaginary Wealth of the Nation. By Real Wealth is generally understood Money, Lands, Houses, &c. by Imaginary, the Art and Labour of the People.

Now as we in *England* are Inhabitants of an Island, we have no ways of conveying our Product and Manufactures abroad, but by Navigation, the best and easiest of all ways; we have no ways of making our selves considerable in the World, but by our Fleets; and of supporting them, but by our Trade, which breeds Seamen, and brings in Wealth to maintain them; such Hands therefore as are employ'd for any of these useful Ends, whether it be the Merchant, the Mariner or the Planter, are most to be encourag'd; for on them depends our Strength, and on that our Safety. If we had none, or but little foreign Traffick, could we long equip those mighty Fleets; that render the *English* Name formidable to the utmost Bounds of the Earth? Would one Man's consuming what another rais'd, and handing Commodities from one to t' other, do our Business, without the Addition of foreign Wealth? No Commodity is truly an Increase of the National Stock,

but that which is exported, and all other Trades receive their Vigour and Life from the Merchant, Commodities rising in Esteem or Value as they are rightly distributed from Place to Place. By him the Mariner is subsisted, the Planter supply'd, and they all mutually assist each other, in promoting the Advantage of all other Tradesmen in particular, and of Trade in general. By Planter in the *West-Indies*, we mean the Country Gentleman, who minds wholly the cultivating the Growths of the Place, and exporting them to *England*; from whence he yearly draws so many Manufactures, as maintain several Families in that Kingdom. 'Tis not easy to decide how much more such a Man is useful than an *English* meer Country Gentleman; when a Labourer in our *American* Colonies is by the before-cited Author said to be of more Advantage to *England*, tho' out of it, than any 130 of the like kind can be in it. His Explanation of this Assertion refers in the first Place to the *Sugar* Plantations; and the Reader shall have it abstracted from him, to judge of it as he thinks fit.

“ 1. The greatest Consumption of Sugar  
 “ is made by the rich and opulent People of  
 “ the Nation. 2. The Quantity yearly pro-  
 “ duc'd is not less than 45000 Tuns. 3. The  
 “ Moiety of this is consum'd in *England*, and  
 “ amounts to about 800000 *l.* in Value. The  
 “ other Moiety is exported, and after it has em-  
 “ ploy'd Seamen, is sold for as much, and con-  
 “ sequently brings back to the Nation in Mo-  
 “ ney, or useful Goods, 800000 *l.* Add to  
 “ this, That before Sugars were produc'd  
 “ in our Colonies, it bore four times the Price  
 “ it does now; and by the same Consumption  
 “ at

“ at the same Price, except we made it our  
 “ selves, we should be forc'd to give in Money  
 “ or Money's worth, as *Native Commodities*  
 “ and Labour, 2400000 *l.* for the Sugar we  
 “ spend.

'Tis certain we bought as much Sugar of *Portugal* as amounted to 400000 *l.* yearly, which is sav'd by our making it. To continue Sir *Dalby's* Explanation :

“ We must consider too the Spirits arising from  
 “ *Melasses*, which is sent from the *Sugar Colonies*  
 “ to the other Colonies, and to *England*; which if  
 “ all were sold in *England*, and turn'd into Spirits,  
 “ it would amount annually to above 500000 *l.*  
 “ at half the Price the like Quantity of Brandy  
 “ from *France* would cost. The *Indigo* coming  
 “ from thence amounts to 50000 *l.* yearly.  
 “ *Logwood*, for which we formerly paid the  
 “ *Spaniards* 100 *l.* a Tun, now comes un-  
 “ der 15 *l.* and amounts to 1000 Tuns a Year.  
 “ *Ginger* amounts to 400 Tuns a Year, and is  
 “ not the 6th part of the Price of what the  
 “ Nation paid formerly for that Commodity;  
 “ not to speak of *Drugs, Woods, Cocoa, Pie-*  
 “ *mento, Spices, Gold and Silver* from the *Spa-*  
 “ *nish West-Indies*, for our Negroes and Manu-  
 “ factures: By all which the Nation saves and  
 “ gains by the People employ'd in those Colo-  
 “ nies 4000000 *l.* per *Ann.* Now if it be confi-  
 “ der'd again, that in all those *Sugar Colonies*  
 “ there is not 60000 White Men, Women,  
 “ and Children, it necessarily must follow, that  
 “ one with another, above what they consume,  
 “ each of them earns for the Publick above 60 *l.*  
 “ per *Annum.* The Rents of Houses and Lands  
 “ in *England*, by Sir *William Petty's* Computa-  
 “ tion,

“ tion, amount to 10000000 *l.* the Consump-  
 “ tion to 50000000 *l.* then by reducing Labour  
 “ and Consumption to a proper Ballance with  
 “ the Produce of Rents, and supposing the  
 “ imaginary Wealth of the whole Kingdom  
 “ to increase in time of Peace the tenth part  
 “ annually, that will be but four Millions,  
 “ which does not amount to 12 *s.* a Head clear  
 “ Increase of Wealth, one with another, above  
 “ necessary and constant Expences; from which  
 “ it follows, beyond Controversy, that Hands  
 “ employ'd in the Sugar Plantations are, one  
 “ with another, of 130 times more Value  
 “ to the Common Wealth than those that stay  
 “ at home. To this some may object, That  
 “ those there consume nothing of Native Com-  
 “ modities, which if they did, as these do who  
 “ stay at home, their Consumption would a-  
 “ mount to 350000 *l.* annually, at 6 *l.* 10 *s.* a Head,  
 “ the Allowance made by Sir *Will. Petty*, and  
 “ others; and would consequently encrease the  
 “ Rents at least a fourth Part of that. But, as  
 “ has been said, whatever is consum'd by idle  
 “ Men, can never encrease either the Real or  
 “ Imaginary Wealth of the Nation, and no-  
 “ thing but the Overplus can be reckon'd ad-  
 “ ditional, which, according to a reasonable  
 “ Computation, cannot be above 2 *s.* a Head;  
 “ so that if we would grant, that those in the  
 “ Colonies did consume nothing of our home  
 “ Produce, the Loss by the want of them here  
 “ could amount only to 1200000 *s.* annually,  
 “ or 60000 *l.*

Thus far we have taken from the Knight,  
 and have only to object against his Number of  
 Souls in the Sugar Colonies, which, at the time  
 he wrote that Tract, was as many more as he  
 men-



mentions, there being then 40 or 50000 *Whites*, Men, Women, and Children at *Barbados* only. However, supposing that we should consume not above 800000 *l.* in Sugar, did we make none, a third Part of what he proposes, and that there was not above 2500000 *l.* gain'd and sav'd by 120000 Men, Women, and Children, double the Number he makes it, every Soul then earns for the Publick near 20 *l.* and consequently every Hand employ'd in the Sugar Plantations is forty times as good as one that stays at home, which is all the Alteration that seems necessary in his Argument.

As to what he says, may be objected, That they consume nothing of Native Commodities: That Objection is best answer'd by the Bills of Entry at the Custom-house. A Man must be so ignorant of Trade, that one may despair of convincing him, who does not know that the Planters in our Sugar-Islands have for themselves, Servants and Slaves, all manner of Necessaries, for the House or the Field, for Cloathing or Food, from *England*. Sir *Dalby* allows five *Blacks* at least for one *White* in the Sugar Colonies, but we cannot agree with him; for when there were 50000 *Whites*, Men, Women and Children, in *Barbados*, as there were when he wrote, can any one suppose there were 250000 *Blacks*? There might be then 80000, and never more, which with 50000 *Whites*, made 130000 Souls in all; and allowing but as many more for the other Islands, who can imagine that 260000 Souls can subsist there, where nothing is to be had but Sugar, Cotton, Ginger, and the Commodities before-mention'd, without consuming prodigious Quantities of all sorts of Goods from *England*, besides the Provisions they have from the Northern Colonies.

In

In treating of the Trade of each Colony, this Matter will be more particularly handled, with Reference to their particular Exports and Imports; but *Barbados* being the Chief of our *Sugar* Islands, comes first naturally to be mention'd on all Occasions. If the Plantations take away one Man to maintain about three at home: If they take up almost half of our foreign Commerce, and are a perpetual Nursery of able Seamen: If they yearly encrease the National Stock 800000 *l.* only, as by the following History will appear, they are of as much Advantage to this Nation in Trade, as near half of all their People elsewhere; for the annual Encrease of the National Stock, according to Dr. *Davenant*, is not above 2000000 *l.*

How they encrease it, is by our Exports; and least the Reader may not have a clear Idea of it, let him see what Judge *Littleton* of *Barbados* wrote on this Head:

Groant of  
the Plan-  
tations.

“ There is one main Advantage by the Plan-  
 “ tations, which has not been sufficiently ex-  
 “ plain'd, and that is, that the *English* have now  
 “ several good Commodities of their own,  
 “ which before they had not, which does very  
 “ much conduce to the enriching them; for  
 “ it is agreed by all who pretend to understand  
 “ Trade, that a Country does then grow rich,  
 “ and then only, when the Commodities ex-  
 “ ported out of it are of more Value than those  
 “ that are imported into it. This Proportion  
 “ between the Importation and Exportation, is  
 “ call'd the Ballance of Trade; and there is no  
 “ way in the World for a Country to grow rich  
 “ by Trade, but by setting this Ballance right,  
 “ and in sending out more than it takes in.  
 “ Some other Tricks and Shifts there are, which  
 “ make

“ make a shew of doing great Matters, but they  
 “ prove idle and frivolous, and signify nothing.  
 “ A Country is, in this Respect, in the same  
 “ Condition with a private Man, that lives  
 “ upon his Land: If this Man sells more than  
 “ he buys, he lays up Money; if he buys more  
 “ than he sells, he must run in Debt, or at  
 “ least spend out of the quick Stock; and  
 “ where the Bought and the Sold are e-  
 “ qual, he has barely brought both Ends to-  
 “ gether.

This Gentleman was a Man of excellent  
 Sense, and this Treatise of his hits the Case of  
 the *Plantations* better than any. He represents  
 their Grievances in the most lively Colours,  
 speaks like a Man, who felt what he wrote,  
 and who complain'd with no dissembled Sor-  
 row.

After he has touch'd on our Argument of the  
 Increase of the National Stock by *Barbados*, and  
 it will hold for the other Sugar Islands, he goes  
 on:

“ Why should *England* grudge at the Prospe-  
 “ rity and Wealth of the Plantations, since all  
 “ that is ours she may account her own, not  
 “ only because we are a part of *England*, (what-  
 “ ever we may be accounted) as it is taken  
 “ largely, but also because all comes to this  
 “ Kingdom of *England*, properly so call'd,  
 “ these two and fifty Shires. By a kind of  
 “ Magnetick Force, *England* draws to it all  
 “ that is good in the Plantations. It is the  
 “ Centre, to which all things tend: Nothing  
 “ but *England* can we relish or fancy: Our  
 “ Hearts are here where-ever our Bodies be:  
 “ If we get a little Money, we remit it to  
 “ Eng-

“ *England.* They that are able, breed up their  
 “ Children in *England.* When we are a little  
 “ easy, we desire to live and spend what we  
 “ have in *England,* and all that we can rap  
 “ and rend is brought to *England.*

It may be pretended, that the other Colonies, where there is no such Consumption of *English* Commodities, as there is not in the Provinces on the *Continent,* have not that Pretence to be an Advantage to *England.* But sure this will not be said of *Virginia* and *Maryland,* of which Colonies, their Trade and Profit to *England,* we have spoken in the Histories of those Provinces. To which we shall add what Sir *Dalby Thomas* wrote on this Subject, in the before-mention'd Treatise.

“ The Price of every Pound Weight of To-  
 “ bacco imported into the Nation before we  
 “ planted it, was from about 4 s. to 16 s. a  
 “ Pound; and now the best *Virginia* is not a-  
 “ bove 17 d. to the Merchant, of which the  
 “ King has 5 d. Two Thirds of the Tobacco  
 “ brought from these Colonies, is exported  
 “ to foreign Markets; which at about  
 “ 3 Pound a Hoghead (the least the Nation  
 “ gets by it) amounts to above 200000 Pound,  
 “ besides the great Quantity of Shipping it  
 “ employs. It is not so little as a Million  
 “ the Kingdom saves yearly by our planting  
 “ Tobacco; so that reckoning the White Peo-  
 “ ple in our Tobacco Colonies to be 100000  
 “ Men, Women, and Children, they, one with  
 “ another, are each of them 12 l. a Year Profit  
 “ to the Nation. There are in those Colo-  
 “ nies, by a probable Computation, 600000  
 “ Negroes and Indians, Men, Women, and  
 “ Chil-

“ Children, and would be more, could they  
 “ readily get Negroes from *Guinea*, every one  
 “ of which consumes yearly two Hilling-Hoes,  
 “ two Weeding-Hoes, two Grubbing-Hoes,  
 “ besides Axes, Saws, Wimbles, Nails, and  
 “ other Iron-Tools and Materials, consum'd  
 “ in Building and other Uses, to the Value of  
 “ at least 120000 *l.* in only Iron-Work: The  
 “ Clothes, Guns, Cordage, Anchors, Sails,  
 “ and Materials for Shipping, besides Beds and  
 “ other Household-Goods, consum'd and us'd  
 “ by them, are infinite: Nor is the Benefit of  
 “ them to the Kingdom sufficiently to be ex-  
 “ plain'd, therefore let it suffice, in one Word,  
 “ to say, that the Produce and Consumption,  
 “ with the Shipping they give Employment  
 “ to, is of an infinite deal more Benefit to the  
 “ Wealth, Honour, and Strength of the Nation,  
 “ than four times the same Number of Hands,  
 “ the best employ'd at home that can be.

To this we can only object, That the Num-  
 ber of *Indians* and Negroes, Men, Women, and  
 Children, is not above one half as many as he  
 makes them; but that of the Whites exact,  
 which Mistake does not prejudice the Argu-  
 ment much, for the *Indians* make the least  
 Consumption of our Goods, and there lies  
 most his Error.

As for the other Colonies, *Pensylvania* is now  
 falling into the *Tobacco-Trade*, *Carolina* into the  
*Silk* and *Rice*, *New-England* into that of *Naval-*  
*Stores*: And indeed since we can so easily, so  
 cheaply, and so safely be furnish'd with these  
 Commodities from thence, it is a Reflection on  
 our Politicks, that we will be oblig'd to the  
 Northern Nations, and send for our Stores to  
 the *Baltick*. *New-York* has the same Advantages  
 of

of *Naval* Stores, and so have all the other Colonies in a less degree. But if *New-England*, *New-York*, the *Ferseys*, *Pensylvania* and *Carolina*, furnish the *Sugar* Islands with Provisions and Cattle, and they could not subsist without them, as they can tell by woful Experience, 'tis enough that they are of such Advantage to *England*; for not to say any thing of the great Exportation of our Commodities to those Provinces, allowing that there are in all 350000 *Whites*, Men, Women and Children, in our *American* Colonies, which is the largest Computation, and they encrease annually, the National Stock 800000 *l.* and the whole Encrease is but 2000000 *l.* yearly, there is but 1200000 Encrease, for the rest of the Subjects of the *British* Empire, computed at 8000000, which is little more than half of the whole Encrease. Thus it appears, that one Hand in the Plantations is as good as twenty employ'd at home, as has been prov'd already, by another way of working it.

Let us further consider the many Mouths that are fed at home by this Trade, the many Families that are enrich'd, the vast Sums it brings into the Exchequer, to which *Barbados* only pays 50000 *l.* yearly, tho not twice as big as *Rutland*, and is after the rate of 10 *s.* for every cultivated Acre in the Island.

Thus we see that the Colonies are far from being a Disadvantage to us by the Men who live there. But then 'tis said, they are certainly so by the Men who die, that they have been Graves for several Years, and kill more Seamen than they breed: Were this true in Fact, as it is false, it should never be objected to them by an *European*.

From whence did that fatal Sicknes come which infected *Barbados* and the other Islands?

Was

Was it not from *Europe*, brought by the Soldiers sent in an ill time for their Defence, being under the leading of Captains that not only betray'd those they brought with them, but those who join'd them. We may see how it was with them before the unhappy Arrival of those sickly Soldiers and Seamen.

“ We employ (says Judge *Littleton*) seven or eight hundred Ships in a safe and healthy Navigation. They find less Danger in a Voyage to our Parts, than in a Voyage to *Newcastle*; and as the Ships come safe, so the Men come sound. Whereas of those that go to the *East Indies*, half the Ships Company (take one Ship with another) perish in the Voyage.

Besides the great Increase of Wealth by our Colonies, added to the National Stock, the Treasure sav'd has been prov'd to be of almost as great Advantage. Nations enough would immediately fall into the *Sugar* and *Tobacco* Trades, and supply us at their own Rates for our Money. We should soon miss our *Plantations* if we had none, and their Enemies then would have their Objections answer'd in a Stile which they might tremble to hear, for Envy has made them too free of their Reflections, especially considering they have so little Appearance of Reason on their side.

Is not the Situation of the Islands for annoying the *Spaniards* or *French* in *America*, a sufficient Argument for us to be as careful of their Defence, as if they were our Frontiers? And this relates more particularly to *Barbados*. Should we in *England* be so negligent of our selves and them, as to expose them to a *French* Con-

Conquest, of which they have been in Danger more than once, What would be the Consequence? All the *Leeward Islands* must inevitably follow; nor could *Jamaica* hold out long. The *French* being to Windward, can send their Men down to *Petit Guaves* with a small Charge, and would force the Inhabitants of *Jamaica* to surrender in a few Months. The Loss of the *Sugar* Islands would soon affect the Northern Colonies, who are of great Use to *England*, for their Tobacco, Masts, Timber, breeding of Seamen, and Navigation. All which, except *Virginia* and *Maryland*, have their chief Dependance on the *Leeward Islands* and *Jamaica*, for their Lumber and Fishery. The Colonies of *New-England*, *New-York*, the *Ferseys*, *Pensylvania*, and *Carolina*, have very little Use for any Navigation directly for *England*, but have a great Trade with the *Sugar-Islands*, which is very much for the Interest of *England*; and if these Trades were lost, one third at least of the Navigation of this Kingdom would follow it. What Effect this would have on the Merchants, Manufacturers, Mechanicks and Mariners, let every reasonable Man judge.

'Tis certain, our *American* Plantations take off more of the Manufactures of *England* than any other foreign Trade whatsoever; and is not this Consideration enough to silence all the Clamours of the unthinking *Peasantry*; for sure no Man who has convers'd in the World, and been tolerably educated, can give into such an Error, or imagine 'tis not well worth our while to spare Hands for the Culture of our Land in *America*.

Should we neglect our Islands, what Port wou'd be left us to enter the *Spanish West-Indies*? What Damage might we not do the *French* and *Spani-*



*Spaniards* from *Jamaica*? Is not that Island a Key that lets us into *Hispaniola* and the *Continent*? 'Twill soon be answer'd, What have we got by it in this War? Which Question let others reply to; I take the Liberty to assert, that there is nothing so plainly to be made out, as that we might have got, and still may get by it. Perhaps too, whether it has turn'd much to our immediate Profit or not, the *French* and *Spaniards* could give a very good Account for us of their Losses by it, and the Expence it has put them to. As little as we have made of the Advantage of its Situation, had we had no Ports so situated, the Plate-Fleets from *Spain* would not have come home with so much Uncertainty and so many Delays. *Jamaica* is an Awe upon them, and has had a Share of their Silver. Why it was not greater, let the Concern'd tell us; for it might have been, we all know. The *French* have not quite so much Reason as we, to be zealous for the promoting Navigation; yet they know their Interest so well, that 'tis a long while ago that they began to put in for a Share of the *American Continent* and Islands; and whatever they have got, they are careful to defend. They have always a great regular Force at *Canada*, for the Preservation of that cold, barren Province, and their Care for the Defence of their richer Plantations is answerable. The *French* King sets such a Value upon his *Plantations*, and is so far from thinking his People lost who go to them, that he pays a good part of the Freight of all such as go thither to settle, and gives them other Encouragements: There's no Man will doubt his understanding his Interest. And if those People weaken'd or impoverish'd him by transporting themselves to *America*, he would sooner send them to the Gallies.

The *Dutch*, we know, have Colonies in the *East-Indies*, do these exhaust and depopulate *Holland*; or are they, at least, a Burthen and Inconvenience? The *Hollanders* are so far from thinking so, that they justly esteem them the chief Foundation of their Wealth and Traffick: Their *East-India* Trade depends on their *East-India* Colonies, and the Greatness and Glory of their State depend on their *East-India* Trade. Tho their Colonies drain and destroy their Men as fast as ours; as their Trade and Wealth encrease, their People encrease also; and 'tis or 'twill be the same with us, when the Plantations are so far eas'd of their Burthens, that they may flourish, and pour in Treasure upon us, which in such Case they would again do as they have formerly done. As to the *Dutch West-India* Colonies; how do they cherish *Surinam*, tho one of the basest Countries in the World? Are they not as sollicitous for the Preservation of *Curasso*, (as 'tis commonly pronounc'd,) and the Settlement of *Tobago*? Did they not spare their Admiral *De Ruyter* with a Fleet, in their War with *France* above 30 Years ago, to fall upon the *French* Sugar Illands; and would they have done it, had they not thought them highly valuable?

What a Figure have the *Portuguese* made in *Europe*, since the *Dutch* drove them in a great Measure out of their *East-India* Trade, in comparison to their Strength and Riches, while they were in Possession of it? The *Portuguese* have so true a Notion of the Advantage of such Colonies, that to encourage them, they admit the Citizens of *Goa* to send Deputies to sit in the Assembly of the *Cortez*: And if it were ask'd. Why our Colonies have not their Representatives? who could presently give a satisfactory

An.

Answer? There are some Persons who pretend the *Spaniards* have ruin'd themselves, by exhausting their Country, for the sake of their *American* Acquisitions. To which may be answer'd, their banishing the Convert-Moors, the *Jews*, and the setting up of the Inquisition, with the Tyranny of their Government, have more exhausted *Spain* than all their Settlements in the *West-Indies*. Had moderate Counsels prevail'd, there would have been no Scarcity of Men in that Kingdom, and their Pride and Sloth have impoverish'd them much more than their Want of Hands. Besides, grant that every Nation best understand their true Interest, do not the *Spaniards* Politicks even now justify our Assertion, That the *West-India* Colonies are highly advantagious to their Mother Countries? What do they fight for at this time? Why do they suffer themselves to be torn to Pieces on all sides? What is this Dispute for? Would they give up the *West Indies* to the right Owner, K. *Charles III.* Matters would soon be accommodated; and without doing it, this War can never be well ended.

We hope the Reader is by this time satisfy'd, that our *American* Plantations are an Advantage, and a very great one, to this Kingdom; and the Arguments brought from Antiquity will be of no use to the Enemies of Colonies.

'Tis said, *Aristotle* speaking of the Wonders of the World, writes, "That certain  
 " *Carthaginian* Pilots having discover'd a vast  
 " Island, very fruitful, beyond *Hercules Pillars*:  
 [Which must be *America*, for *Britain* was  
 known to them, so were *Africa* and the *East*]  
 " several Families of that Republick left  
 " their Country, to transport themselves thi-  
 " ther, and settle there; but the Magistrates

“ of *Carthage* forbid any, on severe Penalties,  
 “ to make that Voyage.

By which means 'twas so neglected, that the Country became unknown again, till 'twas discover'd by *Columbus* 1700 Years afterwards. This is told us by some Inquirers into the History of *America*; of which more will be said, when this Author treats of those Parts of it that belong to the *Spaniards*, *Portuguese*, *Dutch*, *Danes* and *French*, as he intends to do, according as this Treatise is encourag'd. Tho' the *Carthaginians* might have had such an ill Opinion of Colonies, that is no Argument of their being hurtful; for the Judgment of greater Nations, and the Success of it make against them. Did the *Athenians* and other *Greeks* lose by the Colonies they sent into *Asia*? Or rather, was not *Ionia* the Barrier of *Greece*, which defended it against the *Persian* Usurpation? Did these Colonies dispeople *Greece*? Is there any Complaint of it in all the *Greek* Story? No certainly! On the contrary, the *Grecian* States thriv'd after it; their Navigation encreas'd, and by their Navigation they became Masters of *Asia*; for had they not destroy'd the Naval Power of the *Persians*, they could not have injur'd their Dominion by Land. But after they were entirely Masters at Sea, they never ceas'd till they were so at Land also. Was it ever pretended that the *Roman* Colonies dispeopl'd *Rome*? Whenever that wise and renown'd State thought it convenient to send forth a Colony, Thousands of People were sent away at a time, at the publick Charge, and that as far as the *Tygris* on the one hand, and the *Tweed* on the other. These Colonies were the Security of their Conquests; and the greatest Politicians have been of Opinion,

“ That

“ That as the *Roman* Empire was the greatest  
 “ that ever the World saw, so it chiefly ow'd  
 “ its Grandeur to its free Emission of Colo-  
 “ nies.

It would not be very difficult to prove, that in the present Circumstances of Affairs, the *British* Colonies are, or may be much more advantageous to the *Britains* than the *Roman* Colonies, of which they were so free, were to [the *Romans*, by how much more the Safety of a Nation is of greater Consequence than its Extent of Empire ; but that would draw this Tract out to too great a Length. If we have not been too tedious already, 'tis well ; and we shall leave the Decision of this Argument now to the Reader, having said as much for it as we could, and as we believe is necessary to convince the Impartial and Disinterested, That our Colonies in *America* are so far from being a Loss to us, that there are no Hands in the *British* Empire more usefully employ'd for the Profit and Glory of the Commonwealth.

Of all our *American* Commerce that of Sugar is most valuable, because most necessary. Sir *Josiah Child*, in his Discourse of Trade, speaking of this, says,

“ It is in his Majesty's Power, and the Parlia-  
 “ ment's, if they please, by taking off all Char-  
 “ ges from Sugar, to make it more entirely  
 “ an *English* Commodity, than White Herrings  
 “ are a *Dutch* Commodity ; and to draw more  
 “ Profit to the Kingdom thereby, than the  
 “ *Dutch* do by that. And that in Consequence  
 “ thereof all Plantations of other Nations,  
 “ must in a few Years sink to little or nothing.

This Authority will confirm all that has been said before, and it might be made out, which way so great Good may be done to the Publick; but that would be to enter into the *detail* of the Hardships the Colonies have lain under for many Years, the Means of easing them, and other Articles, some of which are treated of in the particular Histories of the Plantations; and others that remain, we must forbear mentioning till a more convenient Time and Place offer; for we have already kept the Reader too long from the Story.

---

Adver-

## Advertisement.

**A**LL Gentlemen, Merchants, or others, who live in our American Colonies, and will communicate any thing to the Author, to be added or amended in the next Edition of this History, are desir'd to direct it to either of the Booksellers whose Names are in the Title-Page of this Book, and Care shall be taken to have it inserted.

There

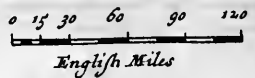
There are some few *ERRATA's* of the  
**PRESS**; as,

**V**OL. I. Page 403. l. 6. del. *him*, read *Raddison*. p.  
344. l. 1. read *by the King*. p. 349. l. 19. del. *Go-*  
*vernour of Providence*. Vol. 2. p. 110. *Baronets created the*  
*same Day* should be only *Sir John Colliton* and *Sir James*  
*Modiford*. p. 112. for 150000, read 130000, in the Num-  
ber of Souls. The rest are mostly Litterals, and the Rea-  
der will easily correct them.

**T H E**

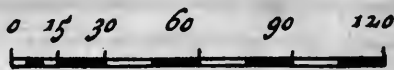


A New Map of  
**NEWFOUND  
 LAND,**  
**NEW SCOTLAND**  
*The Isles of Breton, Anticosts, St. Johns &c Together with the Fishing Bancks.*  
 By H. Moll Geographer.



51  
50  
49  
48  
47  
46  
44

51  
50  
49  
48  
47  
46  
45  
44



English Miles

TH

V  
oern  
same  
Mod  
ber  
der

le

I.

pond  
le I.

en I.

Bonavista  
Flowers

Worth Head

North Head

Adventure Head

Bay  
Breakheart P.

Bacolden I.

ception Bay

C. St. Francis

Forbay

St. Johns

Petty Harbour

Bull Bay

Goose I.

Ferryland Head

Freshwater Bay

C. Race

le Cove

O  
C  
E  
A  
N

The

Great

The Virgin's Rocks

Banck of

Newfound

Land

ink

THE  
HISTORY  
OF  
NEWFOUNDLAND.

Containing

An Account of its Discovery,  
Settlement, Encrease, Pre-  
sent State, Inhabitants, Cli-  
mate, Soil, Product, Trade,  
&c.

**T**HIS large Island was discover'd by *Sebastian Cabot*; who was sent to the *West-Indies* by *Henry VII*, in the Year 1497. to make Discoveries. 'Tis of a Triangular Figure; as big as *Ireland*, about 300 Leagues in Circumference; separated from *North Canada* on the Continent to the North, and *New-Scotland* to the South; about as far as the nearest part of *England* is from *France*: 'Tis no more than 600 Leagues distant from the *Lands End*; and the *Great Bank* is hardly half way to *Virginia*: It lies between 46 and 53 Degrees of North Lat. and has many commodious Bayes along the Coast; some of them running into the Land towards one another more than 20 Leagues.

A. D.  
1497.

The Figure of the Island.

Its Latitude.

But before we enter upon a further Description of the Country, we shall proceed with the History of it from its Discovery to its Settlement by the *English*.

Discovery.

In the Reign of *Henry VIII*, Mr. *Thorn* and Mr. *Elliot*, two English Adventurers, made a Voyage thither; and one Mr. *Hore*, another Adventurer of our Nation, attempted a Settlement, but was reduc'd to such Streights, that many of his Company were kill'd and eaten by their Fellows: Those who surviv'd, were so chang'd, that Sir *William Butts*, a *Norfolk* Knight, did not know his Son at his Return, and cou'd not be convinc'd 'twas the same Person, till he shew'd him a Mark in his Body which his Father remembred. The English after this neglecting the Place, the *French* and *Portuguese* resorted to it, and carry'd on a very profitable Trade in Fish and other Commodities. In the year 1579. Captain *Richard Whitburn* of *Exmouth* in *Devonshire*, was employ'd by Mr. *Cotten*, a Merchant of *Southampton*, to fish at the *Great Bank*; but his Companions not being able to endure the Cold, he put into *Trinity-Harbour*, where they kill'd store of Fish, Deer, Bears, Beavers, Seals, Otters, Sea-Fowl, &c. and having made a tollerable Voyage, return'd to *England*. In 1583. Mr. *Crook*, a Merchant of the same Port, fitted him out for the same Voyage; and while he was at *Newfoundland*, Sir *Humphry Gilbert*, a *Devonshire* Knight, and a famous Adventurer, related to Sir *Walter Rawleigh*, came thither with two stout Ships and a Pinnace, and brought with him a Commission from Queen *Elizabeth* to take possession of the Place in her Name, which he did in *St. John's Harbour*, Mr. *Whitburn* my Author being present. Sir *Humphry* sailing thence towards *Virginia*, lost his biggest Ship; and he himself going aboard the Pinnace, was cast away in his Return to *England*: His other Ship, Captain *Hay* Commander, arriv'd and brought the News of that worthy Gentleman's hard Fortune.

1585.

Two Years afterwards, Sir *Bernard Drake* of *Devon*, was sent thither with a Squadron of Men of War, and took several *Portuguese* Ships laden with Fish and Oil, which he brought into *England* as Prizes: For tho' the *French* and *Portuguese* went thither to fish, the English look'd on themselves as the true

Lord.

## The History of Newfoundland.

3

Lords and Proprietors of the Country, as appears by several Grants from the Crown before the French seated themselves there, and the Confession of Foreigners themselves: tho' 'tis pretended *John Verazzan*, a Florentine, sent by *Francis I.* the French King, possess'd himself of the Island in the Name of that Prince, calling it *Terre Neuve*, or *Newfoundland*, yet that does not lessen the Right of the English to this Country; for it was done several years after *Sebastian Cabot* had been there a second time; and brought thence 3 of the Natives, whom he presented to *Henry VIII.* as a Token of his having taken possession of the Place in his Name: And Sir *Humphry Gilbert* when he was there, forbad all other Nations to fish on the Coast.

Hæc Insula ab Anglis, uti apparet, primum inventa, Delaet.

'Tis true, the English were not for a long time very fond of settling on such an unfriendly Shoar, where there were few or no Conveniencies for Life, but Interest at last prevail'd; and in the Year 1609.

Mr. *John Guy* a Merchant, and afterwards Mayor of *Bristol*, who wrote a Treatise to encourage Persons to undertake a Settlement, by writing and solliciting the Business succeeded so well, that in the following Year King *James* made a Grant, dated

*April* the 10th, 1610. of all that part of the Island from *Cape Bonavist* in the North, to *Cape St. Mary's* in the South, to the Earl of *Northampton* Lord Keeper, Sir *Lawrence Tansfield* Lord Chief Baron, Sir *John*

The First Newfoundland Company.

*Dodderidge* King's Sergeant, Sir *Francis Bacon* Solicitor General, Sir *Daniel Donn*, Sir *Walter Cope*, Sir *Piercival Willoughby*, Sir *John Constable*, *John Weld* Esquire, Mr. *Ellis Crisp*, Mr. *Richard Bowdler*, Mr. *Anthony Haviland*, Mr. *William Lewis*, Mr. *Humphry Hook*, Mr. *John Guy*, Mr. *Phillip Guy*, Mr. *William Meredith*, Mr. *John Doughtie* and others; who sent over a Colony thither under the Direction of Mr. *John Guy*: This Gentleman arriv'd there in 20 days,

1610.

landed at *Conception-Harbour*; and he and his Companions built Houses, or rather Hutts, for their Habitations, during their stay. Mr. *Guy* behav'd himself so courteously to the Natives, that he entirely gain'd their Friendship, and the English were not at all disturb'd by them in carrying on their Settlement, as they were in other Places. In the next Year 1611.

1611.

Captain *Whitburn* went thither again, and the Arch

## The History of Newfoundland.

- Pirate *Peter Easton* came here with 10 Sail of stout rich Ships; he desir'd Mr. *Whitburn* to procure a Pardon for him, and would have return'd to *England*: In expectation of it, he waited on the Coast of *Barbary*; but the Court tiring out his patience, he enter'd the *Streights* with his Treasures, and the Duke of *Savoy* took him into his Service. There was very little Frost this Year in *Newfoundland* all Winter long, which, if true, is next to a Miracle. In the Year ensuing, the English found some of the Indian Habitations, which were Hutts made of Poles set round, and meeting on the Top, about 10 Foot broad, cover'd with Deer Skins, and the Fire in the middle.
1612. In the next Year, 54 Men, 6 Women, and 2 Children winter'd there, and the Season prov'd moderate. The English sow'd Wheat and Rie, and planted Turnips and Coleworts, which 'tis said grew as well as in *England*; and this is the more rare, because Wheat and other Grain cannot now be brought to thrive there. The new Planters got plenty of Fowl and Fish for Food; and Bears and Otters for Skins: But we have reason to believe that things did not answer their Expectation, for 'tis certain that Mr. *Guy* and his Colony return'd to *England*. The Disease that troubled them most, was the Scurvy, which they cur'd with their
1613. Turnips. In the Year 1614. Sir *Henry Manwaring* was sent thither with a Squadron of 5 Men of War to secure the Fishery. And in the following Year Captain *Whitburn* made another Voyage, carrying with him a Commission from the Admiralty, to *Impannel Juries, and make Inquiry upon Oath, of divers Abuses and Disorders committed amongst Fishermen yearly on that Coast.*
1614. Dr. *W. Vaughan* of *Carmarthenshire*, purchas'd a Grant from the Pattentees for part of the Country, to make a Settlement, which however he never effected. In 1616. Captain *Whitburn* was taken
1615. in his way from *Newfoundland* to *Lisbon* with a Cargo of Fish; and in the Year 1618. he went thither as Dr. *Vaughan's* Deputy; tho' whom he was to govern, we don't find any where mentioned by himself or other Writers; or that there was any Settlement of English till 2 or 3 years afterwards, when Sir *George Calvert*, Principal Secretary of State to King *James*, got a Grant of the best part of the Island. This Gentleman
1616. 1618.

## The History of Newfoundland.

5

tleman being of the Romish Religion, was uneasy at home, and had the same Reason to leave the Kingdom, as those Gentlemen had who went to *New-England*, to enjoy the Liberty of his Conscience: He therefore resolv'd to retire to *America*, and finding the *Newfoundland* Company made no use of their Grant, he thought of this Place for his Retreat; to which end he procur'd a Patent for that part of the Island that lies between the Bay of *Bulls* in the East, and Cape *St. Mary's* in the South, which was erected into a Province, and call'd *Avalon*, the Name it goes by to this Day.

How this Grant cou'd be made without the Consent of the former Proprietors, we cannot comprehend; for he seated himself within the Limits of their Territories: And he either agreed with them for it, or King *James* invaded the Company's Property. Sir *George*, afterwards Lord *Baltimore*, sent over Persons to plant and prepare things for his Reception; and in 1621. Capt. *Edward Wynn* went thither with a small Colony at Sir *George's* Charge, who seated himself at *Ferryland*, built Houses, planted a little Garden, and set up a Salt-Work in 1622. and the same Year, Himself, Capt. *Powel*, 21 Men, 7 Women, and 2 Boys Winter'd there. In the following Year the Lord *Faulkland*, Deputy of Ireland, sent a Colony thither under Sir *Francis Tanfil*, who return'd without making a Settlement.

When Capt. *Wynn* had giv'n Sir *George* a satisfactory Account of his Proceedings, he remov'd thither with his Family, built a Fine House and strong Fort at *Ferryland*, Northward of *Cape de Raz*, and dwelt there some time; but having a better Settlement in view in *Virginia*, he return'd to *England* to get the Grant of the Country which is since call'd *Maryland*: However he still retain'd the Propriety of *Avalon* in *Newfoundland*, and govern'd the little Colony at *Ferryland* by Deputies till his Death. His Son *Cacilius* Lord *Baltimore* did the same, till the distractions in *England* during the Civil War, render'd his Possession precarious; and about the Year 1654. Sir *David Kirk*, a Gentleman whose Fortune oblig'd him to change the Climate more than his Constitution, went thither, and by Warrant of the Govern-

1620.

Lord Baltimore's Settlement.

1621.

1622.

1623.

1654.

Sir David Kirk's Settlement.

ment then in being, possess'd himself of the Lord *Baltimore's* Plantation, which he afterwards treated with that Lord to purchase; but the Family of *Calvert*, wou'd never formally give up their Pretences, notwithstanding which Sir *David* liv'd there all his time, gave his Name to a *Sound* on the Western Shoar; and his Children and Grand Children dwelt there after him, the latter being reduc'd to the mean Condition of the Ordinary Inhabitants. Sir *David* undertook an Expedition against the *French* at *Canada*, and destroy'd their Settlements, which the French not only recover'd in the Reign of *Charles II.* but they were suffer'd in his time first to settle on the Southern Shoar of *Newfoundland*, to fortify themselves at *Placentia*, *St. Peter's*, and other Places. Thus they who are Intruders, by their Industry, and the Convenience of their Neighbourhood with *Canada*, the Glory, such as it is, of the French Dominions in *America*, have got the better Part of this Island, and have a more numerous Colony and better Fortifications than the English, who have all along contented themselves with some scatter'd Settlements on the Coasts, which they do not call by the Name of *Towns*, but by that of *Harbours*. Before we go on further with our History of the Country, we shall give an Account of the Places where the English have settled, the number of Families, by the latest Surveys taken from a Merchant who liv'd some time in the Island, in what way they live, for their Constitution does not deserve to be call'd a Government. Of the Indians, the Climate, the Soil, Animals, Trade, and other things worthy the Reader's Knowledge.

The Isles.

Under the Name of *Newfoundland* those Isles are comprehended which lie on the West Side of it in the Gulph of *St. Lawrence*, and the River of *Canada* or *New France* to the North and West. These Isles are 15 in number, of which the most considerable are, the Isles of the Sand or Bank of *Cape Breton*, *St. John's* Isle about 30 Leagues long, 16 over, and 90 in Circuit; 'tis properly nothing else but a great Forest of Fir-trees, and is surrounded with steep Rocks. *Cape Breton* Isle in the South of the Gulph of *St. Lawrence*, is 60 Leagues long, 10 or 12 broad, and 140 in Circuit; 'tis almost cut in two Parts by that Gulph.

Robbe.  
Geog.

The



## The History of Newfoundland.

The Isle of *Assumption* is also call'd *Anticosti*, 'tis about the bigness of *Cape Breton* Island, situated at the Mouth of the Great River of *Canada*; *Bears Port* is the best Haven in it. Between *Anticosti* and the flat Island, the old Writers tell us was the best Cod Fishing, and that 'twas common to take 100 in an Hour there. 'Tis certain so many have been caught in an hour; but 'tis as far from being a common thing, as that Place from being the best on the Coast for Fishing, neither the English nor French ever fishing between those Islands.

The English had Settlements formerly as far as *Cape St. Mary's* on the Southern Shoar; but now they begin at *Ferryland* Head, and are scatter'd along the Coast at 8 or 10 Miles distance from one Harbour to another, as far as *Greenpond*: And passing *Cape de Raz*, the most Easterly Point of Land in the Island, we come to

*Ferryland*, where are about 30 Houses and Families.

<i>Cape Broil,</i>	. . . . .	12
<i>Bay of Bulls,</i>	. . . . .	20
<i>Brigas Bay,</i>	. . . . .	6
<i>Bell Inn,</i>	. . . . .	3
<i>Toads Cove,</i>	. . . . .	2
<i>Mummables Bay,</i>	. . . . .	6
<i>Petty Harbour,</i>	. . . . .	6
<i>St. John's Town,</i>	. . . . .	60

The latter is call'd a Town, and is situated within the Neck of the Harbour in the Bay, form'd by a River that falls into the Sea there; the Mouth of that Harbour is about half a Mile over: On the North Side of it at the Entrance is a Battery, and another on the South-East, where there's a cover'd Fortification, and 8 or 10 Guns, which with the opposite Battery command the Harbour; and render it almost impossible for an Enemy to come at *St. John's Town*, there being besides this a Chain of 15 Tunn weight, which they can let down a-cross it from one Fortification to another. There was a Church before the late Invasion of the French. The Houses were built on the Northern Shoar, and every Family had a sort of a Wharfe before their Houses to dry their Fish on. The Church then stood about the Middle of the Town, but since

## The History of Newfoundland.

for the better Security of the Settlement, the English have remov'd their Dwellings. The Fort there is mounted with about 50 Guns, including the Outworks added by Col. *Richards*, when he commanded there, A Garison consisting of an independant Company of Foot, whose Captain at present is Major *Thomas Lloyd*, always do Duty there, and in the late Troubles were of great Service to the Country. Within the Fort on the Right Hand and on the Left are Barracks for the Soldiers, and opposite to the Gate the Captain's House, built *a la Modern*, with Sash Windows, and is a very fair Edifice. Next to *St. John's Town* is,

<i>Kittavitty,</i>	. . .	20	Houses and Families.
<i>Torbay,</i>	. . .	4	Families.
<i>Holyrood,</i>	. . .	}	12 Families.
<i>Salmon Cove,</i>	. . .		
<i>Havre de Grace,</i>	. . .		
<i>Carboneer,</i>	. . .	30	Families.
<i>Bay Virds,</i>	. . .	10	Families.
<i>Old Parlikin,</i>	. . .	6	Families.
<i>New Parlikin</i>	deserted.		
<i>Silly Cove.</i>			
<i>Trinity Harbour,</i>	. . .	12	Families.
<i>Bonavist,</i>	. . .	25	Families.
<i>Greenpond Island,</i>	. . .	3	Families.

In all 267 Families, some of which are very large; and all together, before the French destroy'd the Settlements from *Cape de Raz* to *St. John's Town*, contain'd 4000 English Inhabitants, Men, Women and Children; tho in the year 1698, there were but 1500 Souls, the Number encreasing after the rate of about 500 every Year, till they came to be upwards of 4000. Most of the People fled to *St. John's Town*, and were safe there; but such as cou'd not crowd into the Fort were abandon'd to the Mercy of the Enemy, who burnt all the Houses in the West End of the Town; and the few they left, were, as they said, only spar'd that they might be a Receptacle for themselves when they came there again, which they threatned to do, but have not yet been as good as their Words. They staid in the Town  
5 Weeks,

5 Weeks, and continually harrast the Soldiers in the Fort by False Allarms: At last, they were tir'd with attacking, before the English were with defending the place, and left it, carrying away with them some hundreds of the Inhabitants.

The English had no Settlement for many Years farther than *Bonavist*; but 10 Years ago they sat down at *Greenpond* Island, and thus take up the N.E. and E. Part of the Country, as the French do the S. and S. W. the Natives living in the North. There are several fine Bays within the limits of the English Territory, as; *Bonavist*, *Trinity*, *Conception*, which stretch themselves towards the South West; *Torbay* and *Capelin* Bay, *St. John's* Harbour, the Bay of *Bulls*, *Fresh Water* Bay, and others: For there's no Shore in the World so well accommodated with Excellent Harbours. On the French side are the Bays *Trepasey*, *St. Mary's*, *Borrell* and *Placentia*, which extend their Arms towards the North. The Great Bay of *St. Peter* lies on the South West side of the Island 20 Leagues distant from the River of *Canada*. The Bottom of all the Bays meet within the Compass of a small Circuit, by which means the Communication from Bay to Bay is easy. There are abundance of other Bays round about the Western Shore, as far as the *Great Bay*, and many more between that and *Trinity* Bay, which lies in about 49 Deg. N. L. and is very commodiously situated to receive Shipping in bad Weather. It has 3 Arms or Rivers, long and large enough for many hundred Sail of Ships to moar fast at Anchor, above a Mile from the Harbours Mouth. The Bay of *Flowers* near *Greenpond* is Dangerous for shelves. The Bay of *Trepasey*, which is the present Bounds of the English, Southward, lies in about 46 Deg. N. L. is a bold and safe Coast, and convenient for Ships in distress to touch at, passing to or from *Virginia*, *New England* or the *Bermudas* Isles.

The Climate is very hot in Summer and Cold in Winter; the Snow lies on the Ground 4 or 5 Months; and the English in the Northern Parts are forc'd to remove from the Harbours into the Woods, during that Season, for the convenience of Firing. There they build themselves Cabbins, and burn up all that Part of the Woods where they sit down. The next Winter they do the same

The Climate.

Way of Living.

by

by another, and so clear 'em as they go. The People at *St. John's* Town who do not remove, are put to great Streights for want of Firing. Wood, 'tis true, is very plentiful, but the Difficulty is to come at it, the Access to the Forests for Rocks and Snow being very troublesome, and sometimes impassable; and 'tis no small part of the Profits of the Under-Officers of the Garison to let out their Men to fetch Wood. There's hardly any stirring out of the House for 5 Months in the Year. The Inhabitants have no Corn nor any other sort of Provision or Necessaries, (except Wild Fowl, Fish, and Venison) but what is sent them from *Europe*. The Island is full of Mountains and *impracticable* Forests; its Meadows are like Heaths, and are cover'd with a sort of Moss instead of Grass. The Soil is good for nothing, being a Mixture of Gravel, Sand and Stones. Thus says the Baron *La Hontan*, and several Gentlemen, whom I have consulted upon the matter, particularly Capt. *Francis*, a Man of Worth and Honour, who commanded there in the Year 1702. And yet Mr. *Guy*, Capt. *Whitburn*; and from them Mr. *Delaet* set it out as a Paradise, as fruitful as the Banks of the *Nile*. Without the Labour of Mens Hands, says Capt. *Whitburn*, the Earth produces great Plenty of Green Pease, Fitches and Haumes, and great Store of Hay may be made with little Labour. Strawberries, Raspberries, Bilberries, Pears, Cherries, Filberds, &c. are there in abundance; as also Flowers: And for Corn, the Ground is as apt to bear as the *English* Soil. I thought it might not be improper to shew the difference that there is in the account of the Soil giv'n by different Persons. Mr. *Guy* and Capt. *Whitburn* were, as one may perceive, willing the Island should be inhabited by the fair Description they gave of it, whereas 'tis in truth one of the most uncomfortable Places in the Universe for 6 Months in the Year, and not one of the most delightful for the other 6. We may see by this, that even Men of the best Judgment, as *Delaet* is thought to be, may err when they treat of things which they must take upon trust, and that we shou'd be cautious how we give Credit to those Authors who write of Plantations wherein they are themselves concern'd. As this Place is scarce tolerable

The Soil.

La Hontan.

*Æstate  
Sponte sua  
non modo  
Lætissima  
gramina sed  
& varias  
fruges  
progengeret.* *Delaet.*  
*Whitburn.*  
P. 47.

to the English for the Seasons, so 'tis no less wretched in its Government, which is altogether as barbarous as that of their Fellow-Inhabitants the Indians.

They have no settled Governour: But in time of *The Go-*  
Peace the first Master of a Ship that arrives there, *vernment,*  
tho he commands a Bark but of 30 or 40 Tuns, is Chief Governour for that Fishing Season, by the Stile of, *Lord of the Harbour.* In time of War the Governour is more noble, for then 'tis lodg'd in the Commadore, or Commander of the Squadron who is sent thither to defend the Fishery. If there come but two or three Men of War, the eldest Captain is Governour of the Country as well as Admiral at Sea; if but a single Ship, the Commander has that honourable Office, and in the Absence of the Captains of the Men of War, and the Lord of the Harbour, the Captain of the Land Forces in the Fort of *St. John's* Town, is Governour by his Place; and both the one and the other are Lord Chancellors, and decide arbitrarily in all Cases. There's no need of much Law, for the Inhabitants have not much Land, and no Money. They truck with one another for what they want and have; and Breaches of the Peace, or taking away a Man's Goods without giving Truck, stealing of Nets or Fishing-Tackle, are the main Causes that come before the Governour for the time being, who summons the Criminal before him, and his Sentence is definitive. If 'tis the Land-Officer, he keeps 'em in awe by threatning 'em with a File of Musketeers; and as much as they are without Law and Lawyers, the want of them, for what I can hear, is one of their least Inconveniencies. If a Man commits murder, he is sent in Chains to *England*, and unless Witnesses are sent with him, which is expensive and not always possible, he takes his Trial at the *Old Baily*, is acquitted, and goes home again; as was the Case of a Person who was accus'd of Sodomy 3 or 4 years ago. As severe as the Climate is, it agrees very well with English Constitutions, and our Countrymen have generally been healthy there, except when they brought Diseases with them.

As for the Product of the Country, Fir and Spruce *Trees.*  
Trees are the most remarkable, being reckon'd as fit for Masts, as those of *Normay.* Pine and Birch-Trees are as big

big there as any where, and almost all sorts of Timber-Trees abound in the Island. As for Quadrupedes, Dear, Hares, Foxes, Squirrels, Wolves, Bears, Beavers and Otters, afford them Plenty of Food; Pleasure and Traffick; and may we believe Capt. *Whitburn*, the wild Beasts as well as the Natives, were so civil to the first Discoverers, that they never gave 'em the least molestation, or put 'em to much trouble to catch 'em.

Beasts.

Fish.

Trade.

But such Stories as these, are of equal Credit with that of the Mermaid he pretended to see; and we shall not endeavour to impose either of 'em as Truth on our Readers: What's certain, is; That the Sea on this Coast is almost full of Fish; as Cod, the staple Commodity of the Country, Salmon, Herrings, Mackerel, Flounders, and an infinite Number of Trouts in the Rivers, which are not very broad or long, but there's plenty of them, and of Springs of good Water: Fowl for Food, and Game is to be met with every where of all sorts, and is the greatest Convenience in the Country; the Trade of which consists in the Fishery, one of the most beneficial in the World, and yet it has been miserably neglected. Does it not look something like a Paradox, that we who are Masters of the Sea, should not be Masters of Trade, and especially of that Trade which is by Right our own; and that the French, the meanest Nation in the World with respect to Commerce, considering their Advantages, shou'd rival us in so considerable a Branch of our Traffick? 'Tis pity, we who have driv'n 'em out of the *British* and the *Mediterranean* Seas, should not clear the *Atlantick* of 'em, and be entirely Masters of our own Fishery, which wou'd be so advantagious to the Publick in general, and private Men in particular: For besides the Encouragement it gives to Navigation, the Seamen that it breeds, and the Trades that it maintains, it encreases the National Stock wonderfully; for let a Ship of 150 Tuns, Mann'd with 20 Hands make the Voyage with nothing but Victuals and Fishing-Tackle, she shall bring 3000 *l.* worth of Fish to Market in a good Year; and that's a certain Gain to the Kingdom, as well as to private Men. The English and French seldom load less than 500 Ships a year, to

France,

France, Portugal, Spain and Italy, with Cod and Poor. The Fishery

John: And if the former did rightly consider the vast Advantages of this Trade, they would spare no Cost to establish it on so firm a Foundation, that all the Nations of Europe cou'd not hurt them in it. They would think no Expence too great in building Forts, and fortifying the Harbours, so that they may command the Fishery in them: They would gladly be at the charge of a Squadron of Men of War to protect our own Fishers, and hinder others from fishing; and if they always lay there, we might easily in a few years engross the Trade to our selves, drive the French out of the Island, and the Neighbouring Continent; which, tho it may seem to be more easily projected than 'tis to be effected, is a very feasible Design, and what I doubt not the Wisdom of the Nation will take into Consideration. Whenever this is brought to pass, the Banks of Newfoundland will be more valuable to the English, than the Mines of Mexico and Peru to the Spaniards. Tho our Fishers seldom fish on the Banks, but off their Harbours in Sloops, yet the Great Bank and the others are so much talk'd of, that 'twill be expected we should say something of 'em.

All these Banks are vast Heaps or Shoals of Sand, The Banks, that lie along in the Ocean at several distances from the Shore: The Great Bank is about 20 Leagues from Cape de Raz, the nearest Point of Land to it; 'tis 300 Miles long, and 75 broad; the Sea that runs over it is, when 'tis Flood, several Fathom deep, and the largest Ships may venture upon it without fear of striking, except at a place call'd the Virgins, where 'tis thought several Ships have been cast away, and the Men all perish'd; for many passing that way have never been heard of. The next Bank is Vert-Bank, about 80 Miles long, and 40 over where 'tis broadest: Then Banquero-Bank lying in the shape of a Shoe, about the bigness of the other; then the Shoals of Sand-Island, Whalebank; the Shoals of Acadia, Mizana-Bank, and the Bank of the Islands in St. Peter's Bay: Off these Banks, now almost wholly frequented by the French, and on the Coasts, there have been 6 or 700 Sail of Ships fishing at a time. Round the Great Bank, which is cover'd when the Sea is high, and dry in some places at Ebb, there are 200 Fathom Water

ter on all sides of it; and about it lie several small Islands call'd *Los Buchalobs*, or the Isles of Cod-fish, from the prodigious quantity of Cod there. The Fishing-season is from *Spring* to *September*: The 20th of *August* some years ago us'd to be the last day of the Season, and kept as a Holiday; but lately the Fishers stay longer, and whereas they us'd to sail before for *Portugal* and the *Streights* in *September*, they now seldom sail till *October*; they fish always in the day-time, the Cod not biting by Night: Train Oil is drawn off the Livers of the Fish, which are thrown up in Heaps when the Cod is cur'd, and thence there drains off the Oil which comes from *Newfoundland*. The Sea off these Banks are sometimes render'd unsafe by floating Islands of Ice, which have been often met with hereabouts by Voyagers, particularly in *May*, 1686. a Gentleman homeward bound from *Virginia* to *England*, wrote, that he saw off of the Banks of *Newfoundland*, several prodigious floating Islands of Ice; the Master of the Ship, at the Gentleman's Request, sail'd as near one of 'em as he durst securely, and 'twas judg'd to be a full League in length, higher above Water than the Main-mast Top, and the Snow drove to and fro upon it, as on a large Plain; a great Flock of small black *Divers*, about the bigness of a *Feldyfare*, came about the Ship a little before, but all of 'em left it, and betook themselves to the Island; this Gentleman perceiv'd about 30 of these Islands of Ice; and to the Northward they are larger and more numerous.

The Natives of this Island don't correspond much with the English, but the French have had some Dealings with them from *Canada*. They say they are a tractable People; and the English who have dealt with them say the same: They paint themselves, and are cloath'd with Stags-skins, all their Cloathing being an Apron of it round their Wastes; they are of small Stature, broad Face and breasted, without Beards, their Joints well knit, and their Limbs strong; they are crafty, great Pilferers, dextrous at making Kettles and Canoes; they believe in a God, which they say created all things, and Men and Women, by taking a number of Arrows and sticking them in the Ground, from whence they sprung up. One of their *Segamores* being askt what he thought of our Religion and

Low-  
thorp's  
Philos.  
Transf.  
Vol. III.  
p. 592.

The Indi-  
ans.



and the Trinity, answer'd, there was one God, one Son, one Mother, and the Sun, which were four, yet God was above all. Some of 'em converse visibly with the Devil, if we may give credit to the Superstition and Credulity of our Voyagers, and from the Devil receive Advice concerning their Wars and other Matters. Their young Women at Fifteen lie with as many Lovers as they please for 5 or 6 years, then each of 'em chooses one for her Husband, and is afterwards very constant to him. They set their Dead in the Ground upright, with their Goods and Provisions as for a long Journey. They are great Dancers and Singers, and in their Dances the Women often throw away the little Covering they have, and frisk about stark naked. We might enlarge our Discourse on the Indians of *Newfoundland*, but they differ so little from those of the Continent, whom we shall frequently speak of, that 'tis needless to say more of 'em here; besides, by conversing with Merchants and others who have dwelt on the spot, and consulting them about the Character of the Natives given by such as have written before us, we find there is little to be depended on in their Relations concerning them; the Indians are either quite different now from what they were, when the first Discoverers came thither, or those Adventurers impos'd upon the belief of their Readers in the Description they gave of them.

We left the English in Possession of the Eastern War between the English and French. Shore of *Newfoundland*, and carrying on their Trade of Fishery peacefully and profitably, which continu'd all King *Charles* and King *James's* Reigns, but the French all that while grew upon them; and when the War broke out between *England* and *France* on the Revolution, the English and French in *Newfoundland* began to commit Acts of Hostility against one another: Both Nations were disturb'd in their Fishing, and their Settlements alternately destroy'd, but the French were more careful of preserving their own than the English, who were the greatest Sufferers, as will be seen in the following Pages. As to other Events in this Place from Sir *David Kirk's* coming thither, to the Late War, there were none worth remembering; and what can we expect of that nature  
in

in the History of a Place so poor, and so void of Government?

After the Revolution, and the breaking out of the War, the English and French fell upon each other, as often as they had any opportunity of doing it with advantage. The English began first, and with 5 Men of War, the *St. Albans* a Third Rate Frigate, carrying 66 Guns, being Commadore, attack'd *Placentia*, but were oblig'd to retreat, the French having made better Preparations for their Reception than they expected; but the latter were more successful in their Attempts on the English, for in September, 1696. they came down upon our Harbours with 6 Men of War; the *Pelican*, *Diamond*, taken from the English, Count *de Tholouse*, *Harcourt*, *Philip*, *Vendunge*, and some Fire-ships and Gallies: Off *Cape Spear*, they came up with the *Saphire*-Friggat, Captain *Cleasby* Commander, to whom they gave Chase, but he got into the Bay of *Bulls*, where he did all he could to fortify the Place in the little time he had to do it; the English who liv'd in that Harbour came to his Assistance, but on the approach of the French they all ran away. On the 11th of September, the whole French Squadron came down upon the *Saphire*, and fir'd with the utmost Fury; Captain *Cleasby* made a brave Defence for 2 hours, and hall'd most of the Ship's Guns on her side next the Enemy; the French at the same time made a Descent, and having driven the Men that were ashore into the Woods, attack'd the *Saphire* on all sides; the Captain finding 'twas impossible to maintain the Ship any longer, set her on fire, and retir'd with his Officers and 35 Men to the Woods. When the *Saphire* was on fire, 40 French Men came aboard, endeavouring to extinguish it, but they were all blown up into the Air as soon as the Fire reach'd the Powder Room; 100 more of the *Saphire*'s Crew getting ashore, made the best of their way towards *Ferryland*, but were intercepted and taken by the Enemy; Captain *Cleasby* and his Company reach'd that Harbour, where he did his utmost to defend the Settlement against the French, who came and attack'd it. The 21st of the same Month they landed 600 Men, who approach'd within Musket-shot very resolutely, and the English firing upon them with equal

equal Resolution oblig'd them to halt; the French return'd their Fire, and sent a Trumpet to summon them to surrender. Captain *Cleasby* seeing 'twas impossible for him to repel so many Men with so few, came to a Treaty, and deliver'd up the Place, which was not tenable: Himself, his Lieutenant, and his 35 Men, were made Prisoners of War, and sent to *France*; from whence they return'd to *England* by Exchange; and the French destroy'd that and all the other English Settlements, except *St. John's*, *Bonavist*, and *Carboneer* Harbours. King *William* being inform'd what Damage they had done to the English a-shore, and how they interrupted their Fishery upon the Coast, order'd a Squadron of Men of War to be Equip'd and Commanded by Admiral *Nevil*, and 1500 Men were put aboard under the Command of Sir *John Gibson*, at present Deputy Governour of *Portsmouth*. Admiral *Nevil* sail'd in the following Year, and arriving at *Newfoundland*, the French immediately abandon'd all the Places they had taken from the English, on the South side of the Island. Monsieur *Pointy* was at the same time on the Coast with a Squadron of French Men of War, and Admiral *Nevil* fell in with Him, but lost him in a Fog. After this Sir *John Gibson* held a Council of War, and the Sea-Officers assisting at it, 'twas debated whither they shou'd persue *Pointy*: The latter were for it; but the Land-Officers against it, *Pointy* having more Ships than *Nevil*; and if the English shou'd have had the worst of it, it had endanger'd the loss of their Part of the Island. The Marquess *de Nesmond* and Monsieur *Pointy* appear'd off *St. John's* Harbour with 15 Men of War, a few days afterwards, and Admiral *Nevil* had but 12 Ships of less Force in the Bay. He immediately sent notice to Capt. *Drake*, Commander of the *Sea-Horse*, in *Scabereen* Harbour, that the French were on the Coasts, and bad him be upon his Guard; but the Enemy did not think it to attack ev'n that single Frigot, for fear of daring the English to a Combat. Sir *John Gibson's* Men being very sickly, hinder'd his doing any thing considerable by Land. He built a regular Fort at *St. John's* Harbour, which he call'd Fort *William*, and left Col. *Handaside*, the present Governour of *Jamaica*

1697.  
Admiral  
Nevil and  
Sir John  
Gibson  
there.

1698.  
Coll. Har-  
daside Go-  
vernour.

Commander there, with 80 Men; after which he return'd to *England*.

1699.

In the following year, Captain *Norris* arriv'd at *St. John's* Harbour with a Squadron of Men of War; and had a Commission to be Governour at land also. Colonel *Handaside* going for *England* soon after, Captain *William Lilburn* succeeded him in the Command of the Garrison in *Fort William*; but there being Peace with *France*, few Events worthy the Curiosity of the Reader happen'd in this Country; where the Fishery not being disturb'd, new Inhabitants came every year; insomuch that the People doubled in 3 years time.

Captain  
William  
Lilburn  
Governor.

1700.

In the following year, Sir *Andrew Lake* arriv'd with a Squadron of Men; King *William*, notwithstanding it was a peaceable time, thinking the *Newfoundland* Trade of so much Importance, that 'twas worth the while to be at the yearly charge of a Squadron to defend it. This year Captain *Lilburn* resign'd his Command of the Garrison of *Fort William* to Captain *Humphry Haven*; who did not enjoy it long; for in the ensuing year, Captain *John Powel* was made Governour of the Fort: He was succeeded the next year by Colonel *Michael Richards*. This Gentleman being an excellent Engineer, made several Improvements at the Fort, added other Works, and so strengthen'd it, that 'tis a very regular Fortification, and one of the strongest in *America*.

Captain  
Humphry  
Haven  
Governor.

1701.

Captain  
John  
Powel  
Governor.

1702.

Colonel  
Michael  
Richards  
Governor.

1703.

Captain  
Th. Lloyd  
Governor.

And now the English and French began to commit new Acts of Hostility on each other. Sir *John Lake* arriving with a Squadron of Men of War, destroy'd 3 French Men of War, and 30 Merchant-men, in the Bay of *St. Peter*, where the English landed, attack'd, took, and raz'd the Fort. Colonel *Richards* returning to *England*, Captain *Thomas Lloyd* was made Governour of *Fort William* in the following year: and Captain *John Moody* had the same command in the next; Captain, now Major *Lloyd*, being then in *England*.

1705.

Captain  
Tho.  
Lloyd  
Governor.

In the ensuing year he return'd to *Newfoundland*; and his Government there: A fatal year was this to the English; the French invaded and destroy'd all their Settlements, burnt *St. John's* Town, and besieg'd the Fort with a 1000 Men; but the Garrison defended themselves with the utmost bravery for 5 Weeks together; during which time, the French held them in

conti-

continual play night and day, with Attacks and Alarms, and at last weary'd out with the vigorous Resistance they made, retir'd, carrying off half of the English Prisoners with them, the rest saving themselves, and the best of their Effects in the Fort: The French wanted Stores themselves; and if the Sloop they expected with Supplies had arriv'd, they intended to have attackt the Redoubt again, and have storm'd the Fort; boasting, if they had St. John's Town, they would keep all the Fishery to themselves. They threaten still a new Invasion, expecting Ships and more Troops at *Quebeck* from *France* for that purpose. They destroy'd all the Fishing-craft, and left none of the English Youth they could light on there when they went away, some they sent to *France*, who came to *England* by Exchange: Others, for want of being exchang'd, enter'd into the French Service; and some are Slaves at *Quebeck*. They have now at *Placentia*, a Governour, a Lieutenant-Governour, a Major, 3 Captains, and Subalterns answerable, 3 Companies of Soldiers, 1 Gunner, 1 Bombardier, 3 Sergeants, 10 Masons, and other Artificers, 500 Fighting-Men, besides 300 Indians and *Canadians*; and do their utmost to fortify themselves, so that they may secure their own Fishery, and destroy ours; which, if effected, would be a Loss to the Nation of 600000 l. a year; for so much it has clear'd by this Trade only. To defend themselves till Supplies come from *England*, the Inhabitants at St. John's Town have now built their Houses round the Fort, under the Command of the Cannon, for fear of any new Insult from the Enemy: Within the Palisadoes drawn round this new Town, they have also built a Church, whose Minister is the Reverend Mr. *John Jackson*: 'Tis not so big as that which was destroy'd by the French; who have not since made any further attempts on the English; and those that left their Harbours, are since return'd to them.

Roope's  
Account,  
&c.

T H E  
**H I S T O R Y**  
 O F  
**NEW-SCOTLAND,**  
 From its DISCOVERY to the  
 present Times.

*Its Discovery.*

**N** *Ova Scotia* is part of the *Terra Canadensis*; said to be first discover'd by some *Bretons* in the Reign of *Lewis XII.* but that was only *en passant.* *Francis I.* the French King, sent *John Verazzan*, whom we mention'd in the History of *Newfoundland*, to take possession of it in his Name. *Verazzan* landēd in *North Canada*, and possess'd himself of the Country that lies beyond the River of *St. Lawrence*, which is now the *French Canada*: But of that part to the Southward of the River, he made little or no Discoveries; for soon after he landēd in *Acadia*, or *New-Scotland*, the Savages surpriz'd and murder'd, and some say, eat him up. The *English* always took *Acadia* to be part of *North Virginia*; and indeed the first *Virginia-Company* thought all was their own, which shou'd be discover'd Northward, and was not planted by any other European Nation. *Sebastian Cabot's* having been there before the *Bretons*, or *Verazzan*, by the usual way of adjudging Right to the *West-Indies*, seem'd to give them the best Title to it. The Princes of *Europe* thought they might dispose of the Dominions of the *Barbarians*; and made no scruple of turning them out of their Dwellings,

lings, if their Subjects wou'd go so far to take their places. All those Countries that had no Inhabitants, were free to the first Comers: and the first that settled here were the English.

The Bounds of this Province are the *Atlantick Ocean* to the *North*, *Breton-Island* and the *Bay of St. Lawrence* to the *East*; *Canada* to the *West*, and *New-England* to the *South*: It runs from 43 to 51 Degrees N. L. and from the River of *St. Croix* in *Norembegua*, to the great River of *Canada*; has almost 200 Leagues of Coast; but was never much inhabited by the Indians themselves.

When Sir *Ferdinando Gorges* was President of the *New-England Company*, considering the Extent of the Limits of their Charter, he propos'd to Sir *William Alexander*, one of the *Secretaries of State* for *Scotland*, and afterwards *Earl of Sterling*, to procure a particular *Patent* for the Land to the *Northward* of *New-England*, which Sir *William*, who was in favour with King *James*, easily obtain'd; and a *Pattent* for this Country was granted him, bearing date *September* the 10th, 1621. The next year, Sir *William* and some others, whom he got to be concern'd with him, sent a Ship, with a Company aboard, to settle there, and plant: These Adventurers setting out too late, were forc'd to winter at *Newfoundland*. In 1623. They set sail, and made *Cape Breton*, a Promontory, on the *Northern Shore* of *Breton-Island*: They coasted it along, till they came to *Port-Mouton*, near *Cape Sable* in *Acadia*: Here they found three pleasant Harbours; and went ashore in one of them, which they call'd *Luke's Bay*: They sail'd up a great way in a large River, that had 8 Fathom Water at Ebb: On each side of it they beheld flowry Meadows, and a charming Prospect of green Hills, and shady Groves; or rather high Mountains, and thick Forests: The Fields were deckt with *Roses* red and white, and *Lillies* of a fragrant smell: They saw no body here; and their Curiosity being satisfy'd, they coasted along to the next Harbour, two Leagues off; Here they met with a broader and deeper River, and a more lovely Prospect than before: They perceiv'd the Situation was commodious for a Settlement, the Soil rich, stor'd with Fruit and Grain, and so natural-

Bounds.

Proprietor.

1623.

The first Voyage thither.

The Soil.

ly dispos'd for strength, that it might easily be fortify'd. *Product.* Gooseberries, Strawberries, Hurtleberries, grew there in abundance; as also Rye, Barley, and Wheat: But our Authors do not tell us who sow'd or planted them. From thence they sail'd to the next Harbour 12 Leagues off, and found the Country still the same, fruitful and beautiful: The Rivers were stor'd with Cod, and other Fish, great and small: There was also plenty of Fowl at land, as Wild-Geese, Black-Ducks, Woodcocks, Herons, Pigeons, and many sorts of Birds, the like to which they had never seen before. *Trees.* The Timber Trees were Oak, Firr, Spruce, Birch, and other Wood, for which they knew no Name: yet all these Temptations did not prevail with them to stay; They return'd to *England* the same year, and visited the Place no more.

Thus the Plantation never came to any thing: and tho several Ships went thither to fish, and load Lumber from *England*, and several Parts of *America*, yet neither the English nor the Scots ever perfected a Settlement; which gave the French an opportunity to seize the Country, and fortify themselves there at *Port Royal*, on the North side of *Funda Bay*, in 45 Deg. N.L.

1662. The English had so little an opinion of this Territory, that they abandon'd it to the French by the Treaty of *Breda*, 1667. and made no attempt to dispossess those Intruders, till the late War; at which we the more wonder, because their Settlement was so near *New-England*, that in all cases of a Rupture, it lay convenient to incommode them: And besides, if the Description we have given of the Province from our own Authors, and what the French say of it be true, 'twas very well worth our while to put in our claim to it, and not give up our Right out of Complacency to the French: But 'twas done in a Reign that was more favourable to *France*, than we or our Posterity, I hope, shall ever find another.

1667. The People of *New-England* had such sentiments of the Neighbourhood of the French in *New-Scotland*, that they resolv'd to drive 'em out at their own charge: They had built a strong Fort at *Port-Royal*; where Monsieur *Meneval* presided as Governour: They had also several Plantations along the Coast; and drove a considerable Trade in Lumber, Fishing, and

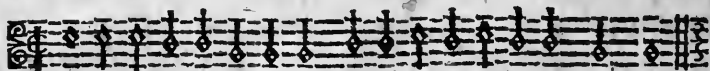
*Monfieur Deny's description Geographique & Historique des Costes de l' Amerique Septentrionale.*



and Furrs; being encreas'd to 6 or 7000 Souls; who, in conjunction with their *Indian-Allies*, were troublesome to the English about *Casco Bay*, and *Wells*, in *New-England*: To rid themselves of this Enemy, the Government of *New-England* sent Sir *William Phips* Sir W. Phips drives away the French. with 700 Men, and a convenient number of Ships, to dislodge them: Sir *William* sail'd from *Nantascot* on the 28th of *April*, 1690. and on the 11th of *May* arriv'd before *Port Royal*: Monsieur *Meneval* the Governour, surrender'd the Place after two or three days resistance; and Sir *William Phips* took possession of it in the Name of King *William* and Queen *Mary*, demolish'd the Fort, sent away the French Garrison, and took an Oath of Allegiance to the King and Queen of *England*, of the French that stay'd there; over whom he plac'd a Governour. Sir *William* in his return destroy'd another French Settlement at *St. John's River*, on the South side of *Funda Bay*. The English for some time carry'd on a beneficial Traffick with the Natives for Furrs; and Baron *La Hontan* La Hontan. complains they under-fold the French, and took such measures, as he fear'd wou'd in time drive the latter quite out of the Trade: But the French have since recover'd *Port Royal*, and their other places in *Nova Scotia*, which they call *Acady*; and the English now content themselves with their old Title to the Country, without any Endeavours to regain it. They return.

'Twill be expected we should say something of the Natives of *New-Scotland*, as well as of other Provinces of *America*: Those that dwell about *Port Royal*, were call'd the *Souriquois*, and were of a midling Delaet. stature, well-limb'd, tawny, black-hair'd, beardless, all, Of the Natives. except their Rulers and Principal Men, the rest being oblig'd to pluck up their Beards by the roots; they were dress'd like other Indians, wearing only a Covering over their Nudities: In Summer they liv'd upon Fish, and upon Indian Corn in Winter, but did not know how to make it into Bread, till they were taught by the Europeans: They had no Form nor Notion of Religion; their Conjurors whom they call'd *Autmoins*, were their Priests, and Doctors: They consulted the Devil's Oracles, and receiv'd ambiguous Answers, like the Greeks at *Delphos*: They had certain *Tabagia*, or Festivals, at which they us'd

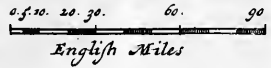
to sing and dance incessantly: We have met with some of their Musick and Poetry, which we believe the Curious will be pleas'd to see :



*Tameja alle luya Tameja dowvem Hau Hau He He,*

The two last Notes *He He*, were repeated by all the Company present, like a Grand *Chorus* : And the Author which Mr. *Delaet* took this from, affirms he often heard the word *Alle-Luya*, a part of the sacred Canticles, in their Songs, averring it to be genuine.

**NEW ENGLAND,**  
**NEW YORK, NEW JERSEY,**  
**and PENNSILVANIA &c.**  
*By H. Moll Geographer.*



PART OF  
AMERICA

FUNDI  
BAY  
I. Sturgeon  
I. Sable  
C. Sable

St. Georges Bank  
OCEAN

The Present  
Sasquahana  
Indian Fort

PART OF  
MARY  
LAND.



- a. Malden
- b. Sudbury
- c. Charles Town
- d. Roxbury
- e. Dorchester
- f. Milton
- g. Braintree
- h. Weymouth
- i. New Bristol
- k. Portsmouth
- l. Newport
- m. Canonicut
- n. Elizabeth I.
- o. Woodbridge
- p. Pascatoway
- q. Perth City
- r. Staten Island
- s. Old Towne
- t. New Towne

44

43

42

41

40

39

44

43

42

41

40

39



- a. Malden
- b. Sudberry
- c. Charles Town
- d. Roxbury
- e. Dorchester
- f. Milton
- g. Braintree
- h. Weymouth
- i. New Bristol
- k. Portsmouth

- l. Newport
- m. Canonicut
- n. Elizabeth T.
- o. Woodbridge
- p. Pascatoway
- q. Perth City
- r. Staten Island
- s. Old Towne
- t. New Towne

---



---

THE  
HISTORY  
OF  
NEW-ENGLAND.

---

C H A P. I.

*Containing an Account of its Discovery, Settlement, Wars with the Indians and French, and all Events to the present Times.*

**T**HIS Province being part of the Continent which was discover'd by Sir *Walter Raleigh's* Servants, *Barlow* and *Amidas*; and by Queen *Elizabeth* call'd *Virginia*; we refer the Reader to the History of that Country for a further Account of its Discovery. The first Man who landed here of our Nation, was Sir *Francis Drake*, returning from the *West-Indies*, in the year 1586. He stay'd two or three days on the Coast, and traded with the People for what he wanted. One of the Indian Kings submitted to Queen *Elizabeth*; a Submission which signify'd no more than a Courtiers Compliment. Captain *Barlow*, and such as sail'd to *Virginia* after him, generally went to South *Carolina*, and those parts on the Continent to the Southward of the Bay of *Cheseapeak* which were all call'd *South Virginia*, as those to the Northward were *North Virginia*, for several Years.

1583.

*Its Discovery.*

1586.

Capt. Gof-  
nold's  
Voyage.

1602.

Captain *Bartholomew Gosnold*, of whom we have had occasion to speak in the same History that we have mention'd above, was the first Englishman who made any considerable stay in this Country: He was very well treated by the Savages; and traded in the Latitude of 43. where he made land near *Piscataway* River; but not liking the Weather he met with there, he stood more to the Southward: He sail'd all Night, and next Morning found himself imbay'd within a mighty Head of Land, which Promontory he call'd *Cape Cod*, from the vast quantity of Cod-fish he took there; 'tis the Northern Point of *Plymouth* County: He also gave the name of *Martha's Vineyard*, and *Elizabeth-Island*, to two Islands lying to the Southward of the Cape, where some of his Crew made an Experiment how English Corn would grow; and before they went, they saw what they had sown come up very kindly.

First Pro-  
prietors.

1606.

Mr. Chal-  
lons set  
out by  
them.

Captain  
Hanham.

Capt. Pop-  
ham and  
Captain  
Gilbert.

The Reputation of this place, by the Character Captain *Gosnold* had given it, put some Gentlemen upon begging a Grant of it, (and this is the Charter we have mentioned in the above-cited History to be granted to *Thomas Hanham*, *Rawleigh Gilbert*, *William Parker*, *George Popham*, Esquires; and others of the Town of *Plimouth*, &c. to plant where they shall think fit and convenient, between 38 and 45 Degrees of Northern Latitude.) The Lord Chief Justice *Popham*, Sir *Ferdinando Gorges* Governour of *Plimouth*, and several other West-Country Gentlemen and Merchants, were concern'd in this Company; who, in August, 1606. set out a Ship for a Voyage to North *Virginia*: There were about 30 Men aboard; and the direction of the Affair was given to Mr. *Henry Challons*: who sail'd as far as the Spanish Isles; and falling in with a Fleet of Spaniards, was taken, and sent Prisoner to *Spain*, together with all his Companions; where he and they were barbarously treated. Tho the Adventurers were very much discourag'd by this ill Success, yet the Lord Chief Justice *Popham* quickly after sent out another Ship, commanded by Captain *Hanham*, one of the Pattentees; who made such Discoveries, as those who fell off before, resolv'd now to adventure again; and accordingly Captain *Popham*, and Captain *Gilbert*, two others of the Pattentees, were dispatch'd away

away with Two Ships, 100 Men, Ordnance, Stores, and Provisions, for a Plantation. These Gentlemen arriv'd there in the year 1608. and seated themselves about the River of *Sagadahock* in *Norembegua*; At the Mouth of which River, they built *St. George's Fort*: But Captain *Popham* dying, and Captain *Gilbert* being oblig'd to return to *England*, to take possession of an Estate which was fall'n to him by the Death of his Elder Brother Sir *John Gilbert*, at that time President of the *North Virginia* Company, the new Plantation was broken up, and the Planters re-imbark'd for *England*. Things lay thus till the year 1611. and then some of the Adventurers, who had more Courage than the rest, and was loth to lose the Country, fitted out two Ships, commanded by Captain *Hobson*, and Captain *Herly*, and accommodated with Men, Arms, Ammunition, and Provisions, for a new Settlement: But one *Hind* an Interloper, set the Savages against them upon their Arrival; and the Indians assaulting them, wounded many, tho they kill'd none. Captain *Hobson* perceiving 'twas to no purpose for him to stay there, and coming thither to trade, and not to war, sail'd home again to *England*: However, notwithstanding all these Discouragements, the Trade was so beneficial by the Furs, and other Commodities, that were brought thence, that four Gentlemen, Captain *Rawden*, Captain *Langham*, Mr. *Bully*, and Mr. *Skelton*, set out two good Ships at their own charge, to make Peace with the Indians, and renew the Traffick: The Command of the Ships, and the Management of the Adventure, was given to Captain *John Smith*, who had been President of the Colony at *South Virginia*, and was famous for his Exploits there: The Captain being come to the Coasts, fish'd for Cod, traded with the Inhabitants; and having only 8 Men in his Company, landed, rang'd up and down, and survey'd the Country. He made a very good Voyage; and put 1500*l.* in his Pocket: The Gentlemen on whose account he went, were also fully re-imburs'd their Charges by the Produce of their Otter and Beaver Skins, Salt Fish, Train Oil, and other Commodities. He presented the Court of Managers of the *North Virginia* Company, with a Draught of the Country; and got it call'd by the Name of *New-England*.

1608.

1611.

Captain  
Hobson  
and Cap-  
tain Her-  
ly.

Captain  
John  
Smith's  
Adven-  
tures.

1613.

Call'd  
New-En-  
land.

land in the year 1614. The Society upon this Success, immediately dispatch'd away 4 Ships, manning them with the same Men that had been with Captain *Smith*, who did not go this Voyage, and filling up their Compliment with others: These Ships made their Voyage in six Months, as the last had done, and return'd with a profitable Lading. The same year, Captain *Smith* sail'd with two Ships for *New-England*; and ill Weather breaking his Masts, he was forc'd to return to *Plimouth*: Whence, so eager was he for the Voyage, he put to Sea only with a Bark, and proceeding towards *New-England*, was taken by the French, and sent Prisoner into *France*: One of the Ships that was to have gone with him, arriv'd there; and came back with a good Cargo.

Captain  
Smith taken by the  
French.

1615.

The next year, there went 8 Ships from *London* and *Plimouth*, which were loaden with Fish and Train Oil; and sold their Commodities at good Rates in *Spain*, and the *Canary* Islands. The year after, the Company sent no Ships thither; but in the following year two stout Ships sail'd from *Plimouth*; and made a prosperous and profitable Voyage in 5 Months. In the year ensuing, another Ship was sent to *New-England*; and the Adventurers succeeded so well, that every private Seaman had, clear of all Charges, 17*l.* to his share, in 6 Months time; as much as 30*l.* now; and as good as 5*l.* a Month, a Master's Pay. Thus the Trade to this Country went forward, but the Settlement was little thought of; till Mr. *John Robinson* and

1618.

The occasion of the  
first Settlement by  
Mr. John  
Robinson.

Mr. *William Brewster* (the former an Independant Minister, who was driven out of *England* in the Reign of King *James I.* for his Principles, and liv'd at *Leyden*) reviv'd the Enterprize: Mr. *Brewster*, and several English Families follow'd Mr. *Robinson* to *Holland*; where, tho they had the Liberty of their Consciences, yet they found a great many Hardships and Inconveniences; and thought by removing to *America*, they might not only have the same Liberty of Conscience, but more Opportunities of providing for their Families. King *James*, by Sir *Robert Nanton*, the Secretary of State's Mediation, consented to their transporting themselves thither. Sir *Robert* ask'd the King, That such a People might enjoy their Liberty of Conscience, under his Gracious Protection, in *America*; where they

wou'd



wou'd endeavour the Advancement of his Majesty's Dominions, and promote the Gospel. The King reply'd, 'Twas a good and honest Proposal. Mr. Brewster (for Mr. Robinson did not live to go in Perlon) made an Agreement with the Company for a large Tract of Land in the South-West parts of *New-England*. He and his Companions embark'd at *Delft*, and sail'd to *Southampton*; where they met another Ship, that went with them, having several Dissenters aboard, who, quite tir'd out with the Persecutions they met with, on account of their Non-conformity, were resolv'd to accompany them. They set sail the 5th of *August*, 1620. 1620. and after a dangerous Voyage, fell in with *Cape Cod* the 9th of *November*: They design'd to have sat down upon *Hudson River*; but their Dutch Pilot had been brib'd by the Hollanders to carry them more to the Northward; the Dutch intending themselves to take Possession of that part of the Continent, which they did afterwards; and were lately disposs'd by the English, who call the Country *New-York*. Being come upon the Coast they intended to possess, they resolv'd on a Form of Government before they landed, and sign'd an Instrument as the Foundation of it; *Declaring themselves Subjects of the Crown of England, joining in a Body Politick, and solemnly engaging Submission and Obedience to the Laws, &c. that shou'd from time to time be made for the Good of the Colony.* This was done on the 11th of *November*; after which they chose Mr. *John Carver* to be their Governour: Mr. John who sent 16 Men ashore to make Discoveries, and look out a convenient Seat for their Settlement: They landed over against *Rhode Island*, in the Kingdom of *Patuxet*; which Indian Nation had lately been destroy'd by a Pestilence. The Savages, as they advanc'd higher up within Land, fled from them; However, they found some Indian Corn that was bury'd in the Snow. They sent another Party of 30 Men, and a third of 20, who had the same Success: The last were surrounded by some Indians, who let fly a shower of Arrows at them; but upon the English firing their Pieces, they fled into the Woods, as the others had done. They then took Boat, and sail'd, till they came to a place which seem'd to be for their purpose: The Land was high, and accomodated with pleasant Fields

The first Colony arrive.

Mr. John Carver Governour.

Fields and Brooks; The Harbour was a Bay larger than Cape Cod; and two fine Islands, *Rhode Island*, and *Elizabeth Island*, in it. This Place was also so near Cape Cod, that it might be seen from an adjacent Hill.

Plymouth  
Colony.

Here these Adventurers resolv'd to seat themselves; and accordingly began to build a Town on *Christmas-day*; which in 4 Months space they effected in some measure, and call'd it *Plymouth*. They had yet no Authority from *England* to confirm them in their Possessions; the Place being too far to the Northward of that which they had treated for: and till they were impower'd to proceed legally by Charter from the King, they agreed among themselves to chuse Rulers, who were, as near as possible, to govern them by the Laws of *England*. They saw no Indians all the Winter; but were severely afflicted by Sickness, which lessen'd their number from 150, to 50 Men. Early in the Spring, one of the Lords of the *Moratigon* Indians, who dwelt 5 days Journey from them, enter'd their Town alone, and bad them *Welcome* in English; for he had learnt a little of the Language by his conversing with those Traders that had been there before from *England*: Him they treated highly, and engag'd in their Interests; as they did *Massassoit*, the greatest King in all those parts, by the means of one *Squanto* an Indian, who had been in *England*: and tho he had no great cause to love them for the occasion of his being there, yet he was so well us'd, that he ever after had a friendship for the English: He had been spirited away by *Hunt* the Interloper, with Twenty Indians; whom that Traitor sold to the Spaniards for Slaves: *Squanto* afterwards made his escape into *England*; and was a Servant to one Mr. *Slany*; from whom, tho he had no reason but his love of Liberty to leave him, he got away to his own Country; and did very signal Services to our Nation: For he satisfy'd the Indians, who in revenge, had till then resolv'd to murder all the English who fell into their hands, that this *Hunt* was generally cry'd out against as a Villain, for what he had done. *Squanto* was more than ordinarily kind to the New Colony, serv'd them as an Interpreter, and as such accompany'd Mr. *Winslow* in his Ambassy to *Massassoit*, to confirm the Peace that King had come

An Ambassy to the  
Indian  
King *Massassoit*.

come on purpose to conclude at *Plimouth* Town : Mr. *Winslow* had the honour to be lodg'd on the Royal Bed by *Massassoit* and his Queen ; the King doing the same honour to two or three of his *Grandees* ; which croud'd the *Ambassador* so, that he did not at all like his Lodging ; besides, *Massassoit's* Court was so ill provided with Food, that Mr. *Winslow* was almost starv'd : However, this Friendship was the more desir'd, because the *Narragantsets*, a powerful Nation, had declar'd War with the Colony, and sent them an *Ambassade* of Defiance ; which Mr. *Carver* return'd boldly, and somewhat check'd the Insolence of the Barbarians. The Governour dying in the first year of his Government, *William Bradford* Esq; was chosen to supply his place : He was a *Yorkshire* Gentleman, and one of those who came from *Holland* ; from whence more Families arriv'd, as also others from *England*, before the end of the Summer : And now the People began to plant in the Fields about the Town, to clear the Woods, to enlarge their Bounds, and built a sort of Fort at *Plimouth*, to prevent any surprize from the *Narragantsets*. They were in great distress for want of Corn, till their own was fit to be gather'd ; and that had like to have been spoil'd by a severe Drought, but there fell afterwards such refreshing Showers, as recover'd it ; and the Settlement flourish'd and increas'd daily. In the mean while, they had no Pattent from *England* : To get which, they employ'd a Person, who took it out in his own Name, and wou'd have betray'd the Colony ; but at last, after several unsuccessful Attempts to go thither, he resign'd it : And Mr. *Winslow*, the *New-England* Agent in *England*, procur'd one ; which he took out in the name of the Governour, *William Bradford*, his Heirs, Associates, and Assigns : But when the Number of Freemen increas'd, the *General Court* desir'd him to surrender it into their hands ; which he generously did. And thus the Province became a kind of Republick, by Pattent from King *James I.* that Pattent (*reserving the Sovereignty to the Crown of England*) enabled the People to choose a Governour, Council, and *General Court*, in manner of a Parliament ; who should have full Power of Administration, Execution, &c. As will appear by the Laws, to which I refer the Reader. For want of a regular Chronology

William  
Bradford  
Esquire  
Governor.

Wey-  
mouth  
built.

Cot. Mat.

nology in this History, we are forc'd to ante-date some Events, and postpone others; but we have been as exact as possible; and sometimes shall do thus, on purpose to avoid breaking the thread of the Discourse. The People at *Plimouth* extended their Trade on all sides: And Mr. *Bradford* put to Sea in Person, to find out a Passage to the *Massachusetts* within the Shoals of *Cape Cod*; but he did not succeed in it; However, he went thither by Land to trade with them. He found the Nation in a sickly Condition, and in an ill Humour with the English, on account of some Losses they had suffer'd from a Colony that had planted themselves among them, under the Direction of Mr. *Weston*; who deserted that at *Plimouth*, and seated another small one at *Weymouth*, in *Suffolk* County in *Massachusetts*'s Bay. This Mr. *Weston*, and his Followers, dissenting from the Church of *New-England*, set up a Form of Worship in imitation of the *Anglican Church*; and 'twere to be wish'd, that they had taken care by their Lives to adorn the Doctrine they profess. On the contrary, They abus'd the Friendship of the Colony at *Plimouth*, and robb'd the Savages; and what was worst of all, they had enter'd into a sort of Partnership in some points of Trade with the *Plimouth* Colony, which seem'd to make them concern'd in their Robberies; and that render'd them suspected to the Indians. Mr. *Weston*'s Men spoil'd the Indian Trade, by the great Prices they gave for Furs and Corn. The Governour from this Nation return'd to *Nanset*, at the Bottom of *Cape Cod*, thence to *Mattachiest*, *Namasket*, and *Manomet*; where he got good store of Corn. The King of the last Nation, acknowleg'd the Sovereignty of King *James*. Mr. *Bradford* by these trading Voyages plentifully supply'd his Friends, who had not Corn enough of their own Growth, to answer the consumption of the Colony. The next Person who was sent aboard on the like account, was Captain *Miles Standish*, who commanded the Militia of the Settlement; which by this time amounted to 4 or 500 Men effective: He went to *Mattachiest*, but was not as well us'd as the Governour, for the Savages pilfer'd his Baggage as they saw opportunity to do it: While he was at *Manomet*, another Indian Town, one *Witwammet* a *Massachusetts* Indian, came to the King as an

Ambassador from that Nation, to desire him to enter into a League with them for the extirpating the English as well at *Plimouth* as at *Weymouth*. Capt. *Standish*, after this Man had had his Audience, perceiv'd his Usage was worse than before; so he got his Corn aboard his Sloop as fast as he could, and hasten'd back to *Plimouth*, having twice escap'd the Designs of a Traiterous Indian, imploy'd by the *Sachem*, or King of *Manomet*, to murder him. About this time *Massassoit*, the Colony's Ally, fell sick, and a Compliment of Condoleance being in such Cases expected by the Kings of the Savages, Mr. *Winslow* was again sent to him to pay it. This Gentleman not only perform'd the Office of an Ambassador, but of a Phylician; and as bad as the Monarch was, some English Cordials restor'd him to his former Health. In return of which Kindness, *Massassoit* told him, the Conspiracy that the *Massachusetts* had form'd against the English, and advis'd him to fall upon them before they could execute it. The English at *Weymouth* were so insulted by them, that their Lives were precarious, the Savages taking the Provisions out of their very Fort, and threatning to cut the Throat of any Man that durst call them to account for it. These things being represented by Mr. *Winslow* and *Weston's* Men to the *Plimouth* Colony, they took it into Consideration how to proceed in the Matter; and in the mean time the Governour order'd Capt. *Standish* to go to *Weymouth*, and defend the English there against the Savages, notwithstanding they had by their Disorders brought this Danger upon themselves, and all their Countrymen. When Mr. *Standish* came among them, he found the *Indians* as it were Masters of that small Colony, and they us'd him as ill as they did the Inhabitants of *Weymouth*. He had but 8 Men under him; with whom however he fell upon the *Indians*, kill'd some of the Chief of 'em, and drove the rest to the Woods.

The Insolence of the Indians.

Chastis'd.

Among these *Indians* was *Wituwamet* before-mention'd, a Bullying Barbarian, and an Enemy to the English; and one *Pecksnot*, a Fellow of Gygantick Stature. With these two, Capt. *Standish* and another Englishman fought, and kill'd them on the Spot in fair Combate. He Challeng'd the *Sachem* of the *Massachusetts* to decide the Controversy, the same way which

the Barbarian refus'd to do: And Mr. *Standish* having put new Life into *Weston's* Men, by his Example and Assistance, they fell upon the Indians, who fled from 'em with Terror and Precipitation at the noise of their Guns. These Indians were such as liv'd nearest *Weymouth* Settlement, and they giving the Allarm to the rest, the whole Nation was immediately up in Arms. At the approach of the English they dispers'd; so Capt. *Standish* return'd in Triumph to *Plimouth*, carrying with him the Head of *Wituwamet*, which an Indian in that Town seeing, was so dejected, That being question'd upon it, he confest the *Massachusetts*, and the other Indian Nations in Allyance with them, designs against the English. This Savage they releas'd, and sent to the *Sachem* to let him know, That they were provided to receive him; and if he attempted any thing against the Peace of the King of *England's* Subjects at *Weymouth*, they wou'd severely revenge it. Upon which the King submitted, and beg'd Pardon. The Indians were not long after most of them destroy'd by a Plague, which made room for the English, who now inhabit the Country they then Possess'd. Both the Settlements were quiet, and so continu'd for 10 years, prospering under the wise Government of Mr. *Bradford*, a Gentleman of equal Piety and Learning, and as zealous for the good of the Colony, as if he had been their Common Father. The *Weymouth* Settlement lessen'd by degrees, as the *Plimouth* increas'd; and at last the People were forc'd to leave it, and remove either to the other at *Plimouth*, or return to *Old England*.

'Tis time we shou'd take some notice of Mr. *Brewster*, who was the next Founder of this Settlement to Mr. *Robinson*, and may indeed be reckon'd the first; because he came over, and liv'd and dy'd here. Tho he was a *Lay-Man*, yet, according to the Terms of their Religion, as a Ruling Elder he might teach and perform all the other Offices of the Ministry, except dispensing the Sacraments, which he was not qualify'd by Ordination to do. So these *New-England* Men continu'd without a Pastor till the Year 1629; when Mr. *Ralph Smith* arriv'd from *England*, and took upon him the Government of the Church at *Plimouth*. With him came the first Black Cattle thither, which have

They submit.

1629.  
Plimouth  
Church  
Founded.

have so multiply'd, that for many years this Colony has supply'd the Sugar-Islands with Provisions as much as any, or all the rest, or *Old England* it self. Mr. *Smith* prov'd to be a Man of very ill Morals; and for that, and his writing Home against the People of *New-England*, which the Governour discover'd by intercepted Letters, He was expell'd the Plantation.

While the Colony at *Plimouth* by their Planting, Fishing, and Traffick, were growing rich and numerous, several Worthy Persons, encourag'd by the Prospect of Advantage, and others animated by Zeal for the Propagation of Religion, resolv'd to make Settlements in other Parts of the Country. The chief of these was Mr. *White* Minister of *Dorchester*, who having engag'd several Gentlemen in the Design, they sent Mr. *Roger Conant* with some Men and Necessaries, to settle about Cape *Ann*, the Northern Promontory of *Massachusetts Bay*. Mr. *Conant* was soon weary of his Post and about to return, when he receiv'd encouraging Letters from Mr. *White*, assuring him, That he wou'd procure a Patent for him and his Companions, and seasonable Supplies of all things: Upon which he stay'd and look'd out for a more commodious Place to build a Town upon. Mr. *White*, as he had promis'd, by solliciting the Matter strenuously did it so effectually, That several of his Friends purchas'd of the *North Virginia Company*, call'd, *The Council of Plimouth*, that Part of *New-England* which lies between the River *Merimack* and *Charles-River* in the bottom of *Massachusetts Bay*. The chief of these were, Sir *Henry Roswell*, Sir *John Young*, Sir *Richard Saltonstall*, *Isaac Johnson*, Esq; *Matthew Craddock*, Esq; *Theophilus Eaton*, Merchant, *Thomas Southcot*, Esq; and Mr. *John Ven*. They bought all the Company's Right and Interest, and obtain'd Grant of the King, bearing Date in the Year 1628. To hold their Lands in Common Soccage as of the Manner of East-Greenwich, and an Assurance of Protection in their Liberty of Conscience, and for all such as should remove thither. Several of them accordingly went over with their Families, and carry'd with them as many as they cou'd engage to accompany them. Of these *Matthew Craddock*, Esq; was appointed Governour.

1629.  
John Endicott, Esq;  
Deputy  
Governor.

nour, who seated himself at a Place call'd *Nahemkeik* by the Indians, to which these Non-conformists gave the Name of *Salem*, about 8 Miles Northward of *Boston* in the County of *Essex*. To them came Mr. *Higginson*, a *Lestershire* Minister, and Mr. *Skelton* a Minister of *Lincolnshire*, silenc'd for their not Conforming to the indifferent things impos'd on them by their Ecclesiastical Governours. And these drew so many Puritans after them, that *Salem* Colony in a little while began to Rival her Elder Sister *Plimouth*. Mr. *Higginson* was Chosen Minister of the Church at *Salem*, and Mr. *Skelton* his Associate. The former dy'd in about a Year, and his Son Mr. *John Higginson* succeded him very young in the Ministry, and is Minister of *Salem* at this Day.

John Winthrop, Esq;  
Governor.  
Thomas Dudley, Esq;  
Deputy Governor.

The Company of Adventurers in *England* finding their *Massachuset* Colony thriv'd, and was likely to turn to a good Account, resolv'd to give it due Encouragement; and considering Mr. *Craddock* was grown old, and his Deputy *John Endicott*, Esq; not so fit for the Post as a Man of greater Quality and Interest wou'd be; By Virtue of their Charter, which impower'd them to elect their own Governour, Deputy-Governour and Magistrates, they made *John Winthrop*, Esq; of *Groton* in *Suffolk*, Governour, and *Thomas Dudley*, Esq; of *Northampton*, Deputy Governour of the New Colony. To whom they sent with these Gentlemen large Supplies of Necessaries, and about 1000 Persons transported themselves thither at this Time. Among whom were Sir *Richard Saltonstall*, *Theophilus Eaton*, *John Venn*, Esq; *Isaac Johnson*, Esq; and his Wife, the Lady *Arrabella Johnson*. They arriv'd in *New-England* in the following Year 1630. Mr. *Winthrop* entring upon the Exercise of his Office, gain'd the Affection and Esteem of every Body; and the easiness of his Government, the Success of his Councils, and the Piety of his Life, invited many more Families to retreat thither from the rage of their Persecutors, who are an eternal Shame to the Purity of our Holy Religion, and the Christian Temper of a true Church of *England-Spirit*. The Head of these Furious Zealots, was the Head of the Church at that time, Archbishop *Laud*. To whom *New-England* was as much oblig'd, as *Old England* was disoblig'd.



blig'd by him; for his obstinate Severity drove so many thousands out of *England* thither, for Liberty of Conscience, that he was himself forc'd to complain of it to the King, and desire some restraint might be put upon their absenting the Kingdom. Since his Spiritual Sword cou'd not reach 'em in *America*, he resolv'd to hold them within the length of his Arm, as will be seen hereafter.

To disturb the Peace of this Gentleman, Mr. *Winthrop*, and his Colony, He summon'd one Mr. *Cleaves* before the King, in hopes to get some Accusation from him against the Country. Mr. *Cleaves* gave such an Account of the Governour's laudable Carriage in all respects, that his Majesty exprest himself highly pleas'd with him. Cot. Math.

The *Massachuset* Settlement had now built several Towns, as *Charles-Town*, on *Charles River* in *Middlesex County*, where there was a Church erected, and Mr. *Wilson* an outed Minister of *Sudbury* in *Suffolk*, chosen Pastor of it, *Dorchester* in *Suffolk County*, and *Boston*, which rose out of the Ruins, if we may use the Expression, of *Charles-Town*. That Town being not thought so Commodious for Trade as *Boston*, many of the Inhabitants remov'd thither, as did the Minister Mr. *Wilson*. This Place flourish'd so much, that in a little Time it became the Capital of *Massachuset Colony*, and of all *New-England*. After *Boston*, *Roxbury* in *Suffolk County* was built, and then *Lyn* in *Essex County*, *Water-Town* in *Middlesex County*; all these were finish'd and settled in less than two years, and the Plantation went on so prosperously by the Multitudes of People who came over, that some of them were forc'd to remove to other Parts of the Country.

The first who broke up from *Massachuset Colony*, was Mr. *Thomas Hooker*, Minister of *Cambridge*, who seated himself at a Place on *Connecticut River*, where He built the Town of *Hartford* in the County, from thence call'd *Hartford-County*. From *Dorchester* several Families remov'd to the Place now call'd *Windsor*, in the same County of *Hartford*. From *Water-Town* several went and settled on the place where *Weathers-Field* now stands, as they did from *Roxbury* to *Spring-Field*. This New Settlement had a sort of Commissi- Connecticut-Colony settled.

1635.

on for what they did from that of *Massachuset*; but finding they had extended their Discoveries far beyond the Limits of that Colony, they set up an independant Government of their own, founding it on a League or Agreement among themselves, became a Body Politick, made necessary Laws and Orders, chose proper Officers to execute them, and *Edward Hopkins* Esquire to be their Governour. This Gentleman return'd afterwards to *England*, was made Warden of the Fleet, one of the Commissioners of the Admiralty, and chosen a Member of Parliament during the Protectorate of *Cromwel*. But many years before he left *New-England*, he was every other year chosen Governour of *Connecticut* Colony. The Man who had always the Alternate with him, being *John Haynes* Esquire. This Settlement was scarce well fix'd, before *George Fenwick* Esquire, was sent to *New-England*, on account of several Persons of Quality, who had bought of the Lord *Say*, and the Lord *Brook*, some Lands on the River which ran thro' *Connecticut* Colony. Mr. *Fenwick* seated himself at the Mouth of the River; and built the Town call'd *Saybrook*. The Lord *Say* and *Brook's* Title to that Territory, was by a Grant from the Earl of *Warwick*, to whom the King had given it. *John Winthrop Jun.* Esquire, assisted him in this Undertaking; and had himself thoughts of planting there: To which end, he got a Grant of these Lords for some Lands; but being unwilling to hinder the new Colony, he made no use of his Grant. In consideration of which, he was chosen their Governour after the Restoration. The *Connecticut* Colony thinking, that by purchasing this Ground, their Right to the Land they had seiz'd without any Grant wou'd be the stronger, bought it of Mr. *Fenwick* by Consent of the Proprietors; that Gentleman having but begun his Plantation, and not finding sufficient Encouragement to finish it. With this shadow of a Constitution they continu'd till after the King's Restoration; and then they procur'd a Charter from the Crown; upon which they chose *John Winthrop* Esquire, Son of Mr. *Winthrop* Governour of *Massachuset*, to be their Governour.

Two years after the settling the Colony at *Connecticut*, Mr. *Theophilus Eaton*, and Mr. *Davenport* a Minister,

Edward  
Hopkins  
Esq; Go-  
vernour.

J. Haynes  
Esq; Go-  
vernour.

fter, hearing of another Bay to the South-west of *Connecticut*, and expecting more Families to follow them from *England*, purchas'd of the Proprietors, all the Land that lay between them and *Hudson's River*, which divides the Southern parts of *New-England* from *New-York*; and remov'd thither in the year 1637. where they seated themselves in a pleasant Bay; and built *New-haven*, which gave name to the Colony, *Guildford*, *Milford*, *Stamford*, and *Brainford*. Tho they had a Right to the Lands by purchase, they had none to a particular Government; yet they form'd themselves, by mutual Agreement, into a Body Politick. These Men who settled here, were generally *Londoners* and Merchants; and apply'd themselves at first to Trade; choosing Mr. *Eaton*, who had been bred a Turkey Merchant, for their Governour: But they met with so many Losses, that they were discourag'd in their Traffick, and were going to transport themselves to *Maryland*, *Jamaica*, or *Ireland*; where the Parliament had offer'd 'em the City of *Galloway* for their Dwelling, with large Privileges: At last turning their Industry to Husbandry, they thriv'd wonderfully, and thought no more of removing. Mr. *Eaton* dying in the year 1657. was succeeded by *Francis Newman*, Esquire, and *William Leet*, Esquire, who was Governour of the Colony when Mr. *Winthrop* procur'd a Charter from K. *Charles II.* for settling the Liberties of this Plantation on a solid Foundation, and annexing it to *Connecticut*; which was done in the year 1664. Upon this Union the Colonies chose *John Winthrop Jun.* Esquire, to be their Governour, and Mr. *Leet* their Deputy Governour.

Thus we have given the Reader a short History of the Rise of the four Settlements that were made in *New-England*: We have divided them into their separate Governments; and taken notice of their most remarkable Occurrences: We shall now proceed in our History more generally; and treat of those Facts that related to all the Colonies, as they went under the general Denomination of *New-England*.

The *Plymouth* Colony was still govern'd by Mr. *Bradford*; and carry'd on their Trade and Planting with Success: The same did *Massachuset's* Settlement, under the Government of Mr. *Winthrop* the Elder.

1637.  
New Haven Colony.

Theophilus Eaton Esq; Governour.

1657:  
Francis Newman Esq; Governour.

William Leet Esq; Governor. Connecticut and

New-haven Colonies join'd. John Winthrop

Junior Esquire Governor.

William Leet Esq; Dep.

War with  
the Indi-  
ans.

The Indians were quiet, and nothing molested them in their Proceedings, till in the year 1634. the Savages fell upon Capt. Stone, who was sailing up *Connecticut* River, murder'd him, and 6 Men that were with him, and sunk the Bark they were in. They also murder'd a Ship's Crew who were thrown upon *Long Island*. These Insolencies occasion'd the Governour and Council of *Massachusetts* Colony, to send out 120 Men, commanded by Captain *Endicot*, Captain *Underhill*, and Captain *Turner*, to demand the Murderers; whom the Indians refusing to surrender, the English destroy'd their Country, and drove the Barbarians to the Woods. The *Pequots* (a Nation inhabiting the *Connecticut* Country) were very troublesome to the Settlement, kill'd nine Men, and took two young Women, near *Weathers* Field. Upon which Mr. *John Mason* with 90 Men, Captain *Underhill* with the Garrison of *Saybrook*, consisting of 20 Men, and Captain *Patrick* with 40 Men from *Boston*, were dispatch'd away to subdue them, and clear the Colony of them. Captain *Mason* and Captain *Underhill* entering the Territories of the *Narragansets*, their King retir'd to a Fort which he thought impregnable, with 5 or 600 Men, but the English attackt it with great Resolution, and took it by storm the 20th of *May* 1637. putting all the Savages to the Sword, except 8 Men who made their escape. *Weymash* an Indian Convert, did the English great service in this Expedition, following them where-ever they went in their Wars. *Sassacus*, the chief Prince of the Barbarians, threaten'd to be severely reveng'd on the English for this loss, and accordingly made mighty Preparations to invade them; but Captain *Patrick*, and soon after Captain *Stoughton*, with a Reinforcement from *Massachusetts* Colony, arriving, the Savage shut himself up in his Fort, and the English made several hundreds of the Indians Prisoners. They also put many hundreds to the Sword, and forc'd *Sassacus* to fly to the *Maquas*, a Nation the most dreaded of any of the Indians, being said to be Man-Eaters; but these Barbarians were unwilling to bring the War into their Country; So they cut the King and all the *Pequots* that accompany'd him in pieces. The *Narragansets* and the other Indian Nations, submitted on the Success

cess of the English, who in this Expedition kill'd near 1000 Men, took almost as many, and cut off no less than 13 of their Petty Kings. The Savages to gain the favour of the English, murder'd the *Pequots* wherever they met with them, and sent their Heads to the Christians; who having thus chastis'd the Barbarians, struck 'em into such a Consternation, that they were quiet for Forty years afterwards. Indeed the Power of the English began to grow formidable. The *Massachusetts* Colony had a strong Militia of near 2000 Men, commanded by their Deputy Governour Mr. *Dudley*, with the Character of Major General. Their Civil Government was well regulated, and all things going on happily among themselves, they were not afraid of any Irruptions from the Barbarians. In the year 1638. there was a terrible Earthquake felt all over *New-England*, and the Peace of the Colony had like to have been disturb'd by a Faction that grew to a great height among them. These Persons favour'd those whom the *Presbyterians* call'd Sectaries; by which, according to their modest way of expressing themselves, is to be understood Men of all Religions but their own. The *Presbyterians* were for rigid Conformity to their Worship. Mr. *Winthrop* the Governour, opposing this Faction, they oppos'd him; and when the time of electing a new Governour came, set up Mr. *Tho. Dudley*, the Deputy Governour, against him, got him chosen; And in the following year, when Mr. *Winthrop* was restor'd to his Government, wou'd have prevented it. The Court of Election, for fear of a Tumult, was remov'd from *Boston* to *Cambridge*: The Sectaries intended to confound the Choice, by desiring the *General Court* to take a Petition they had presented them into Consideration that day; which if it had been granted, the time for choosing a new Governour had elaps'd, and the Faction had kept their own Governour in a year longer. Mr. *Winthrop's* Friends did not presently see into the Deceit of their Opponents, and were going to consider the Merits of their Petition; but Mr. *Winthrop* strenuously opposing that Irregularity, procur'd the Election to be carry'd on according to the custom of the Court; and notwithstanding the violent Opposition of the Faction, he was chosen Governour by

*Divisions in New-England.*

by a great Majority of Voices ; yet so Powerful was the Party, and they so aw'd the Officers, whose Duty 'twas to wait upon the Governour, that they refus'd to attend him, and laid down their Halberts : Mr. *Winthrop*, instead of punishing the Serjeants for their Insolence, order'd his own Servants to take them up, and wou'd not suffer the Magistrates to punish the Offenders. The *Antinomian* and *Familistical* Factions were the most Rampant, and these he was very Instrumental in suppressing, by getting an Order past for banishing the Chief of them : Himself pronounc'd the Sentence of Banishment, and their Friends, who cou'd not call him to account as Governour, did it as he was a Member of the Church, and oblig'd him to vindicate himself before the Congregation, which he condescend-ed to do, and was justify'd by them. These Heats had like to have spread as far as *Plimouth*, and have created a difference between the two Colonies ; but Mr. *Winthrop's* Moderation triumph'd over all Difficulties, and preserv'd the Peace of the Settlements.

The Troubles of the Dissenters continuing at home, Sir *Matthew Boynton*, Sir *William Constable*, Sir *Arthur Haslerig*, *John Hampden*, Esq; *Oliver Cromwell*, Esq; Names too well known in the Histories of *England*, and several other Gentlemen, were preparing to remove to *New-England* ; at which both the Church and State were allarm'd ; and on the 30th of *April*, a Proclamation was issu'd forth, to restrain the disorderly transporting his Majesty's Subjects to the Plantations, without a Licence from his Majesty's Commissioners : And an Order was made in Council, That the Lord Treasurer of *England*, should take speedy and effectual Course to stop eight Ships in the River of *Thames*, bound for *New-England*, and command that all the Passengers and Provisions should be landed. All Unconformable Ministers were also to be stopp'd ; which proceeding, says a Doctor of our Church, increas'd the Murmurs and Complaints of the People thus restrain'd, and rais'd the Cries of a double Persecution ; to be vex'd at home, and not suffer'd to seek Peace or Refuge abroad. 'Tis true, the vast Numbers of People that transported themselves to *America*, if it did not make the Government jealous that they might throw off their Dependance on the Crown, as well as on the Church, yet it cou'd not but give an

People hinder'd from going to New-England.

1637.

an ill Idea of that Clemency to which it pretended, and which is the distinguishing Character of Christian Rulers. Sir *Henry Vane, jun.* with near twenty *Sir Henry Vane, jun. Governor.* Sail of Ships in his Company, visited *New-England* about this time, and was Chosen Governour of *Massachusetts* Colony. He went over by the King's Consent, and his Majesty commanded Old Sir *Henry*, who was against the Voyage, to give his. The young Gentleman design'd to reside in *Connecticut* Colony; but the Compliment past upon him by that of *Massachusetts*, alter'd his Resolution. He became here a more rigid Non-conformist than he was before; and when he return'd to *England*, was so active against the Royal Family, that it cost him his Head, in the Year 1662. The Plantation of *New-England* encreas'd so in a few Years, That *Anno 1640.* There were 4000 Men there, besides Women and Children. They had out-stripp'd all the other English Settlements in *America*, and probably wou'd have grown still more numerous, had not the Civil War in *England* broke out, and put a stop to Peoples removing in such Multitudes till after the Restoration. The Colonies were often misrepresented by their Enemies, who had driven them out of *England*, as a Factious, Schismatical Company of Persons, who wou'd in time endanger the State. Tho' those were distant and Chimerical Views, yet they had like to have ruin'd the Plantations in *New-England* in King *Charles* the First's Opinion, had not Mr. *Winslow* of *Plimouth* Colony undertaken their Defence: And accordingly he went to *England*, vindicated them at the Council-Board, and wip'd off those ill Impressions, which the Government had receiv'd of them from their implacable Adversaries. For which Service, when he return'd, the Colony of *Plimouth* chose him their Governour; whose Presence being again necessary in *England*, Mr. *Bradford* was restor'd to his Government, and Mr. *Winslow* went again to Court, where he was employ'd by the Powers then in being, and never return'd to *New-England*; but he did them all the good Offices he cou'd by soliciting their Affairs. Tho' these Settlements were separate Jurisdictions, yet they were like the *United Provinces*, confederated into one League for the Common Good of them all: which Confederacy

The Colo-  
nies united.

racy after several fruitless Effays to bring it about, was effected in the Year 1643. and they became in Fact as well as Name the *United Colonies*; they Form'd and Sign'd an Instrument, declaring, *That they all came into those Parts of America with the same End and Aim, to advance the Christian Religion, and enjoy the Liberty of their Consciences with Purity and Peace.* It was firmly agreed between the four Settlements, that there shou'd yearly be chosen two Commissioners out of each, who shou'd meet at fit Places appointed on purpose, with full Powers from the General Courts in each Colony, to concert and conclude Matters of General Concernment: As Peace or War, or any thing relating to the Welfare of the Confederacy. Thus they settled their Polity or Civil Government, and by Synods of their Clergy; they did the same by their Ecclesiastical declaring, *That the Church ought to be govern'd by Presbyters, Elders, &c.* as will elsewhere be shown more largely. They began very early to Found a Colledge at *Cambridge*, before call'd *New-Town*, where they establish'd a University: Which was begun about the Year 1630. when Mr. *John Harvard* Minister of *Charles-Town* near *Boston*, dying, left almost 800 *l.* to be laid out in carrying on the Design, and he is look'd upon as the *Founder* of the First College, which from him was call'd *Harvard-College*. The Foundation was incorporated by the *General Court*, An. 1640, and the University has since flourish'd so much, that there is now another College built, and 2 or 300 Students. We shall treat further of the *New-England* Accademy in the following Chapters.

Mr. John  
Harvard  
Founds  
Harvard-  
College.

The People of this Province applying themselves most by Husbandry, Tillage and Pasture; their Trade consisted chiefly in Corn and Beef, which they exported to the *Sugar-Islands*; In Fish, which they sent thither and to the *Streights*; In Oil and Lumber, which they Shipp'd to all the Places where they had any Commerce. Their Lumber is Timber, Boards, Masts, Pipe-staves, Hoops, all good Commodities in the *West-Indies*. They also fell to building of Ships, which Trade has so encreas'd, that it has been a Common Thing for the Merchants of *London* to have Ships built at *Boston*, and other Parts of *New-England*, for the *West-India-Trade*; and there have been more Ships built



in *New-England*, than in all the other Provinces of *America*, subject to the Crown of *England*. The Colony of *Massachuset* thriv'd more than the other three, and therefore we shall be the more particular in its History.

In the Year 1645. Mr. *Dudley* was again chosen Governour, and Mr. *Winthrop* was his Deputy. At which time there happen'd a sort of Tumult in the Town of *Hingham* in *Suffolk* County, whither Mr. *Winthrop* went to appease the Mutiny, by interposing his Authority: Upon which the Seditious petition'd the *General Court* against him, as invading their Liberties, and he was forc'd to leave the Bench, and stand forth as an accus'd Person, to defend himself; which, waving his Prerogative, he did, and was acquitted by the Court; but his Prosecutors were severely fin'd. *John Endicot*, Esq; was now Major General of the Forces, and *William Burgis*, Esq; Secretary. Mr. *Winthrop* in the following Year re-assum'd the Place of Chief Governour, and so continu'd till his Death. Mr. *Bradford* govern'd the *Plimouth* Colony also thirty seven Years except three Years, in which Mr. *Winslow*, and two Years in which *Thomas Prince*, Esq; at the Choice of the People, took a Turn with him.

The Deputy Governour try'd as a Criminal.

The *Connecticut* Colony lost their Governour Mr. *Hopkins*, whose Brother was Warden of the *Fleet* in *England*, and dying, left his Estate to him, which oblig'd him to go thither; where, besides his Brother's Post, which was given him, he was made a Commissioner of the Admiralty and Navy-Office, and serv'd as a Burgess in *Cromwel's* Conventions. His Place in *New-England* was supply'd by *John Haines*, Esq; *George Willis*, Esq; *Thomas Wells*, Esq; *John Webster*, Esq; who were all Governours of *Connecticut* Settlement, alternatively; and contributed, by their prudent Administration, to the flourishing State of that Colony.

Connecticut-Colony.

J. Haines, Esq; Governor.

G. Willis, T. Wells, J. Webster, Esq;

Governor.

Mr. *Eaton* held the Government of *New-Haven* till he dy'd, and there hapning nothing remarkable in either of these Colonies, seperate from the Concerns of the Confederacy, we shall not detain the Reader longer about their History. The Province of *Massachuset* sent out several Families, who inclin'd to the Fishing, and Beaver-Trade, to settle to the North of *Pascatoway* River, where these New Inhabitants

East-Hampshire County settled.

T. Mayhew, Esq; settles on the Isles.

Capt. Atherton insults an Indian King.

Several Persons remove to England.

bitants built several Towns, and those Parts are now the Counties of *East-Hampshire* and *Pescatoway*, which were added to the *Massachusetts* Colony, and taken into the Protection of their *General Court*. *Martha's Vineyard*, *Nantuket* and *Elizabeth Isles* were granted to *Thomas Mayhew*, Esq; who settled there with his own Family, and a few others. The Savages were all this time quiet, and the English fear'd them so little, that one Capt. *Atherton* with a small Company, being provok'd at the Prevarications of the King of the *Narragantsets*, went boldly to his very Town, enter'd his Wigvam or Pallace, took him by the Hair, held a Pistol at his Breast; and told him, *unless he deliver'd his Hostages, and paid his Debts to the Colony*, he wou'd kill him; which the Barbarian promis'd to do, and did accordingly, not one of his Attendants daring to assist him. There were several Rumours of Conspiracies and intended Massacres: But they all vanish'd, and while *Old England* was rent and torn to pieces by intestine Wars, *New-England* enjoy'd a profound Peace. Most of the *American Colonies* on the Revolutions, after the Death of the King, Proclaim'd King *Charles II.* and stood out against the Commonwealth, but *New-England*; whose Principles were nearer the Constitution of the Republick than the other Settlements, willingly submitted to that Government; and several considerable Gentlemen remov'd to *Old England*, to come in for a share, with their Puritan Brethren, of the Spoils of their Enemies, and the Benefit of Posts and Offices, which now were wholly dispos'd of by them. Many of the *New-England* Divines left those *Sanctify'd* Regions, as they are pleas'd to term them, and came to *England*: Among the Gentlemen, were Mr. *Winslow* Governour of *Plimouth* Colony, who left his Government in *America*, for a Commissioner of the Navy's Place at home; *Edward Hopkins*, Esq; Governour of *Connecticut*, of whom mention has been made already: Mr. *Geo. Downing*, afterwards Sir *George*, Sir *Henry Vane*, and others. Of their Ministers were Mr. *William Hook*, who thought fit to leave his Flock at *New-Haven* in *New-England*, for the Mastership of the *Savoy* in *Old England*. Mr. *Robert Peck*, Mr. *Hugh Peters*, who left his Church at *Salem*, for a Chaplain-

Chaplain-ship to *Cromwell*, Mr. *Samuel Mather*, Mr. *Blinman* of *Bristol*, Mr. *Eaton* of *Cheshire*, Mr. *Knowles* of *London*, Mr. *Firmin* of *London*, and many more, who were silenc'd after the King's Restoration, but had either such good Congregations in private, or had heap'd up such fair Provision in the Days of their Domination, that they did not care to cross the *Atlantick* again, to lay their Bones among the *Brethren*. We must not omit a Passage in the History of *New-England* about this time, which relates to *Venner* the Fifth Monarchist, who was one of *Hugh Peter's* Congregation at *Salem*. This Fellow was by Trade a Cooper, but very mutinous in Publick Matters: He would fain have perswaded a Company of People to have abandon'd the Settlement at *Massachusetts* Colony, and have remov'd to *Providence*, one of the *Bahama* Islands.

*Venner*  
the Fifth  
Monarchist  
in New-  
England.

They petition'd the chief Magistrates for leave to do it; and an Assembly was held to consider the Business. The Magistrates assisted by the Ministers, declar'd, that for several Reasons by them alledg'd, they could not admit of their Proposal: Upon which *Venner* stood up and said, according to the Cant of the Place and Times, *Notwithstanding what had been offer'd, they were clear in their Call to remove*. But his Companions not being so mad as himself, there were no Attempts made to get off tumultuously, which *Venner* was ready to have done, if any one wou'd have accompany'd him. The Colony of *Massachusetts*, on the Death of *John Winthrop* Esquire, who died *March 26*, 1649. chose *Thomas Dudley* Esquire their Governour; and Mr. *Dudley* surviving Mr. *Winthrop* but three or four years, the Inhabitants would have elected *John Haynes* Esquire to supply his place, but that Gentleman removing to *Connecticut*, *John Endicot* Esq; was chosen Governour; and *Edward Gibbons* Esq; succeeded him as Major General of the Militia. *Plymouth*, the Mother-colony of the three others, had the misfortune; or 4 years afterwards, to be depriv'd of her old Governour Mr. *Bradford*, who died *May the 9th*, 1657. In his room the Court of Electors chose *Thomas Prince* Esquire, who had been twice their Governour before, to succeed him; and this Gentleman continu'd many years in the Government. In

*Massachusetts*.  
*Tho. Dudley Esq; Governour.*  
1653.  
*Joh. Endicot Esq; Governour.*  
*Plymouth Colony.*  
1657.  
*Thomas Prince Esquire Governour.*

Newhaven Colony.  
Fr. Newman Esq; Governor.  
Wil. Leet Esq; Governor.  
Cot. Mat. Hist.

the same year 1657. *Theophilus Eaton* Esquire, Governour of *Newhaven* Colony, dying, *Mr. Francis Newman* their Secretary, was chosen Governour. But this Gentleman enjoy'd his honourable Office scarce 4 years; and dying at the end of that Term was succeeded by *William Leet* Esquire; who, before he came to *New-England*, had been Register of a Bishop's Court in *Old-England*. But, says a famous Writer of that Country, *finding 'twas made a Crime to hear Sermons abroad when there were none at home; and that the Court he serv'd, made themselves merry with such Peccadillo's as Fornication and Adultery*, he took a disgust against them, refus'd Conformity, and went to *New-England*; where the good People err'd as much on the other hand, by hanging Men and Women for those Peccadillo's, and severely punishing them for not attending their frequent Sermons, let 'em be never so tedious and dull.

On the Restoration of King *Charles II.* the Colonies of *New-England* fell in chearfully with their Presbyterian Brethren in *Old-England*, and congratulated his Majesty on his Accession to the Throne of his Ancestors, sending *Simon Bradstreet* Esquire, Secretary of *Massachuset* Colony, and *Mr. John Norton* Minister of *Ipswich*, in *Essex* County, a Man whom *Dr. Fuller* commends in his *Church History*, for his Learning and Modesty, to carry their Address to his Majesty; which contain'd chiefly a Petition for Liberty of Conscience. They sail'd in *Febrnary* 1661. and return'd in about a year, with Letters from the King, signifying, *That the Expressions of their Loyalty and Affection to him were very acceptable; that he would confirm their Privileges, encourage and protect them.*

The Colony of *Connecticut* having been all this time without a firm Charter, with the consent of that of *Newhaven*, prevail'd with *John Winthrop Jun.* Esquire, Son of the late Governour of *Massachuset*, to go to *England*, to get them a Charter of Settlement and Union, which he did. This Gentleman had been generously educated, and was a Philosopher, as well as a Christian, and a Gentleman; Infomuch, that when the Royal Society was Establish'd, he was admitted a Member of it, and he communicated several curious things to them, as appears in the Collection of their

1661.

The Colonies address K.  
Cha. II.

their Transactions. 'Tis said that he procur'd the King's Favour, by presenting him with a Ring which King Charles I. had on some occasion or other given Mr. *Winthrop's* Grandfather. On his Arrival in *New-England*, the two United Colonies made him their Governour; and Mr. *John Webster* Governour of *Connecticut* Colony, and Mr. *William Leet* Governour of that of *Newhaven*, resign'd their Charges into his hands; the New Colony choosing Mr. *Leet* to be their Deputy Governour. There were some Members of these two Colonies who oppos'd this Union, but the major Part were for it, and they prevail'd: And by the Moderation and Prudence of their Governour Mr. *Winthrop*, they were soon all reconcil'd to the Union.

Connecticut and Newhaven Colonies United.  
John Winthrop Esq; Governour.  
1664.

While these things were transacting, *Alexander*, Son of *Massasoit*, sollicited the *Narragansets* to revolt; Which Mr. *Prince*, Governour of *Plimouth* hearing, sent *Josias Winslow*, Esq; who at that time Commanded the Militia of the Settlement, to seize him; which he did at a Hunting-House of his, and brought him Prisoner to *Plimouth*; where he dy'd of Grief and Rage. His Brother *Philip* succeeded him, and was a Plague to the English, notwithstanding he had renew'd the League with them, and sworn to the strict Observance of it. But he gave them no disturbance till about nine Years after his Brother *Alexander's* Death.

'Twas now that the Province of *New-England* was become a powerful Nation. The City of *Boston*, the Metropolis, being as big as most of our Episcopal Sees in *England*, and containing no less than 12 or 14000 Souls. For after the severe Act, call'd the *Bartholomew-Act*, which some pretended Church of *England* Men procur'd, to turn above three Thousand as good Protestant Ministers as any in the World out of their Livings, many of them remov'd to *New-England*; and were follow'd by some hundreds of Families, who fear'd the same cruel Treatment from Arch-Bishop *Sheldon*, who had been a Creature of Doctor *Laud's*, as they had met with from that Prelate. The whole Number of Inhabitants in this Colony were computed to be near one hundred Thousand; and some of those who came over, bringing

1665.  
Massachu-  
set Colony.  
Richard  
Billings-  
ham Esq;  
Governor.

1672.  
John Le-  
verett  
Esq; Go-  
vernor.  
Plimouth  
Colony.  
Josias  
Winslow  
Esq; Go-  
vernor.

good Estates with them, the English fill'd their Towns, and extended their Limits. Such was the General State of the Colonies in the year 1665. when that of *Massachuset* mourn'd the Death of their Governour Mr. *Endicot*: In whose Chair they plac'd *Richard Billingham* Esq; a very old Man, who had been a Magistrate or Councillour thirty Years before. He enjoy'd that honourable Office about Seven Years; and then dying, *John Leverett* Esq; was advanc'd from the Post of Major General of the Militia, to that of Governour of the Colony. The next year 1673. Mr. *Prince*, Governour of *Plimouth* Colony, dy'd, and was succeeded by *Josias Winslow* Esq; the first Governour that was born in *New-England*; A Man endow'd with so many Christian and Heroick Vertues, that he seems to have wanted a larger Sphere to act in, that he might have shewn himself more, and have serv'd the Commonwealth better, than in those rude Corners of the World.

The rise of  
the War  
with King  
Philip.

A year or two before he was chosen Governour, the War with the Indian King, *Philip* Son of *Massasoit*, broke out. He had a long time been contriving a Conspiracy to invade and destroy the English; which he discover'd the sooner, to revenge an Affront he pretended to have receiv'd from the *Plimouth* Colony, the Government having hang'd one *Tobias* a Councillor of his, and two other Indians, for murdering *John Sausaman*, an Indian Preaching Convert. They had a fair Trial, and were condemn'd by a Jury of half English and half Indians. However *Philip*, who hated the English, was resolv'd to take this occasion of shewing his ill Disposition towards them. He courted several other Indian Nations to joyn with him; and Multitudes of them flock'd to him to fight against the Common Enemy, as they reckon'd the Christians. The Governour of *Plimouth* sent Messengers to demand the reason of *Philip's* arming, but his Envoys were insulted; and soon after a Party of Savages made an In-road into the Territories of that Colony. They fir'd a Volley of small Shot on a Congregation of Christians when they were at their Devotions, kill'd three Men, and wounded another. They pillag'd the Plantations about *Mount Hope*, and began the War between *Swansey* and *Taunton* in the County of *Pli-*

*Plimouth.* This Settlement immediately sent to the other two for Succours; and that of *Massachuset*, with all possible diligence, dispatch'd away Captain *Thomas Prentice* with a Troop of Horse, and Captain *Daniel Henchman* with a Company of Foot, to assist their Brethren of *Plimouth*. These were follow'd by a Company of Volunteers, commanded by Captain *Samuel Mosely*, and were join'd by the *Plimouth* Forces under Captain *Cudworth* at *Swansey*. They sent out 12 Men to discover the Enemy, of whom the Savages from their Ambushes kill'd one, but the rest Wars with the Indians. drove them from behind the Bushes, tho they were five times their number. The next day the little English Army march'd against the Indians, who durst not give them Battle, but abandon'd their Country to their just Revenge. The English in their March found the mangl'd Carcases of some of their Countrymen, their Heads stuck upon Poles, Bibles torn in pieces, empty Wigwams or Cottages, and no body to oppose them. *Philip* himself fled with the rest, and left his Kingdom to the Mercy of the Invader. The Name of *Philip's* Nation was *Wompanoags*; and these had drawn in the *Narragantsets* into the League against the English. 'Tis true, the latter had not appear'd in Arms; however the English knowing how far they encourag'd the Rupture, march'd thro' the Country of the *Wompanoags* into that of the *Narragantsets*, and forc'd them to renounce their Alliance with *Philip*. Captain *Cudworth* proceeded into the Dominions of the *Sachem* of *Pocasset*, where Captain *Fuller* and Captain *Church*, with two small Detachments of English, were over-power'd by an Army of Barbarians, twenty times as many in number as they were. Captain *Fuller* was driven by them into *Rhode* Island, and 200 of them surrounded Captain *Church* and 15 Men in a Pease-field: Notwithstanding the Inequality of the Number, Captain *Church* fought them with invincible Resolution till all his Ammunition was spent, he then retir'd to the Shore, driving all that oppos'd him before him; and some Sloops coming off from *Rhode* Island, he retreated thither; from whence, without loss of time, he pass'd over to the Continent, got two or three Files of Musqueteers from the *Massachuset* Forces, and engag'd them again

in *Pocasset*. He slew in this Action 15, and in the former 30 of the Savages, and struck such a Terror into the rest, that they fled to the Woods from the small Company he had with him, of which he lost not a Man. Captain *Cudworth* being join'd by the *Massachusetts* Captains, march'd from *Taunton* to a Swamp 18 Miles off, where the Savages from several Ambuscades kill'd some of his Men, but the English pursuing them to their Wigwams, they found no less than 100 of them empty; out of which the Indians were fled to a neighbouring Thicket. The Officers thought the best way to reduce them wou'd be by starving; so they posted two Hundred Men at all the Avenues of the Thicket, and sent the rest to the Relief of *Mendham*, where the *Nipmuck* Indians, King *Philip's* Confederates, committed terrible Spoil and Cruelty. *Philip* himself was in the Thicket, and being driven to Despair, he with his best fighting Men taking the advantage of a low Tide, in a River that ran through the Swamp, waded over it on small Rafts, and escap'd into the *Nipmuck* Country; 100 of his Men were left behind in the Thicket, who surrender'd themselves at discretion. The English pursu'd *Philip* as soon as they heard of his Flight: And tho they could not come up with him, overtook some of his Men; of whom they slew 30. The *Monhegin* Indians join'd with the English; and most of the Western Nations were set against them by *Philip*.

*It spreads.*

Thus the whole Province of *Massachusetts* became engag'd in the War, the Flame of which rag'd more than it had done in that of *Plimouth*. Captain *Hutchinson* being sent to know the Reason of the Savages invading that Colony, was himself mortally wounded, and eight of his Party kill'd; the rest fled to *Quaboag*, a little Village where the Christian Inhabitants were retir'd into one House, and the Barbarians having destroy'd the rest, beset this also. They try'd all the Devices they could think of to beat them out of it, but the English defended themselves so bravely, that all their Attempts prov'd in vain; at last they resolv'd to set it on fire; and just as they were preparing to do it, Major *Wilward*, who had heard of his Friends Distress at *Quaboag*, arriv'd with 48 Men, attack'd the Savages, and forc'd them to raise the Siege of this Hovel, for it deserv'd no better Name. The Major de-



detatch'd Captain *Lathrop* and Captain *Beers* with more Forces to observe them, for fear they should march to *Connecticut* River, and seduce the Indians there. This Colony sent Major *Treat* to the Assistance of their Mother *Massachuset*; and the Governour, who heard that the Savages upon that River within his Government were in motion, sent a Party of Soldiers, with an Officer, to demand of them Hostages for their peaceable Behaviour: But these Barbarians were so far from answering the demand, that they kill'd their King, because he wou'd not go with them, and then fled to a Swamp; from whence they fir'd on the English, and slew 9 Men belonging to 9 several Towns.

Thus this bloody War spread over all *New-England*. They destroy'd the Plantations about *Deerfield*, a very pleasant Country, and forc'd the Garrison there to shut themselves up within the Fortification of a poor Work which they had rais'd for their Defence, it being a Frontier Place in *Hampshire*. They slew 8 Men in the Woods near *Squak-heag*. Upon which Captain *Beers* was sent with 40 Men, to fetch off that and some other small Garrisons. These were intercepted by an Army of the Savages; and Captain *Beers* with 20 of his Men having fought to the last with the utmost Resolution, was over-power'd by Numbers and slain, <sup>Captain</sup> the rest escap'd to *Hidley*; and a few days after Ma- <sup>Beers</sup> jor *Treat* with more Soldiers perform'd what he had <sup>slain,</sup> undertaken. Captain *Lathrop* marching with 80 Men to bring off the Corn from *Deerfield*, was also intercepted by 800 Indians. The Captain thinking he shou'd succeed better by fighting as the Savages did, skulking behind Trees, and aiming at single Persons, expos'd his Soldiers to the Ruin that follow'd, 60 of them being kill'd on the spot. Captain *Mosely* hearing the Noise of the Fire, hasten'd to relieve *Lathrop*, but he came too late: He broke his way through the Barbarians five or six times; and with a handful of Men kill'd almost 100 of the Enemy, losing no more than 2 of his own. In this Action fell Captain <sup>And Capt,</sup> *Lathrop*, and above 70 of his Men, the greatest Slaugh- <sup>Lathrop.</sup> ter that ever happen'd till that Day of the *New-England* Christians.

The Indians encourag'd by this Success, fell upon *Spring-field*, (the Hostages they had given for their

preserving the Peace, flying before they came) they burnt 32 Houses, and among the rest, the Minister Mr. *Bremer's*, together with his Library; and had cut the Throats of all the Inhabitants, had not an honest Indian reveal'd their Design to them time enough, before 'twas executed, for them to retire to the fortify'd parts of the Town.

The *General Court* sitting at *Boston*, order'd all their Forces to rendezvous about *Northampton*, *Hadley*, and *Hatfield*, for the Security of those Places. Of which Orders the Indians having no notice, and growing bolder by Success, 800 of them broke in upon *Hatfield*; but the English being prepar'd to receive them, the Enemy were soon beaten out of the Town, and the Western Counties were for a long time free from their Incurfions, except now and then some Straglers committed a few Robberies. These Indians fled to the *Narragansets*, and were entertain'd by them: Upon which the Commissioners of the United Colonies, who were assembl'd on this Emergency, resolv'd 'twas a Breach of the Peace; and understanding that Nation intended to begin a War in the Spring, were before-hand with them; and in the Winter sent Mr. *Winslow*, Governour of *Plimouth* Colony, with 1000 Men, to invade their Territories. General *Winslow* being joyn'd by the *Connecticut* Forces, march'd up 18 Miles in the Enemies Country, attack'd the Savages in a Fort they had rais'd in an Island, of about 5 or 6 Acres, and taking it by Storm, put 700 Indians to the Sword, besides 300 which dy'd of their Wounds, and a vast number of Old Men, Women and Children, who had crowded into the Fort, which was thought impregnable. The General lost in this gallant Action 85 Men and 6 Captains, Capt. *Davenport*, Capt. *Gardner*, Capt. *Johnson*, Capt. *Gallop*, Capt. *Sealy*, and Capt. *Marshall*, and about 150 English were wounded. This was the best Fortification the Barbarians ever had, being so strengthen'd by Nature, that they wanted not the Arts of Europeans to fortify it. The Savages had never such a terrible Blow given them, and they cou'd never recover the Loss they suffer'd. After this the English had some slight Advantages more in the Winter, and then return'd to their Quarters. *Mendham* not being tenable, they deserted

*Indians  
worsted.*

serted it, and the Indians laid it in Ashes. The French at *Canada*, tho there was no War between *England* and *France*, sent them Assistance, and they fell upon *Lancaster*, burnt several Houses, kill'd and carry'd away into Captivity above 40 Persons, among whom was the Minister Mr. *Richardson's* Wife and Children. He was then at *Boston* solliciting Succours, and found his House and Library in Ashes when he return'd, and heard the dreadful Tidings of his Family being led away into Slavery by the Barbarians, who had been forc'd to leave the place by Captain *Wadsworth*. They did further Mischief at *Marlborough*, *Sudbury*, *Chelmsford*; and 200 of 'em surpris'd *Medfield*, burnt half the Town, and kill'd 20 of the Inhabitants. The like Damage they did to *Weymouth*; and enter'd the Lines that were drawn up for the Defence of *Northampton*; but they were repuls'd by Major *Savage*, after they had burnt 5 Houses, and kill'd 5 Persons. The Enemy finding they had not Strength sufficient to carry on a General War, return'd to the Province that at first was the Seat of it; surpris'd part of *Plimouth*, and having murder'd two Families, retir'd: Then they fell upon *Warwick*, and burnt it to the ground. Captain *Pierce* with 50 English, and 20 Christian Indians, pursu'd these Incendiaries; who laying an Ambuscade for him, in which they were very dextrous, and over-powering him with Multitudes, kill'd him and all his Men, except 1 Englishman, and 12 Indian Allies. Captain *Pierce* and his Men sold their Lives dearly, there being 140 Indians Enemies slain in the Engagement. Assisted by the French.

The same Day, another Party of Savages laid *Marlborough* in Ashes; slew several Christians at *Springfield*; burnt 40 Houses at *Rohoboth*, 30 at *Providence*; committed terrible Cruelties at *Chelmsford* and *Andover* on the poor innocent Children; and tho 40 Inhabitants of the Town of *Sudbury* sally'd out upon them, and kill'd 30 out of 300 in one Night; yet that Place was assaulted by them, several Houses burnt, and 12 Men coming from *Concord* to their Assistance, cut in pieces. Captain *Wadsworth* hearing of these Murders and Burnings, march'd against the Savages with 70 Men; of which they having notice, surrounded him in the Woods with 500 Men,

Capt.  
Woodf-  
worth and  
Capt. Brat-  
tlebank  
slain.

cut off the most part of his Soldiers, took several Prisoners; and what was a greater Loss than all, slew himself and Captain *Brattlebank*, with the loss of 120 of the Enemy. The Prisoners they took, they put to Death with exquisite Tortures.

Thus they continu'd prosperous for four or five Months; and the first blow that was given them since General *Winslow's* Victory, was by Captain *Dennison* of *Connecticut* Colony, at the head of 60 Volunteers, and 100 Indian Confederates. These set upon a Body of the Savages, slew 70 of them, amongst whom were some of their chief Princes: And the *Maquas* breaking in upon those *Indians* that were in War with the English, and Dissention arising amongst the Barbarians; gave the Christians the more Opportunities of defeating them. Another Party of *Connecticut* English routed another of *Indians*, and slew 44, without any loss. They took some Prisoners, among whom was *Quanenchet*, the mighty *Sachem* of *Narraganset*, whom the English wisely gave to their Indian Auxiliaries to cut off his Head, knowing that wou'd make the Breach between those *Indians* and the Enemy irreparable. However, the Savages did further Mischiefs at *Plimouth*, *Taunton*, *Chelmsford*, *Concord*, *Haverhill*, *Bradford* and *Woburn*. They attempted to fire the Town of *Bridgewater*; but the Inhabitants sallying out upon them, and a great Shower falling at the same time, sav'd that Place. The English kill'd several of the *Indians* near *Medfield* and *Plimouth*; and having notice by two Boys who, being Captives, made their escape from them, that several Savages were in great Security some Miles further up the River, Captain *Turner* with 180 Men hasten'd thither, surpriz'd them, kill'd 100 of them; and in his Retreat was himself surpriz'd and kill'd, with 30 of his Men, by an Ambuscade of *Indians*, who purchas'd this Victory with the loss of 300 of their Fellows. At *Hatfeild* 25 of the Savages were kill'd, and but 5 English; and at *Rohoboth* 12 *Indians*, with the loss of one Englishman only. A Detachment of the *Massachusetts* Forces took and kill'd 40 *Indians*; and another of *Connecticut* 100 Savages, without loosing a Man. Seven hundred Savages were repuls'd from before *Hadley*; and at the same time,

Capt. Tur-  
ner sur-  
pris'd and  
kill'd.

Indians  
worsted.

the

the *Maquas* invaded their Country, and carry'd away their Wives and Children into Captivity. They fell upon King *Philip's* Subjects, and kill'd 50 of them. The Barbarian had try'd several ways to engage them in the War with the English; one of which was this: He kill'd some *Macquese*, and gave out they were murder'd by the Inhabitants of *Plimouth* County. It happen'd one of the *Maquese*, whom he had mortally wounded, as he thought, recover'd, escap'd into his own Country, and informing his King of the Truth of the Matter, that Nation conceiv'd an irreconcilable Hatred to *Philip*, for his Treachery and Cruelty.

*Philip* thinking he might return securely into his own Territories, now the English had been so harass'd by the Enemy, came to *Mount Hope*, and Major *Bradford* of *Plimouth* had like to have fall'n into an Ambush; but he was deliver'd by a strange Accident, slew many of the *Indians*, and reduc'd the Queen of *Saconet*, who had revolted. Of the *Narragansets*, the *Connecticut-Forces* kill'd 240. Two hundred submitted in *Plimouth* County, and as many of them who attack'd *Taunton* were beaten off. Capt. *Church* with no more than 18 English, and 22 Indian Confederates, slew 80 Savages without losing one of his Company. At *Dedham*, 36 English and 90 Confederate *Indians*, took *Pombam*, a Prince of the *Narragansets*, and 50 Prisoners. This Prince receiv'd a mortal Wound, and lay as one dead; yet when an Englishman came to look upon him, the Barbarian took him fast by the Hair, and had kill'd him, if help had not come in. These Successes so terrify'd the Indian Savages, That *John*, a *Segamore*, or Lord of the *Nipmuck Indians*, with 180 of his Men submitted to Mercy. To ingratiate himself with the English, he brought in with him one of the Chief of his Nation, that had instigated the rest to the War in the *Massachuset* Colony, and the Officers order'd the *Segamore* to shoot him, which he did. The Garrison of *Bridgewater* hearing *Philip* with a Party of Men was in their Neighbourhood, sally'd out upon them, kill'd ten of his Followers, took 15, and the rest fled; among whom was *Philip*, who for haste left his Spoils and Treasure behind him. Capt. *Church* with 30 English, and

King Philip's Wife  
and Son  
taken.

Queen of  
Pocasset  
drown'd.

King Philip  
kill'd.

20 Indian Allies, took 23 of the Enemy, fell upon *Philip* in his Head Quarters, slew 130 of his Men, and lost but one of his own; The King hardly escap'd: His Wife, and Son were taken. A Deserter coming to the Town of *Taunton*, inform'd the Garison where a Body of Indians lay, upon which they sall'y'd out and brought 36 of them Prisoners. The Queen of *Pocasset*, who was with *Philip* in the late Action, fled to the River, and not finding a Canoo to carry her over, she threw her self into the Water on a Raft, which breaking under her, she was drown'd: Some Englishman meeting with her Body by Chance, cut off her Head, not knowing who she was, and stuck it upon a Pole in *Taunton*, which the Indians seeing, they made a hideous howling, and were in a terrible Consternation. Capt. *Church* having recruited his Forces at *Rhode-Island*, and receiv'd intimation by an Indian Deserter, whither *Philip* was fled, pursu'd him; and coming upon him, the King thought to have escap'd from a Swamp, to which he had retir'd; but an Englishman and an Indian firing at him, the latter shot him to the Heart. He was quarter'd, and his Quarters set upon Poles for a Terror to such Rebellious Princes as dar'd make War upon their *New-English* Sovereigns. His Head was carry'd in Triumph to *Plimouth*, and his Death put an End to the War in the Western Parts of *New-England*.

Wars in the  
North  
Part of  
New-En-  
gland.

In the North, the Indians bordering on the Counties of *Main* and *Cornwall*, lying beyond *Pescataway* River, had driv'n a very profitable Trade with the English, who had settled there. These Europeans minded their Traffick more than Religion, and were so taken up with Lumber, Fishing, and their Beaver-Trade, that they had not time to build Churches or Towns, but liv'd in Plantations, and in Houses scatter'd up and down: The Savages having some old Grudges against them, and understanding the Christians in the other Parts of *New-England* were involv'd in a dangerous War, fell upon these Settlements, destroy'd many of them, and kill'd 50 Men, not without losing twice as many of their Countrymen. Mr. *Wakely* of *Casco*, his Wife and Children were butcher'd by them, as was Capt. *Thomas Lake* at *Arrowsilk*

*Arrowfilk* Island. The Government of *Massachusetts* Colony hearing of these Murders, sent Capt. *Hawthorn*, with Forces to subdue them; this Gentleman surpriz'd 400 of them, as they were coming to Destroy Major *Walden's* House at *Quebecho*, of whom half were sold as Slaves for their *Rebellion*; and the rest on Promise of future Obedience, dismiss'd; which gave Peace to the Colony for several years. Most of these Events happen'd between the Year, 1673, and 1676. and tho they are not so important, as the Great Actions in *Flanders* and *Spain*, which have lately rais'd the Wonder of the whole World, yet the Valour of these English Captains in *America* deserves to be remember'd, and the Reader will, we doubt not, be diverted with their History.

A few Months before the War was at an end, dy'd Mr. *Winthrop* Governour of *Connecticut* Colony, and was succeeded by Mr. *Leet*, who had formerly been Governour; and two Years after dy'd Mr. *Leveret*, Governour of *Massachusetts* Colony, whose Place was supply'd by *Simon Bradstreet*, Esq; who had serv'd the Settlement in several Capacities. Mr. *Winslow* Governour of *Plymouth* Colony dying about *Christmas*, 1680. was succeeded by Mr. *Treat*, in whose Time the Charter granted to this and the other Settlements in *New-England*, suffer'd the same Fate with those of the Chief Corporations in *England*; *Quo Warranto's* were brought against them, and a Judgment enter'd up in Chancery: Upon which King *Charles II.* sent over *Henry Cranfield*, Esq; to be Governour of *New-England*; and King *James* arbitrarily assum'd the Power of making Governours, Deputy-Governours, Magistrates, Judges, Officers of the Militia, and depriv'd the Colony of *New-England* of all her Privileges. He impos'd a Governour on that Republick, with a Commission, by which he and three or four more of their naming, had Power to make what Laws they pleas'd, and levy Taxes upon the People according to their own Humour. In the Year 1685, *Joseph Dudley*, Esq; Son of Mr. *Thomas Dualey*, was appointed President by the King's Commission. The Elected Governours were all turn'd out of their several Governments, and the Form of the Administration quite chang'd. This Gentleman was

1676. *Connecticut and Newhaven Colonies*,  
*W. Leet*, Esq; Governour.  
*Massachusetts Colony*,  
*Sim. Bradstreet*, Esq; Governour.  
*Plymouth Colony*,  
*Mr. Treat* Governour.  
 1683. *H. Cranfield*, Esq; Governour of *New-England*, by Commission from the King.  
 The Colonies lose their Privileges.  
 1685. *Joseph Dudley*, Esq; President of *New-England* by the King's Commission.

the more acceptable to the People of *New England* because of his Father's Services and Merit, and for that he was a Native of that Province; but his favouring the Church and Government of *England* at the Time made him many Enemies. He did not keep his Post long; for in the Year 1686, Sir *Edmund Andros* arriv'd there from *England*, with a Commission to be Governour of the Country. How welcome he was to the People we may imagine, when we consider by whom, and over whom he was put in Power. 'Twas not likely that a Person who came on those Terms, shou'd be very well belov'd or that one who, says a *New-England* Historian and Preacher, acted by an *Illegal, Arbitrary, Treasonable Commission*, shou'd gain the good Opinion of the People: And indeed his Government is represented by that Author, to resemble his Master King *James's*, in the Course of it, as it did in the Consequence. 'Twas in his time that Capt. *William Phips*, a Native of *New England*, went from thence to *London*, to sollicite some Noblemen and Gentlemen, to undertake an Adventure for the Wreck near *Port de la Plata*. Which he prevail'd with the Duke of *Albermarle*, and others to employ him about, and he was so fortunate as to hit upon the Ship where the Silver he sought after was lodg'd, and brought 300000 *l.* in Pieces of Eight to *England*: Whereof about 20000 *l.* came to his share. The King Knighted him for this Service, and made him High-Sheriff of *New-England*. Sir *William* petition'd that the Charter might be restor'd, but that was a Grant which the King wou'd not at any Terms part with. Sir *William's* Design by obtaining a Pattent for High Sheriff of *New-England* was, that he might have it in his Power to supply the Country with honest Juries: But the Government then in being found a way to evade his Pattent, and when he arriv'd at *Boston*, which was in the Year 1688: he had like to have been Assassinated at his own door, in *Green-Lane*, in that City, where he built a fine Brick House after the Modern way of Building.

The People of *New-England*, by their Agents at *London*, Sir *Henry Ashurst*, and Dr. *Mather* Rector of *Harvard* College, petition'd the King to have their Charter restor'd; and had many good Words in answer

5th Ed-  
tion of n-  
dros Co-  
rner.

Cot. Mat.

Captain  
Phips's  
Expedition  
to the  
Wreck.



swer from him, but nothing was done in it, till after that Prince, for his Male Administration in *Old-England*, was reduc'd to the necessity of abdicating his Crown.

In the mean time, the Government of *New-England* grew so rampant it became intollerable. The Properties of the People were every where invaded, *Cot.* and the *Lives of the best Men in the Country* began to be *Mat.* Practis'd upon. The Ministers and their Ministry, a most insufferable Outrage, considering the Nature of that Set of Men, were discountenanc'd, and the College and Schools discourag'd. The Governour pretended to rule by a Faction, and that all Foreigners. Laws were made without the Majority of the Legislators consenting to them. Complaints of Grievances were frown'd upon, Money levy'd without a *General Court*; Persons imprison'd illegally, and Juries were pack'd. These Men gave out, *That the Charters being lost, the People lost all their Titles to their Lands with them.* Those who would take out *New Patents* for Estates, that had been fifty Years in their Families, were forc'd to pay one fourth part of their Value for them. And to add to all these Afflictions another more terrible than all of them, The Indians by the Hardships they suffer'd from the Government, and at the Instigation of the French and their *Abettors*, broke out into a War in the East, which lasted almost as long as that of *Troy*.

Sir *William Phips* went in Person to *England*, to mediate for his Country with the King, but he found the Court in such Confusion, on apprehensions of a Revolution, that he cou'd do no good; so he return'd after the Prince of *Orange's* being declar'd King, with Instruction from the Ministry then at Court, how to proceed for the Service of the Colony. King *William* was not willing to displace the Governour, till he heard how he behav'd himself; and the People of *New-England* sav'd him that trouble.

About 100 Indians invaded the Eastern Counties in July 1688. and says our Historian, " Tho the Governour then in the Western Parts of it, had immediate notice of it, yet he not only delay'd and neglected all that was necessary for the Publick Defence, but also, when he at last return'd, shew'd a most furious Displeasure against those of the Council, " and

“ and all others that had forwarded any one thing for  
 “ the Security of the Inhabitants, while at the same  
 “ time he dispatch'd some of his Creatures on secret  
 “ Errands to *Canada*, and set at liberty some of the  
 “ most murderous Indians whom the English had  
 “ seiz'd upon.

He imprison'd a Man who brought over a Copy of the Prince's Declaration; and put out a Proclamation requiring all Persons to use their Endeavours to hinder the landing of any whom his Highness might send thither. Reports were spread in *Boston*, that Mischief was to be expected from the *Rose-Frigot*, a Man of War then in the Harbour. Upon all which, many Soldiers of the Governour's Forces deserted the Army; and a general Revolt seem'd to be preparing. Several Gentlemen met on this occasion, and resolv'd to appear at the head of the People, in case of an Insurrection, and drew up a Declaration to be dispers'd about the Country. On the 18th of *April*,

1689.

The Governour depos'd by the People.

Arms: The Townsmen seiz'd the Governour; and those wretched Men, who by their innumerable Extortions and Exactions, had made themselves the Objects of universal Hatred.

This Revolution was effected without the least Plunder or Bloodshed. The Gentlemen who brought it about, appointed a Committee for the Conservation of the Peace. The Criminals were sent to *England*; and the Governour and Magistrates who were in Power before the loss of the Charters, were restor'd to the Exercise of their former Authority. King *William* and Queen *Mary* approv'd of their Proceedings, and granted them a new Charter; which tho it reserv'd the Power of nominating the Governour in the King or Queen of *England*; yet it granted them great Privileges, and in some respects greater than what they formerly enjoy'd, to use the words of one of their own Countrymen. While the Agents were soliciting the Affair of the Charter, Sir *William Phips* reduc'd *New-Scotland* to the Obedience of the Crown of *England*, at the charge of these Settlements, as we shall shew in another Chapter. Upon the Petition of Sir *Henry Ashurst* and Mr. *Mather*, in the Name of the Colony,

K. William approves of it, and grants a new Charter.

1690.

King

King William made Sir William Phips Captain General, and Governour in Chief of the Province of Massachusetts Bay in New-England. Under which Title that Colony only seems to be meant, but the other two were included in the Commission.

Sir William Phips Governor.

Canada was always a Thorn in the side of New-England, and from thence all her Troubles came. The French having such a Natural Envy and Hatred to the English, that they never miss'd any opportunity of doing them a Mischief, in whatever part of the World they met with them. By their own Confession, they and their Confederates the Hurons, fell upon an English Company in the year 1687, and took away from them to the Value of 50000 Crowns: Also Monsieur Dulhut defeated another Company, commanded by Major Gregory, who was Convoy to some Iroquois, a Nation in league with the English, and at War with the Hurons. These, and other late Provocations from their Allies the Indians, were just grounds for Sir William's Expedition to endeavour to dislodge them at Quebec. Their Indian Confederates ridd several Plantations about North Yarmouth; and Captain Blackman, a Justice of Peace, seiz'd about 20 of 'em, who had been Ring-leaders in the last War. These Indians were sent Prisoners to Falmouth, in Casco Bay; and the Savages took Reprizals. William Stoughton Esq; Deputy Governour, and other Gentlemen, went to treat with them, whom the Savages promis'd to meet at Macquoit, and to bring their English Captives, in order to their being releas'd; but never came, being, as they declar'd, dissuaded by the French: The English stay'd for them some days; after which, finding they had betray'd them, they return'd to Falmouth; and they were scarce arriv'd there, before the Barbarians fell again on North Yarmouth. Yet Sir Edmund Andros took no care to put an end to this War before the Flame spread farther, and the French had supply'd them with Arms and Ammunition.

The French fall upon the English before the Revolution.

We shall now take a short view of the State of the Indian War; in which we shall find the French openly engag'd. After the seizing of those Indians by Mr. Blackman's Order, the Savages surpriz'd Captain Rawden and Captain Gendall: The former of them dy'd in Sla-

War with the Indians.

Slavery, the other made his Escape; and being about fortifying North Yarmouth, was attackt by the Indians, whom he repuls'd. This was the first Blood that was spilt in this long War. Captain *Gendall* passing over the River with his Servant in a Canoo, fell into an Ambush of the Savages, by whom they were both murder'd: They assaulted and slew several English, at a Village call'd *Merry Meeting*; the same they did at *Sheepscoat*, a Town that was reckon'd the Garden of the East: This Place they burnt to the Ground, and oblig'd the Inhabitants to retire into their Fort. They murder'd Mr. *Burrow's* and Mr. *Buffy's* Families at *Kenebunk*; and committed so many Outrages, that at last Sir *Edmund Andros* with 1000 Men, march'd into the East, built a Fort at *Pemmaquid*, another at *Pechypsot*, and repair'd and enlarg'd that at *Sheepscoat*. Upon the deposing of this Person from his Government, the old Governour and Magistrates sent Captain *Greenleaf* to treat with the *Penacook* Indians, who, notwithstanding their fair Pretences, join'd with the *Saconian* Savages, surpriz'd Major *Walden* in his Garrison of *Quobecho*, kill'd him, and 22 of his Soldiers, and carry'd away 29 into Bondage. This worthy Gentleman was betray'd by one *Mesandouit*, a Prince of the *Saconians*, whom he had honourably entertain'd and trusted as a Friend, and who on the approach of the Indians, open'd the Gate of the Fort, and admitted them. Mr. *John Broughton* they murder'd in their Retreat; and Forces being sent after them, the *Penacooks* fled to the Woods, and left their Corn and Country to the mercy of Captain *Noyes* and his Men, who enter'd it, and destroy'd their Wigwams and Plantations

Major  
Walden  
kill'd.

The Indians kill'd many Men, Women and Children, in other places; as a whole Family on the North-side of *Merrimack* River, four young Men of *Saco* whom they surpriz'd in the Woods, five more near *Saco* falls, out of 25 who came forth to bury the others; one *Starkey* falling into their hands, to save his own Life, discover'd to them, that one Mr. *Giles*, and 14 other Englishmen, were not far off, these the Savages murder'd.

The Indians having intimation, that there was but a small Garrison in *Pemmaquid* Fort, got up upon a  
Rock

Rock which over-look'd it, from whence they miserably gaul'd the Besieg'd, who surrender'd, with their Governour Captain *Weems*, on Conditions of Life and Liberty. The Indians broke the Capitulation, and butcher'd the greatest part of them, as also Captain *Skinner* and Captain *Farnham*, who were coming to the Relief of the Fort; and Mr. *Patishall*, as he lay in his Sloop in the *Barbican*. These Losses caus'd the Inhabitants of *Sheepscoat* and *Kennebunk* to abandon those Places, and retire to *Falmouth*, as did several other Planters in other Parts of the East.

Several  
English  
Captains  
slain.

It was time for the Government of *New-England* to think of vigorously opposing these Murders and Depredations of the Savages: Accordingly Major *Swayne* with 500 Men from *Massachuset*, and Major *Church*, one of their best Officers from *Plimouth*, with as many more English, and Christian Indians, march'd against the Enemy; who hearing, that one Lieutenant *Huckin* was gone out of a Fort he commanded on the Frontiers, with all his Garrison about their daily Work, intercepted them in their return, and cut them all off, 17 in number. Then the Indians attack'd the Fort in it, which were only two Boys, and some Women and Children. These Boys defended it against the Savages, wounded several of them, and when they saw the Barbarians had found out a way to set fire to the House in the Fort, and so burn 'em out, wou'd not yield, but on Terms of Life, which these inhumane Wretches granted, and yet afterwards kill'd three or four of the Children, with one of the Boys, the other made his escape. Captain *Garner* pursu'd the Enemy, but they were too nimble for him. Another Party of 'em assaulted *Casco*, kill'd Captain *Bracket*, and had put the whole Town to the Sword, had not Captain *Hall* come opportunely with Relief, and engaging the Barbarians, put 'em to flight.

The Brave-  
ry of two  
English  
Boys.

The Designs of Major *Swayne*, and Major *Church*, were frustrated, by the Treachery of some Indian Confederates, who being sent out as Scouts, discover'd all that they knew to the Enemy; and these understanding the Number of the English, fled to their inaccessible Woods and Swamps, where there was no coming at them; so Major *Swayne* having reliev'd the Garrison of *Blew Point*, retir'd to Winter Quarters.

In the following year, Monsieur Artell, a Frenchman from *Canada*, and one *Hoop-Hood* an *Huron* Leader, assaulted *Salmons Falls*, and destroy'd the best part of the Town with Fire and Sword, killing 30 Persons, and leading away above 50 into Captivity, using their Captives with the utmost Barbarity that French and Indian Cruelty could invent.

This Descent of the French, and their confederating with the Indians, alarm'd all the English Settlements on that Coast; and after the Reduction of *Nova Scotia*, Sir *William Phips* was dispatch'd away with 32 Sail of Ships and Tenders to attack *Quebeck*. The principal Men of War were,

Sir W.  
Phips's  
Expedition  
against  
Canada.

The *Six-Friends*; Capt. *Gregory Sugars* Admiral, 44 Guns.  
The *John* and *Thomas*, Capt. *Carter* Vice-Admiral.  
The *Swan*, Capt. *Tho. Gilbert* Rear-Admiral.

They had aboard in all 2000 Men; and setting sail from *Hull*, near *Boston*, the 9th of *August*, 1690. arriv'd before *September*, at *Quebeck*; but were detain'd so long by contrary Winds, that they were 3 Weeks going up the River of *Canada*, which otherwise they might have done in 3 Days. This gave the Count *de Frontenac* an opportunity to prepare for his Defence, and draw all the Strength of the Colony to *Quebeck*; which Sir *William Phips* expected would have been divided by an Army marching over Land, and attacking *Mount Royal* Fort at the same time that he fell upon the City.

This Army was to consist of 1000 Men from *New-York*, *Connecticut*, and *Plimouth* Colonies, and 1500 Indians, to whom the French give the general Name of *Iroquois*, but our English distinguish them by the Names of their several Nations. The English march'd as far as the great Lake of *Canada*, but not finding Canoos ready for them to pass it, and the Indians not joyning them according to their Agreement, they return'd; by which means, Count *de Frontenac* had no need of making any Detachments for the Security of *Mount Royal*. Sir *William* summon'd the Count to surrender the City, but receiv'd a very insolent abusive Answer: So on the 8th of *October*, the English landed, under Lieutenant General *Whalley*, to the number of

1400, for to those few they were already reduc'd by the Small Pox, and other Diseases.

In the mean while, Sir *William* brought his Ships to bear on the West-end of the City, waiting when General *Whalley* wou'd begin the Assault; but this Gentleman hearing Count *Frontenac* had 4000 Men with him, and was provided to make a vigorous Defence, notwithstanding the Prayers of the English Soldiers to the contrary, resolv'd to re-imbark; and Sir *William* expecting the Signal of their attacking the Town on the East-side, sent a Messenger ashore, to know the reason of their not giving the Assault; which when he understood, and that many of the Men were almost frozen to Death, and that the Colonel and others were ill of the Small Pox, he order'd them on board to refresh themselves; and calling a Council of War, it was resolv'd to return.

Unfortunate.

The Baron *La Hontan*, who was then at *Quebeck*, says, there was not 200 French in the Town when Sir *William* came thither; that when he fir'd upon it, he was two Leagues off it; that the English landed about 3000 Men against the Isle of *Orleans*, about a League and half below *Quebeck*; but meeting with an Ambuscade, they retir'd.

The English Account varies from this, and assures us, that Ambuscade ran away from *Whalley's* Men. The Baron adds, That if *Phips* had been engag'd by the French, to stand still with his Hands in his Pockets, he could not have done less against them. That the English kill'd Monsieur *S' Helene*, and 100 French, and took the Sientr *Folet*, his Lady, and other Prisoners. This was a sad Misfortune; by the *New-England* Accounts, above 1000 Men perish'd in it one way or other. The Fleet was separated in its return, and some Ships driven as far as the *Leward* Islands; one was wreck'd, another never heard of; a third founder'd and all the Crew lost; a fourth was driven ashore on the desolate Island of *Antecosta*, where Captain *Rainsford* and his Company, forty at first, were reduc'd by Want and Weather, to half the Number, in a Month's time, and then sav'd almost miraculously. This Expedition cost the Colony of *New-England* 40000 *l.* for which they ran in Debt, and paid it off by Bills which they made currant, like the Exchequer Bills in *England*.

Sir *William*, soon after his return to *Boston*, sail'd from thence to *Bristol*; and hastning to *London*, shew'd the King the necessity of reducing *Canada*, for the Safety of his Dominions in the *West-Indies*; but the French War in *Europe* lay so heavy on King *William*, that he could not find a way to begin it in *America*, where he had enough to do to defend his own Territories. 'Twas now that this Knight, on the representation of the Agents, of his Merit and Zeal for the King and Country's Service, receiv'd his Commission of Governour, and the new Charter we have already spoken of in this Chapter. With these he hasten'd back to *New-England*, accompany'd by the Agent Mr. *Mather*; and a Day of Thanksgiving was appointed for the safe Arrival of two such important Persons. If the Author of Sir *William Phips's* Life, in *Catton Mather's* loose Collections, be to be credited; He was a Man of great Honour, and a true Lover of his Country; as will appear by this Speech of his to the General Assembly.

Gentlemen;  
 His Speech to the Assembly.  
 You may make your selves as easy as you will for ever: Consider what may have any Tendency to Your Welfare, and You may be sure, That whatever Bills You offer to me, consistent with the Honour and Interest of the Crown, I'll pass them readily: I do but seek Opportunities to serve you. Had it not been for the sake of this Thing, I had never accepted the Government of this Province: And whenever You have settl'd such a Body of good Laws, that no Person coming after me may make You uneasy, I shall desire not one day longer to continue in the Government.

Witches punish'd.  
 Cot. Mat. p. 61.  
 We are told, he was very careful to make good Judges, Justices, and Sheriffs, and tender in burning Witches. The People of *New-England* were at this time got into such a Humour of Witch-hunting, that there was a Society of them at *Boston*, as there is of Reformation in *London*; and that Society engag'd themselves to find out and prosecute all Witches, as the Society in *London* seeks after and punishes all Whores, &c. The *New-England* Society had thrown no less than 100 old Men and Women into Goal for



for Sorcery; and some had been put to Death; some Scores lay ready for the Faggot; but the Ministers of *Boston*, and the French and Dutch Ministers at *New-York*, informing Sir *William Phips*, that perhaps some of the pretended Mischiefs said to be done by the Witches, might be the Devil's doing in the Shape of such Persons; the new Governour was not so ready to burn them, as those who went before him were; and many of the Sorcerers, who lay only for the Warrant on a new hearing, were found rather to deserve Pity and Alms, than a Gibbet or Fire.

Sir *William* by discountenancing the Novelty of Witch-burning, clear'd the Country more of Witches, than all the Executions that had been done before his time. For to use the Historian's own Expression; *They ran as vehemently upon acquitting all the Accus'd, as by mistake they ran at first upon condemning them.* For which prudent Proceeding, the late Queen *Mary*, our Sovereign of Sacred and Glorious Memory, wrote him a Letter of Thanks.

We must now take a further View of the Indian The Indian War. War; the Seat of which was in that part of the Province where the Governour was born. The Indians knew him Personally, and when they heard that he had taken a *Ship full of Money*, they wonder'd mightily at the Fortune of a Man, of whom they had no manner of expectation that ever he would make such a figure in the world; but when he was made Governour, their wonder was increas'd, and Fear added to their Astonishment. They knew he was acquainted with them and their Country, and understood how to carry on an Indian War much better than his Predecessors.

The French and Indians attack'd *Casco*, kill'd Lieutenant *Clark*, and 13 Men out of 30 near the Town, Casco taken. drove those within it into the Fort, undermin'd it, and oblig'd the English Governour Major *Davis*, after he had lost most of his Men, to surrender, on promise of Major Davis, Convoy to the next Garrison. However the French sent the Major and some of the Men Prisoners to *Quebeck*, and the rest were murder'd by the Savages; Captain *Laurence* was mortally wounded in this Siege, and many brave Soldiers kill'd.

## The History of New-England.

Upon the loss of *Casco*, the Garrisons of *Papoodack*, *Spurwink*, *Blew-point* and *Black-point*, retir'd to *Saco*, and thence to *Wells*; from whence half of them retreated as far as Lieutenant *Storers*. *Hopehood* follow'd them, burnt some Houses, kill'd 12 or 13 Men and Women, and carry'd away 6 or 7 from *Berwick* and *Fox-point*; But Captain *Floyd* and Captain *Greenleaf* meeting him, many of his Men were slain, and himself wounded. He was afterwards kill'd by some French Indians, who mistook him and his Party for Confederates with the English. At *Spruce-Creek* an old Man was murder'd, and a Woman made a Captive. At *Lamperwell* 9 Men were slain, and others led into Captivity. Capt. *Wiswell*, and Capt. *Floyd*, being detach'd by the Council of War at *Portsmouth*, to scour the Country as far as *Casco*, overtook the Enemy near *Wheelwrights-Pond*, and coming to an Engagement, the former, his Lieutenant *Flag*, and most of his Men were kill'd, which oblig'd Capt. *Floyd* to retire. They had 100 Men with them, but the Indians 3 or 4 times that number; and besides, there were some French Soldiers mix'd among them to discipline them, and teach them a regular way of Fighting, which was the reason that the English wanted more Men in this Indian War, than they did in the former: Nor durst they venture an Action where the Advantage was so much on the Enemies side, as they us'd to do. After this Victory, the Savages made an Incurfion as far as *Amesbury*, took Capt. *Foot*, and tortur'd him to Death. The Townsmen taking the Allarm fled to their Fort. However, the Enemy kill'd 3 Persons, burnt as many Houses, drove off their Cattle, and retreated.

The English  
worsted by  
the Indians  
and French.

A greater Force under the Command of Major *Church* was sent against these Invaders. Himself, with 300 Men, went by Sea, and landed in the Night at *Macquoit* in *Casco* Bay. They march'd immediately to *Pechepscot* an Indian Fort, which they found deserted: From thence they advanc'd 40 Miles up the River to *Amonoscoggin* Fort, where they met 5 Indians haling away 2 English Prisoners. They releas'd the Captives, but cou'd not come at the Indians. There were no more than 21 Indians in *Amonoscoggin*; of them Major *Church* took and slew 20, and set 5 English

English Prisoners at Liberty; the Major hunted the Savages up and down, forc'd them to drop some of their Captives, particularly Mr. *Anthony Bracket*, kill'd some of their Straglers, but not being able to get them out of their Fortresses, he return'd, leaving Capt. *Convers*, and Lieutenant *Plaisted* in that Country to observe the Enemy.

Soon after the Indians came to *Wells* with a Flag *A Truce* of Truce, and Major *Hutchinson* and Capt. *Townsend* *concluded.* were sent from *Boston* to treat with them. A Truce was concluded: The Captives on both sides were to be restor'd, and *Edgeremet* and 5 more of their Segamores sign'd the Treaty (as well as they cou'd) in their Canoos at *Sagadahoc*; for they wou'd not come ashore. Among the Prisoners that were releas'd, were Mrs. *Hull*, whom they wou'd feign have kept, because she cou'd write, to be their Secretary, and *Nathaniel White*, whom they had fasten'd to a Stake to roast him to Death. Captain *Convers* staid with a good Garrison at *Wells*, for the Security of those Parts. And thus the War ceas'd for a little while, *Anno 1691.*

1691.

The Indians instead of bringing in all the Captives, *The Indians* came down two or three Months after upon Capt. *Convers* at *Wells*; but he receiv'd them so well, that *break it.* they withdrew. The Hostilities being renew'd, they kill'd 2 Men at *Berwick*, 2 at *Exeter*, and 5 or 5 at *Cape Nidduck*. To prevent further Mischief, Capt. *March*, Capt. *King*, Capt. *Sherbarn*, and Capt. *Waters*, with 400 Men, landing at *Macquoit*, march'd to *Pechypscot*. These Forces not meeting the Enemy, grew secure, and straggled out in Parties; which the Savages observing, gather'd in a Body, attack'd them with Advantage, and drove them to their Ships, with the Loss of Capt. *Sherbarn* and several Men. They then kill'd 7 Persons at *Berwick*, 21 at *Sandy Beach*, a Family at *Rowley*, another at *Haverhill*, and forc'd the Garrison to desert the strong Fort of *Cape Nidduck*, for want of Men to defend it. A Body of Popish Indians assaulted the Town of *York*, kill'd 50 Men, and led away 100 into Slavery; the rest fortify'd themselves in their Houses; and tho they were but a handful, yet the Savages, who were several hundreds, durst not attack them. Here Mr. *Dummer*

mer the Minister was shot, to the great Joy of these *Romish Barbarians*. A Ship was immediately dispatch'd away, with a Grant to purchase the Redemption of the *York-Captives*; and those Men who remain'd in that Town talking of abandoning it, Major *Hutchinson* was sent thither with a strong Party commanded under him by Capt. *Convers*, Capt. *Floyd*, and Capt. *Thaxter*, to defend those Parts of the Country from the Incurfions of the Enemy. Capt. *Convers* was Posted at *Wells*, with only 15 Men in the Fort, and 15 more in Sloops, to assist the Garrison upon occasion from the River. Against him *Madankawando*, *Moxus*, *Edgeremet*, *Warumbo*, Indian Princes, Monsieur *Burniff*, and Monsieur *Labrocree*, and 500 *Hurons*, or French Indians, came down; yet such was the incredible Valour of the Men in the Sloops, and the Captain with his in the Fort, that after several fruitless Attempts to master them by Land and Water, the French Generals, and their 4 Indian Confederate Princes, were oblig'd to retire; and Monsieur *Labrocree* never liv'd to bear the Reproach of so scandalous a Retreat, being kill'd in the first of it. The Enemy happen'd to take one *John Diamond* Prisoner, whom they us'd so barbarously, that 'twou'd move too much Horror in the Reader to hear it. For none but Indians or Frenchmen cou'd be guilty of it.

Sir *William Phips* having settled the Affairs of his Government at *Boston*, and understanding the Enemy had made a terrible Slaughter of some Husbandmen on the Northside of *Merrimack* River, rais'd 450 Men, and march'd to *Pemmaquid*; where Capt. *Bancroft*, and Capt. *Wing*, by his Order and Directions, built the best Fort that is on the Continent of *America* in English hands: In which he put a Garrison of 60 Men; but the Charge of building and maintaining it, caus'd Murmurings and Complains in the Country, which began to make Sir *William's* Administration uneasy to him. Major *Church* took 5 Indians at *Penobscot*, demolish'd their Fort at *Taconet*, and destroy'd the Corn about it. The next year Sir *William* sent 350 Men to *Wells*, and order'd Captain *Convers*, whom he also made Major and Commander in Chief, to drain the Eastern Garrison

Pemma-  
quid Fort  
built by  
Sir William  
Phips.

sons, and march into the Enemies Country, which he did; scow'd the Woods about *Taconet*, proceeded to *Saco*, and laid the Foundation of a Fort there, which was carry'd on by Major *Hook*, and Capt. *Hill*, and was a great defence to the Eastern Counties. He took several Indians, and cut 'em in pieces, to revenge some late Murders they had committed at *Oyster-River*. At *Connecticut* also the English hearing the Savages appear'd about *Quaboag*, sent out a Party of Horse, who pursu'd them to a Swamp, and leaving their Horses at the Entrance of it, follow'd them by their Track, kill'd most of them, and recover'd some Captives which they had taken, with all their Plunder. Upon the late Successes of the English, the vigorous Proceedings of Sir *William Phips*, and the building the Forts in the East, the Indians began to incline to a real Peace, especially hearing the *Macquas* threaten'd to fall on them for killing some of their *Squas* or Princesses, on a *Whartel-berry* Plain. These *Macquas* had the Use of Guns, before any other Indian Nation, and by this Advantage are said to have kill'd two Millions of Indians. They inhabited the Regions to the West, and were generally in League with the English. The Indian *Segamores* had a French Envoy in their Courts, who was a Friar, to stir them up against the English, and keep them in heart. This Priest did his utmost to perswade them to continue the War; but the French not assisting them with Men, Arms and Ammunition, as they promis'd, the Friar cou'd not hinder them from begging a Peace.

And,  
1693.  
Saco-Fort.

The Indians  
beg a Peace.

Accordingly a Peace was concluded the 11th of August, 1693. by Capt. *Wing*, Mr. *Manning*, and Mr. *Johnson*, in the Name of Sir *William Phips*, and by *Edgeremet* for the Indians. The Indians lay quiet about a year, and all that while the French Priests instigated them to break the Truce. They at last prevail'd upon them to make an Inroad into the Territories of the English, who were not provided to receive them, reckoning themselves secure in the Treaty.

They break  
the Peace.  
Instigated  
to it by  
French  
Priests.

An Army of these Savages falling on a sudden on *Oyster-River-Town*, made near 100 Persons Captives. One *Bickford* couragiously defended his House against them, and despairing to reduce him before Succours came, they

1694.

they left him: Such was the end of the Peace of *Pemmaquid*, the Place where the last Treaty was concluded. They murder'd Mrs. *Cutt* and her Family on *Piscataway*. They made an Assault on *Groton*; but were repuls'd by Lieutenant *Lakin*: However they kill'd 20 Persons in that Plantation. At *Spruce-Creek* they slew three, and at *Killery* eight more. Here they barbarously us'd a Daughter of Mr. *Downing*, who notwithstanding she was knock'd down, had her Skull scalp'd, and was left for dead, recover'd and is still Living. Mr. *Pike*, Under-Sheriff of *Essex*, was murder'd by them, between *Amesbury* and *Haverhill*. To recompense these Losses, the English seiz'd *Bommaseen*, one of the Segamores, who, with *Edgeremet*, had sign'd the late Treaty. He pretended to be just come from *Canada*, and came into the English Territories, on purpose to endeavour to put an end to the Hostilities; but it being prov'd that he was a Principal Actor in the late Murders, he was sent Prisoner to *Boston*. The loss of so great a Man as *Bommaseen* quieted the Indians for 6 or 7 Months, and then they renew'd their Barbarities. They took two Souldiers belonging to the Garrison of *Saco*, kill'd the one, and sent the other into Bondage.

Sometime after *Sheepscoat John*, so call'd from a Place of that Name, near which he was born, who was one of the famous Mr. *Elliot's* Converts, but now an Apostate and Enemy, propos'd a Treaty, and the Indians came to *Pemmaquid*, pretending to be sorry that they had violated the Truce. To shew their Sincerity, they deliver'd up 8 Captives, and promis'd to release the rest. Col. *Philips* Commander in Chief of the Forces, Lieutenant Col. *Hawthorn*, and Major *Convers* were Commission'd to treat with the Savages, who design'd only to get *Bommaseen* again if they cou'd; and when they found the English were resolv'd to keep him fast at *Boston*, they broke off the Conference, and departed.

An Ambuscade of Indians took Major *Hammond* of *Kettery*, and sent him to *Canada*, where Count *Frontenac* treated him very honourably, having bought him of his Savage-Master. Another Party came to *Bellerica*, on Horseback, which render'd them unsuspect-

The English take the Sachem *Bommaseen*.

The Indians first use Horses.

ed;

ed; they never using a Horfe, unless to eat him. Here they kill'd and took 15 Men and Women. They slew Serjeant *March*, and 3 Men, near *Pemmaquid*, and 6 more as they were rowing a *Gondola* round a Point above the *Barbican*. They took 9 People out of *Newbury*, and being pursu'd by Capt. *Greenleaf*, wounded them so, when they found they cou'd not keep them, that they all dy'd, except a Lad. Capt. *Church*, Governour of *Pemmaquid* Fort, desiring to lay down his Commission, was succeeded by Capt. *Chub*, who we are told was guilty of a Piece of Treachery unworthy the English Name; for, meeting *Edgeremet* and another Prince on a sort of Treaty, he put 'em both to Death. Captain Chub's Treason.

The next Year one *John Church*, and 3 more of *Quobecho*, *Thomas Cole* and his Wife of *Wells*, 14 Persons near *Portsmouth*, were massacred, and 7 taken Prisoners. In *August*, the French landed some Men out of a Man of War, the *Newport*, which they had taken from the English, to assist the Indians. This News so frightened the Traitor *Chub*, that he surrender'd the new and strong Fort of *Pemmaquid*. The People of *New-England* miss'd their Governour *Sir William Phips*, whom by their Clamours and Complaints they had caus'd to be sent for to *England*, a little after the *Pemmaquid*-Peace, as we shall shew in the following Pages, being now willing to finish the Indian War; which, tho it made a mighty Noise in *New-England*, will not have a like effect on an *Old English* Reader. 1695.

The taking of *Pemmaquid* Fort threw the English in those Parts into a dreadful Consternation; and the Deputy Governour, Col. *Stoughton*, sent out Col. *Gedney*, Col. *Hawthorn*, and Major *Church*, with several Parties, to put a stop to the Enemy, who, pleas'd with so formidable a Conquest, were retir'd, doing no more mischief at that time, except in murdering 5 Souldiers of *Saco* Fort, who fell into their hands. Pemmaquid betray'd by him.

From *Haverhill* in the ensuing Year, they took 39 Captives, of whom one was *Hannah Dunstan*, a Woman of a masculine Spirit: She had lain in not above a Week, yet she and her Nurse walk'd 150 Miles on foot to the Town where the Indian, she was to serve, liv'd. This Woman being afterwards to travel with her 1696.

her Master and his Family, to a Rendezvous of Indians, she watch'd her Opportunity in the Night, and having animated her Nurse to assist her, they kill'd ten of the Indians with their own Weapons, and made their escape; for which Action they receiv'd a Reward of 50 Pounds, from the General Assembly of the Province, and Presents from private Persons to a good Value. The Savages continuing their Inroads, kill'd a Man at *York*, another at *Hatfield*, a third at *Groton*, and a fourth at *Exeter*, from whence they carried away 2 Children Captives. They kill'd another Man at *Exeter*; after this wounded a second, and carry'd off a third: They also surpriz'd and slew Major *Frost* and his Two Sons, and 3 Women near *New-Chawannic*; and dreadful Desolation threaten'd the whole Province, from an Invasion of the French: But before we speak of that, we shou'd let the Reader know what became of the Governour, Sir *William Phips*, and in whose Hands the Government of *New-England* was in these difficult times.

Sir *William* having settled Peace, as he thought, in the Province, and the Trade being open'd with the Savages, went for *England* to justify himself against the Complaints of his Enemies, who prosecuted him at the Council-Board, for several Acts of Male-Administration. The *General Assembly* of the Province, sent Letters to Court by him, to pray that he might be continu'd Governour, which seem'd to be a sufficient Justification of his Innocence; and the King was so well satisfy'd of his Conduct, that had he liv'd, 'tis thought he would have been sent back in the same Post; but he dy'd at *London*, and the Government of *New-England* was after his Death manag'd by his Deputy, *William Stoughton*, Esq; till the Year 1697. when the Earl of *Bellamont* came over Governour. Sir *William* carry'd home with him a Project to supply the Kingdom of *England* with Naval Stores from the Eastern Parts of *Massachuset* Colony, which might easily be done; he also intended to solicit Assistance for the Conquest of *Canada*; and the Court was so well convinc'd of the Necessity of that Conquest, as to order Sir *Francis Wheeler* to stop at *New-England*, to take in what Forces the Province had rais'd, and thence proceed to *Canada*. Accordingly Sir *Fran-*

1697.  
William  
Stough-  
ton, Esq;  
Deputy  
Governor.



was arriv'd there during the Peace of *Pemmaquid*, but he had lost three quarters of his Seamen and Landmen at the Sugar-Islands, and so that Design came to nothing; which, had it been executed as 'twas projected, wou'd have prevented the Fears of a French Invasion in *New-England*.

The Deputy Governour prepar'd for a vigorous Defence, and the Forts, particularly those at *Boston*, were put into very good Order. Major *March* with 500 Men was posted on the Eastern Frontiers, to observe the Enemy on that side; and he did so much good, that few English fell into their Hands. They kill'd a Souldier near *Wells*, took another and Roasted him. Three more they surpriz'd as they were cutting Wood for the Garrison at *Saco* Fort, and murder'd them. They took Lieutenant *Fletcher* and his two Sons, one of whom escap'd; the other with his Father was massacred. Major *March* proceeded to *Casco* Bay, and came on the Enemy unaware, who after one Fire, fled to their Fleet of Canoo's and got off; the Major having kill'd a good number of them before they cou'd get away, with the loss of Capt. *Weymouth* of *Barnstable*, and 12 Men. This Action, tho it does not appear to be of any great Consequence, yet was so in effect: For it hinder'd the promis'd Irruption of the Savages, as that did the Descent of the French, who being weakned by a Storm, and hearing of the Defeat of their Confederates the Indians, and the good posture of Defence the English were in, gave them no Disturbance.

While the Savages continu'd their Incurfions, the Lord *Bellamont* in *England* was preparing for his Departure, and set sail in the *Deptford* Man of War, in *November* 1697. He was driv'n as far as *Barbadoes*, but kept clear of the Island, and arriv'd in safety at *Boston*, in *December*. After his Arrival, the Enemy began to grow weary of the War. They kill'd 20 Men at *Lancaster-Town*, with Mr. *Whiting* the Minister, burnt some Houses, and two or three old People in them, and carry'd away 5 into Slavery. They also murder'd one Man at *Oyster-Bay*. Nor must we forget *Chub*, the false Wretch, who surrender'd *Pemmaquid* Fort. The Governour kept him under Examination some time at *Boston*, and then dismiss him.

As

1697.  
The Earl  
of Bella-  
mont Go-  
vernour.  
Arrives at  
Boston.

The Traitor  
Chub  
murder'd  
by the In-  
dians.

As he was going to his House at *Andover*, the Indian surpris'd him and his Wife, and massacred them a just Reward of his Treason. They slew three or four Persons more; and had got Colonel *Dudley Bradstreet* into their hands, but being closely pursu'd they dismiss him and other Prisoners. They kill'd two, and took two sometime after at *Haverhill* murder'd an Old Man at *York*, and attack'd *Deerfield* on *Connecticut* side, but were beaten off by *Mr Williams* the Minister, and the Townsmen. A Man and a Boy were slain at *Hatfield*, and that was the last Blood spilt by them. For Count *Frontenac* gave

They make  
Peace.

notice to the *French* Indians, that there was a Peace concluded in *Europe*, and they must restore all the English Captives; many of whom were dead, and the rest return'd. Major *Convers*, and Captain *Allen* were sent by the Earl of *Bellamont* to receive them, and the Submission of the *Sachems* and *Segamores*; who came and excus'd themselves for breaking the Peace, saying, *The Jesuits would not let them alone till they had done it; and if the Earl of Bellamont, and the Count de Frontenac, would not banish those Devils, they could not promise the Peace would last long.*

Complain  
of the Je-  
suits.

Colonel *Phillips*, and Major *Convers* were sent again to settle Commerce with them, and to take a more formal Submission; which *Moxus*, a principal *Segamore*, and others, Sign'd near *Mares Point*, at *Casco Bay*, the 7th of *January*, 1698.

1698.

The Earl of  
Bella-  
mont's  
Speech to  
the As-  
sembly.

On the Conclusion of the Peace, the Earl of *Bellamont* summon'd an Assembly, wherein, besides his just Praises of our Late Sovereign, King *William* of Glorious Memory, he recommended to them, *To engage their Neighbour Indians in a Trade, by a good Regulation, and underselling the French. To provide Warlike Stores, and take care of the Fortifications. To let their Laws agree with those of England as near as possible.* To which the Assembly made a handsome Reply, in an Address of Thanks; and the Lieutenant Governour *Mr. Stoughton* did the same in the Name of the Council. So that all was Peace and Harmony now in *New-England*. The Earl of *Bellamont* was also Governour of *New-York*, and chose to reside mostly at the City. In his Absence, the Lieutenant Governour supply'd his Place. In

In the Year 1699. the famous Pirate Captain *Kid* 1699.  
 was taken at *Boston*, by Order of the Governour the *Capt. Kid*  
*Lord Bellamont*, and sent Prisoner to *England*, where *the Pirate*  
 he was often examin'd concerning his Piracies *taken here.*  
 by Committees of Parliament, and afterwards try'd,  
 condemn'd and hang'd.

In 1700. The Assembly gave a Tax towards building a Room for a Library, and a Theatre at *Cambridge*, where there was an Indian College erected, or Appartments built for them in that of *Harvard*. 1700:

On the 10th of *March*, 1702. a dreadful Fire broke out at *Boston*, in the House of Mr. *John George*, which burnt so violently, that 9 Ware-houses, with a vast Quantity of Goods, were reduc'd to Ashes, and several Streets consum'd and damag'd by it. 1702.

As to other Events, there have been none remarkable lately: The Indians have not dar'd to break the Peace in the present War; and the Privateers which the Government and Merchants of *New-England* have set out since the last Rupture with *France*, have been so successful, that they took 14 Merchant-men, and 3 Capers, in a few Weeks time. The Earl of *Bellamont* dying in this year, Her Majesty Queen *Anne* was graciously pleas'd to appoint Colonel *Joseph Dudley* to be Governour of *New-England*; but the Government of the Province of *New-York* was given to the Lord *Cornbury* by King *William*. Col. Jos. Dudley Governour. 1706.

C H A P. II.

Of the Country, Towns and Forts; Of the Climate, Soil, and Product; Of the Animals and Trade at New-England.

MR. *Delaet*, who is look'd upon to be the most exact Author that ever wrote of the *West-Indies*, is in an Error in his Account of *New-England*, when he says it has but 70 Miles in Length. The Dutch at that time shut it in so much on the South-side, from which they took all *Newhaven* Colony; and the French

French on the North, where they reckon'd all beyond *Piscataway* River, as part of *Norembergua*, that there was little left for *New-England*. But we shall prove it runs near 300 Miles along the Coast, without reckoning the Angles, which wou'd make it much more. It is not any where in a direct Line above 50 Miles broad. It lies between 41 and 45 Degrees N. Latitude: Is bounded by the *Terra Canadensis* on the N. *Pensilvania* W. *New-York* S. and the *Atlantick* Ocean E. By the Situation, 'tis in the Middle of the Temperate Zone; yet the Climate is not so mild nor so regular as to Heat and Cold, as those Countries are, that are Parallel with it in *Europe*, as some Parts of *Italy* and *France*. For what reason, † we may see in

† Nam Mr. *Delaet*, who in his Description of it says, “ \* The qua Mare “ Summer is not so hot, and that the Winter is contingit “ more cold than 'tis commonly in the same Climate; Aer mul- “ and for Goodness of Air, and Fertility of Soil, the to frigidior est, “ Country may be compar'd with the best in Eu- idque par- “ rope.

tim ab Oceani (uti videtur) vicinitatem, cujus jugis & inconstans motus, radiorum Solarum reflexum frangit, partim ab Vaporum ascendentium copiam qui Æstum mitigant, &c.—— And again, Easdem regiones longe frigidiores esse qua ascendentem Solum spectant, quam qua descendentem.

\* Æstas minus ferveat, & Hiems magis algeat, quam vulgo in Europa sub eodem Climate; Coeli Solique bonitate cum laudatissimis Europæ merito posse comparari.

The Climate of *New-England*, in comparison with that of *Virginia*; is as the Climate of *Scotland*, compar'd with that of *England*. The Air however is healthy, and agrees with English Constitutions: On which account, this Colony is the most flourishing and numerous of any that belongs to the Crown of *England* in *America*. The Soil is generally fruitful, but in some Places more so than in others.

The Soil.

We shall shew the difference in treating of the particular Counties. In doing which, we shall run along the Coast from North to South, and take in every thing remarkable that has come to our knowledge: Dividing the whole Country into the four first Colonies

nies or Provinces, and those into Counties, according to the present Division of it in the latest Surveys.

The largest and most populous Settlement is that of *Massachuset*; which was the Name of the Indian Nation inhabiting that part of the Country, where now stands the City of *Boston*. This Province extends from East to West in length along the Coast from *Scituate* in *Plimouth* County, to *Saco* River in that of *Main*, near 110 Miles, and in breadth from the same *Scituate* to *Enseild* in *Hampshire* in the Province of *Connecticut* about 60, but 'tis narrower up in the Country. It contains the Counties of,

	Towns Names.	Ministers Names.	
Main, in which are,	} <i>Falmouth,</i> } <i>Scarborough,</i> } <i>Wells,</i> } <i>York,</i> } <i>Kittery,</i>	Mr. ———	Main County.
		Mr. ———	
		Mr. <i>Hancock.</i>	
		Mr.	

The Isle of Shoals.

*York* gives the Name of a Shire to a small part of this Province, but 'tis generally included in that of *Main*.

Cornwall, in which are,	} <i>Dover,</i> } <i>Exeter,</i> } <i>Hampton,</i> } <i>Hedeck or</i> } <i>Newcastel,</i> } <i>Portsmouth,</i>	Mr. <i>Joh. Pike.</i>	Cornwall.
		Mr. <i>Joh. Clark.</i>	
		Mr. <i>Joh. Cotton.</i>	
		Mr. <i>Sam. Moody.</i>	
		Mr. <i>Josh. Moody.</i>	

The furthestmost Bay Northward is *Casco*, in which is *Saco* River. On this River *Saco-Town* or *Scarborough* stands. Here is a very good Fort, built in the last Indian War, and is a great awe upon the *Hurons*, or French Indians to the Eastward. 'Twas mounted with 10 or 12 Guns. In the same County is the *William* and *Henry* Fort, on *Pemmaquid* River, about 20 Rods from *High-Water-Mark*; which in time of War, was mounted with 18 Guns, and garrison'd by 60 or 80 Men. The River *Pemmaquid* runs between 40 and 50 Miles up in the Country: There are besides three less Rivers, *Spurmwink*, *Kennebunk*, and *Piscataway*, and several Islands off the Coast, some of which are 10 Miles long. There are

high Mountains, and horrible Forrests in the Eastern Parts of these Counties, which are the most barren of any in *New-England*: However, towards the Sea-coasts, and upon the Rivers, the Soil is fruitful for Corn and Pasture; but the chief Trade is for Beaver, Lumber and Fish. These two Counties, when they were first planted, were a Province of themselves, and were call'd *New-Hampshire*, but they desir'd to be added to the Government of *Massachuset*. The most considerable Towns in them, are *York*, *Dover*, and *Wells*, where there are Fortifications; and so there are in all the Frontiers, and indeed in most of the other Towns, for the Indians in a Day's march can be in the middle of the Country. There were above 100 Families in *Wells*, before the breaking out of the Indian War in the East. The County-Courts are held at *Dover* and *Portsmouth* the last Tuesday in *June*, and at *York* the first Tuesday in *July*. The next Counties are,

	Towns Names.	Ministers Names.
Essex, in which are,	{ <i>Amesbury</i> ,	Mr. ———
	{ <i>Andover</i> ,	§ Mr. <i>Francis Dean</i> .
	{ <i>Beverly</i> ,	∪ Mr. <i>Thomas Barnard</i> .
	{ <i>Boxford</i> ,	Mr. <i>John Hale</i> .
	{ <i>Gloucester</i> ,	Mr. <i>Symmes</i> .
	{ <i>Haverhill</i> ,	Mr. <i>Emerson</i> .
	{ <i>Ipswich</i> ,	Mr. <i>Benjamin Rolfe</i> .
	{ <i>Lyn</i> ,	§ Mr. <i>William Hubbard</i> .
	{ <i>Manchester</i> ,	∪ Mr. <i>John Rogers</i> .
	{ <i>Marblehead</i> ,	Mr. <i>Feremiah Shephard</i> .
	{ <i>Newbury-East</i> ,	Mr. <i>John Emerson</i> .
	{ <i>West</i> ,	Mr. <i>Samuel Cheever</i> .
	{ <i>Rowley</i> ,	Mr. <i>Tappin</i> .
	{ <i>Salem</i> ,	Mr. <i>Samuel Belcher</i> .
	{ <i>Salisbury</i> ,	Mr. <i>Edward Payson</i> .
{ <i>Topsfeild</i> ,	§ Mr. <i>John Higginson</i> .	
{ <i>Wenham</i> ,	∪ Mr. <i>Nicholas Noyse</i> .	
	Mr. <i>Cushing</i> .	
	Mr. <i>Joseph Capen</i> .	
	Mr. <i>Joseph Gorish</i> .	

*Salem* is the chief Town of this County. The County Court is kept there the last Tuesday in *June*, and

and November. It has a Market every Wednesday, and two Fairs in the Year; the last Wednesday in *May*, and the last Wednesday in *September*. 'Tis pleasantly seated between two Rivers, and was the first Town that was built in *Massachusetts* Colony. *Lyn* is a Market Town: The County Court is kept at *Ipswich*, the last Tuesday in *March* and *September*. This Shire is water'd on the East by the great River *Merrimack*, navigable 40 Miles up and more; the Soil is not very fertile, except it be near the Coast. The Hills here are not very high; but in the Western Parts are inhabited by the Indians. There's an Island lies off of it, about three Miles long, which is very fruitful; and most of the Towns being built near the Sea-side, afford great Conveniences for the Fishery. In this County is the Promontory *Trabigzanda*, now *Cape Anne*, which is very high. The next to it is that of,

Towns Names.	Ministers Names.	
<i>Billerica,</i>	Mr. <i>Sam. Whiting.</i>	
<i>Cambridge,</i>	Mr. <i>W. Brattle.</i>	
<i>Charles-Town,</i>	Mr. <i>Char. Merston.</i>	
<i>Chelmsford,</i>	Mr. <i>Tho. Clark.</i>	
<i>Concord,</i>	Mr. <i>Joseph Eastbrook.</i>	
<i>Dunstable,</i>	Mr. <i>Tho. Weld.</i>	
<i>Groton,</i>	Mr. <i>Gersham Hobart,</i>	
<i>Lancaster,</i>	Mr. <i>John Whiting.</i>	
<i>Marlborough,</i>	Mr. <i>Wil. Brinsmead.</i>	
<i>Malden,</i>	Mr. <i>Michael Wiggleworth.</i>	Middle-
<i>Medford,</i>	Mr. <i>Simon Bradstreet.</i>	sex.
<i>Newton,</i>	Mr. <i>Nehemiah Hobart.</i>	
<i>Oxford,</i>		
<i>Reading,</i>	Mr. <i>Jonathan Peirpoint.</i>	
<i>Sherburn,</i>	Mr. <i>Daniel Gookin.</i>	
<i>Stow,</i>		
<i>Sudbury,</i>	Mr. <i>James Sherman.</i>	
<i>East-Waterton,</i>	Mr. <i>Henry Gibs.</i>	
<i>West,</i>	Mr. <i>Sam. Angier.</i>	
<i>Woburn,</i>	Mr. <i>Fox.</i>	
<i>Worcester,</i>		

The chief Town of this County is *Cambridge*, situated on the Northern Branch of *Charles River*. 'Tis a University, which has two Colleges, *Harvard* Col-

College, and *Stoughton* Hall. 'Twas at first call'd *Newton*, but it got the Name of *Cambridge* by the College's being built there. There are several fine Streets and fair Houses in it. The County Court is held there the first Tuesday in *April* and *October*. The next Town is *Charles Town*, the Mother of *Boston*; from which it lies about a Mile cross the Harbour, over which there is a Ferry. 'Tis situated between two Rivers, *Charles River* and *Mistic River*, and takes up the space that is from the one to the other. 'Tis beautify'd with a handsome large Church, a Market-place by the River's side, and two long Streets leading down to it. The County Court is kept there the third Tuesday in *June* and *December*.

*Reading* is a populous Town, commodiously situated on the Banks of a great Lake. There are two Mills in it, one for Grift, and another to saw Boards; such a one as is on the River of *Thames* on *Southwark*-side.

*Watertown* is noted for the Fairs held there the first Fryday in *June*, and the 1st in *September*. The Rivers are small in this County, but there are a great many of 'em, which watering the Pastures, render this one of the pleasantest and fruitfullest Spots of Ground in *New-England*. The Fields are full of Cattle of all sorts, and the Market at *Boston* is plentifully supply'd by it for Exportation, with Beef, Pork, &c. besides for a home Consumption. The Hills are cover'd with Sheep; and both together resemble

Sm. Del.

*Devonshire* in *England*, and as do the following County.

	Towns Names.	Ministers Names.
Suffolk, in which are,	<i>Boston,</i>	Mr. <i>James Allen.</i>
		Mr. <i>Benjamin Wadsworth.</i>
		Mr. <i>Mather, sen.</i>
Suffolk.		Mr. <i>Mather, jun.</i>
		Mr. <i>Sam. Wilward.</i>
		Mr. <i>Emblin.</i>
		<i>Monsieur Daille.</i>
		Mr. <i>Moses Fisk,</i>
	<i>Dedham,</i>	Mr. <i>Jos. Belcher.</i>
	<i>Dorchester,</i>	Mr. <i>John Danforth.</i>
		<i>Hingham,</i>



Suffolk, in which are,

[	Hingham,	Mr. John Norton,
	Hull,	Mr. Whitman.
	Medfeild,	Mr. Jos. Baxter.
	Mendon,	Mr. Grindall Rawson.
	Milton,	Mr. Peter Thatcher.
	Roxbury,	Mr. Nath. Walter.
	Weymouth,	Mr. Sam. Torrey.
	Woodstock,	Mr. Josiah Dwight.
	Wrentham,	Mr. Samuel Man.

The Capital of this County is *Boston*, the Capital of *City of New-England*, and the biggest City in *America*, except two or three on the Spanish Continent. 'Tis built on the Sea Coast, which renders it very commodious for Commerce. 'Tis fortify'd on the side of the Sea by a strong Castle, in an Island at the Mouth of the Harbour, thence call'd *Castle-Island*, and on the side of the Shore by Forts on two or three Neighbouring Hills, which command the Avenues to it. There are abundance of fine Buildings in it publick and private; as the Court House, Market Place, Sir *William Phips's* House and others. There are several handsome Streets: 'Tis bigger than *Exeter*; and contains 10 or 12000 Souls; the Militia consisting of four Companies of Foot. There are three Parish-Churches, and a French Church, and two Meeting Houses, in this City; the old Church, North Church, and South Church belong to the Presbyterians, who are the *Church of England as by Law Establish'd*: The French Church to the French Protestants; and the Meeting Houses to a Congregation of Church of *England* Men and Annabaptists. This is the chief Port of the Colony; and from hence 3 or 400 Sail of Ships have been loaden in a Year, with Lumber, Fish, Beef, Pork, &c. for several parts of *Europe* and *America*. Here the Governour commonly resides, the General Court and Assembly meet, the Courts of Judicature sit, and the Affairs of the Province are transacted. In short, 'tis a very flourishing City, and for the Beauty of its Buildings, and the Greatness of its Trade, gives place to few Towns in *England*.

The Market at *Boston* is kept every Thursday.

The Fairs on the first Tuesday in *May*, and on the first Tuesday in *October* every year, &c.

The History of New-England.

Every year to hold three Days each. And, The County Court the last Tuesday in *April, July, October,* and *January,* in every year.

*Dorchester* is the next Town to *Boston* for bigness. 'Tis built at the mouth of two little Rivers near the Sea-side: It has two Fairs; one on the fourth Tuesday in *March,* and another on the last Wednesday in *October* every year: *Roxbury* is noted for its Free-school. The Town of *Weymouth* is the most ancient in the Province; but is not of so much consideration as 'twas in the Infancy of the Colony. Here are no great Rivers in this Shire, but many little ones, which render it so pleasant and fruitful, that a famous Author says it may not unworthily be term'd *Paradise.* To the Westward of this and *Middlesex* Counties, bordering on the Colony of *Connecticut,* from whence 'tis only separated by the River of the same Name, lies,

Quam hu-  
jus Tra-  
ctus Para-  
disum  
haud im-  
merito  
dixeris,  
*Del.*

Hamp-  
shire.

Hampshire, in which  
are,

Towns Names.	Ministers Names.
<i>Deerfeild,</i>	Mr. <i>John Williams.</i>
<i>Enfeild,</i>	
<i>Hatfeild,</i>	Mr. <i>W. Williams.</i>
<i>Hadley,</i>	
<i>Northampton,</i>	Mr. <i>Solomon Stoddard.</i>
<i>Springfeild,</i>	Mr. <i>Daniel Brewer.</i>
<i>Southfeild,</i>	Mr. <i>Benjamin Ruggles.</i>
<i>Westfeild,</i>	Mr. <i>Edward Taylor.</i>

This County being within Land, and hilly, is not so fruitful as those that lie on the Rivers nearer the Coasts. Its chief Towns are *Northampton,* where the County Court is kept the last Tuesday in *March;* and *Springfeild,* where 'tis held the last Tuesday in *September.*

We must now proceed to the next, but eldest Colony in *New-England.*

Plymouth  
Colony,  
Extent.

*Plymouth* Colony, which runs along the Coast about 100 Miles, from *Cape Cod* in *Barnstable* County, to *Manchester* in *Bristol* County; and in Breadth, from *Monument Bay* in *Barnstable* County, to *Scituate* in *Plymouth* County, near 50 Miles. It contains the following Shires; that of

<i>Plimouth, in which are,</i>	Towns Names.	Ministers Names.	
	{ <i>Bridgewater,</i>	Mr. <i>James Keith.</i>	
	{ <i>Duxbury,</i>	Mr. <i>Wisivul.</i>	
	{ <i>Marshfeild,</i>	Mr. <i>Edward Thompson.</i>	
	{ <i>Middlebury,</i>	Mr.	<i>Plimouth County.</i>
	{ <i>Plimouth,</i>	Mr. <i>John Cotton.</i>	
{ <i>Scituate,</i>	Mr. <i>Jeremiah Cushing.</i>		
{	Mr. <i>Deodate Lawson.</i>		

The chief Town of this County is *New-Plimouth*, the Capital of the Colony, and the oldest in *New-England*. 'Tis situated on the great Gulph of *Patuxet*, and contains 3 or 400 Families.

The next Town to this in Bigness was formerly *Scituate*; but tho *Plimouth* has the Honour of being the Metropolis of the Province, *Scituate* has grown upon her so much lately, that she has two Churches, whereas *Plimouth* has but one. There are two or three small Rivers in this Shire; which, as to its Soil, is much of the same nature with that of *Suffolk*. And passing by Sea, from this County to the next, we must weather *Cape Cod*, the highest Promontory on the Coast, and the most Northerly Point of Land in the Province. The Country about it is barren; but the Convenience of Fishing renders it as populous as most in *New-England*. The Shire takes its Name from the Town of *Barnstable*, lying in a Bay which is also call'd *Barnstable*.

<i>Barnstable County, in which are,</i>	Towns Names.	Ministers Names.	
	{ <i>Barnstable,</i>	Mr. <i>John Russel,</i>	
	{ <i>Eastham,</i>	Mr. <i>Sam. Treat.</i>	
	{ <i>Manimoy,</i>	Mr. <i>Nath. Stone.</i>	<i>Barnstable County.</i>
	{ <i>Rochester,</i>	Mr. <i>Arnold.</i>	
	{ <i>Sandwich,</i>	Mr. <i>Rowland Cotton.</i>	
{ <i>Yarmouth,</i>	Mr. <i>John Cotton.</i>		

Opposite to the South Bay of this Shire, call'd *Monument Bay*, lies two Islands; one of 'em is nam'd *Martha's Vineyard*, where Capt. *Gosnold* first landed, and in which is now the Parish-Church, with two Ministers, Mr. *Ralph Thatcher*, and Mr. *Denham*, besides several Indian Preachers, the Island being inhabited

habited mostly by Indian Converts, as is the other Island *Nantucket*, where there are no English Preachers, but Indian Pastors. The Streights between *Martha's Vineyard*, and the Continent, call'd *Malabar*, are a very dangerous Passage.

The next Shire to this is *Bristol County*, in which are,

Bristol  
County.

Towns Names.	Ministers Names.
<i>Bristol,</i>	Mr. <i>John Sparhawk.</i>
<i>Swansey,</i>	
<i>Taunton,</i>	Mr. <i>Sam. Danforth,</i>
<i>Little-Compton,</i>	Mr. <i>Adams.</i>

*Swansey*, situated at the Mouth of *Providence River*, is a Town of some note in the Country; but *Bristol* is the place of most Trade, and the chief of the County, of which *Rhode Island* is reckon'd a part. In this Isle there are two Churches, at

*Newport* and *Portsmouth,* } Mr. *Nathaniel Clap* Minister.

*Elizabeth Island*, at the Mouth of *Monument Bay*, was one of those that Capt. *Gosnold* landed on.

*Providence* and *Patuxet Rivers*, are the principal of this Shire, but are neither of them very big. The *Narragansets*, the most formidable Nation of all the Indians, inhabited the South West Parts of it. There is nothing in this County so extraordinary or different from the rest, as to deserve to be mention'd.

Connecticut and  
Newhaven Provinces.  
Extent.

The other Two Provinces, which are now the Joint Colony of *Connecticut* and *Newhaven*, are in length from *Stoniton* in *New-London County*, to *Rye* in *Fairfeild County*, on the Borders of *New-York*, 70 Miles, and in breadth from *Saybrook* in *New-London County*, to *Windsor* in *Hartford* about 50. The first County we meet with in them on the Coast, is

*New-London County*, in which are,

Towns Names.	Ministers Names.
<i>Stoniton,</i>	Mr. <i>James Noyes.</i>
<i>Saybrook,</i>	Mr. <i>Thomas Buckingham.</i>

*Preston,*

<i>Preston,</i>	Mr. <i>Sam. Tread.</i>
<i>Dansick,</i>	Mr. <i>Joseph Mors.</i>
<i>Norwich,</i>	Mr. <i>Ja. Fitch.</i>
<i>New-London,</i>	Mr. <i>Gordon Saltonstall.</i>
<i>Lyme,</i>	Mr. <i>Moses Noyes.</i>
<i>Lebanon,</i>	
<i>Killingworth,</i>	Mr. <i>Abraham Perison.</i>

New-London  
County.

The Eastern Parts of this Shire are pleasant and fruitful, the Western Swampy and Mountainous, which occasion'd a great Trade for Furrs and Lumber. *Saybrook* is the oldest Town in the County, and is seated on the South side of *Connecticut* River, as *Lime* is on the North, at the Mouth of it. This River is very large, divided into several small Branches, and navigable as high as *Hartford*, 60 Miles within Land.

*New-London* is seated on a River call'd the *Thames*; the first Branch of which River goes by the Name of *Glass* River, the next Branch by that of *Russel's Delight*, the third by that of *Indian* River, and the rest are so small, that they are not thought worthy of a Name. There's another small River, which falls into the Sea at *Manchester*; and these are all that are in this County; next to which within Land, is

*Hartford* County, in which are,

Towns Names.	Ministers Names.
<i>Farmington,</i>	Mr. <i>Sam. Hooker,</i>
<i>Glastonbury,</i>	Mr. <i>Timothy Stephens.</i>
<i>Hadham,</i>	Mr. <i>Jeremiah Hobart.</i>
	Mr. <i>Timothy Woodbridge,</i>
<i>Hartford,</i>	Mr. <i>Tho. Buckingham.</i>
<i>Middle Town,</i>	Mr. <i>No. Russell.</i>
<i>Simsbury,</i>	Mr. <i>Dudly Woodbridge.</i>
<i>Waterbury,</i>	Mr. <i>Fer. Peck.</i>
<i>Weathersfeild,</i>	Mr. <i>Stephen Mix.</i>
<i>Windsor,</i>	Mr. <i>Sam. Mather.</i>
<i>Farm,</i>	Mr. <i>Tim. Edwards.</i>
<i>Windham.</i>	Mr. <i>Sam. Whiting.</i>

Hartford  
County.

## The History of New-England.

*Hartford* is the most considerable Town in this Shire: It has two Parish Churches in it, Old Church and New Church; the People of *New-England* not distinguishing their Churches by Saints Names. Near *Hadham* is an Island in *Connecticut* River which waters the Northern Bounds of the County: This Island is call'd *Thirty Mile Island*, being that distance from the River's Mouth. In the Western Parts are several Ridges of Hills, and thick Forrests, which afford plenty of Game and Traffick.

The Two next Counties make the Colony of *Newhaven*, and both of them are Maritime Provinces.

In *Newhaven* County are,

	Towns Names.	Ministers Names.
Newhaven County.	<i>Brainford,</i>	Mr. <i>Sam. Russell.</i>
	<i>Derby,</i>	Mr. <i>John James.</i>
	<i>Guilford,</i>	Mr. <i>Tho. Ruggles.</i>
	<i>Milford,</i>	Mr. <i>Sam. Andrews.</i>
	<i>Newhaven,</i>	Mr. <i>Ja. Pierpoint.</i>
	<i>Wallingford,</i>	Mr. <i>Sam. Street.</i>

Near *Brainford* there is a small Iron-work on a Branch of a little River that runs into the Sea there; the Place is from thence call'd *Iron-Mill*. There's another little River which runs into the Sea at *Milford*, and another at *Guilford*.

The Capital Town of this Province was *Newhaven*, which was first built; then *Guilford*, then *Milford*, then *Stamford*, and then *Brainford*. The next County to it is

*Fairfeild* County, in which are,

	Towns Names.	Ministers Names.
Fairfeild County.	<i>Danbury,</i>	Mr. <i>Seth Shore.</i>
	<i>Fairfeild,</i>	Mr. <i>Joseph Web.</i>
	<i>Fairfeild Village,</i>	Mr. <i>Charter Chauncy.</i>
	<i>Greenwich,</i>	Mr. <i>Jos. Morgan.</i>
	<i>Norwalk,</i>	Mr. <i>Stephen Buckingham.</i>
	<i>Rye,</i>	Mr. <i>Bowers.</i>
	<i>Stamford,</i>	Mr. <i>John Davenport.</i>
	<i>Stratford,</i>	Mr. <i>Israel Chauncy.</i>
	<i>Woodbury,</i>	Mr. <i>Zachariah Walker.</i>

There's

There's no navigable River in this County; that which falls into *Hudsons* River below *Newark*, not deserving the Name, tho' tis broad at the Mouth; but it does not hold so above 5 or 6 Miles, nor run above 15 or 20 into the Country. Most of the Towns are built upon Creeks in *Hudson's* River, and are of no great note for Trade or Bigness; the Northern parts of *New-England* being the richest and most populous, not but that there is good Corn, Beef, Pork, and other Provisions, in the Southern, tho' not in so great plenty as in *Massachuset* Colony. The Inland Country Eight or Ten Miles from the Shore is all Hills and Swamps, and un-inhabited. Some of the Rivers and Harbours we have mention'd, as those of *Merrimack* and *Boston*, are capable of containing 500 or 1000 Sail of Ships, and are shelter'd by about 200 Islands, that break the Winds and the Seas. The Woods are every where stor'd with all sorts of Necessaries for building.

Having gone over the four Provinces in their Geographical Order, and given an Account of the several Soils in each County, as also of the Climate in general, We come now to the Product and Animals of *New-England*.

We shall begin with the latter, and speak first of the Fish, which is here excellent, and in abundance, both for Food and Traffick, as well in the Rivers, as in the Sea. As Cod, Thornback, Sturgeon, Porpus, Haddocks, *The Fish.* Salmon, Herrings, Mackerell, Oysters, Muscles, Smelts, Eels, Lampreys, Sharks, Seals, Crampus, Whales, and others small and great.

Some years since, there stranded on the Coast of *New-England* a dead Whale, of the sort which they call *Trumpo*, having Teeth like those of a Mill, its Mouth at a good distance from and under the Nose or Trunk, and several Partitions in the Nose, out of which ran a thin Oily Substance, which candy'd; the remainder being a thick fat Substance, was scrap'd out, which is said to be the *Sperma Ceti*. These Whales were to be met with between *New-England* and *New-York*, where they might be caught 8 or 9 Months in the Year.

The Whale Fishery was more common formerly than 'tis now; and the *Newfoundland* Trade engrosses that

Low-  
thorp's  
*Philosoph.*  
*Transact.*  
*Abridg.*  
Vol. 2.  
p. 844.

that of Cod in a great measure; but there is still vast Quantities of that and other Fish taken, salted and sent to the Sugar Islands, for the subsistence of the White Servants and Negroes.

The Sea is always full of Fish on the Coasts of *New-England*, whether in fair Weather or foul, but the best time for fishing is in *March, April, May*, and part of *June*. Captain *Smith* relates, that in his time there were Alkermes taken worth 30 or 40 *l.* which is now very rarely known, and few of 'em to be met. As is the *Stellar Fish*, of which 6 or 7 were taken near the Shoals of *Nantucket*; and Mr. *Winthrop* Governour of *Connecticut* Colony, gave the Royal Society an account of this elaborate Piece of Nature, that divides it self into no less than 81920 small parts by Branchings, and is one of the most wonderful Works of the Creation.

Afello-  
rum ma-  
jorum he-  
lecum.

Ibid. p.  
833.

Beasts.

Captain *Smith* speaks of several sorts of Beasts, as well as Fish, which are seldom or never found in *New-England*, such as Lyons, Musk-Cats, &c. but there are Bears, Foxes, Rackoons, Otters, Beavers, Deer, Hares, Rabbits, as also that admirable Creature the Mose; of which we cannot give a better Description, than what Mr. *Josselyn* has transmitted to us among his *New-England* Rarities; 'Tis about 12 Foot high, with fair Horns, and broad Palms; some of 12 Foot from the Tip of one Horn to that of the other.

Another Author speaking of the manner of Hunting this Creature, says, They commonly hunt it in the Winter, and sometimes run it down in half a day, sometimes they are a whole one about it; the Ground being then generally cover'd with Snow, the Beast sinks very heavy every Step he runs, breaking down Trees as big as a Man's Thigh. When the Sportsmen get up with him, they dart their Launces at him, and he walks slowly after he's wounded, till spent with loss of Blood, he falls like a ruin'd Building, making the Earth shake under him. His Body is about the bigness of a Bull's; his Neck resembles a Stag's, his Legs are short, his Tail longer than a Buck's, and his Flesh very grateful; he shoots his Horns every four years.

Ib. p.437.

The Beasts in *New-England* us'd to produce a profitable Traffick with the Indians for Peltry, which is since mightily decreas'd, as is that Trade in general, occasion'd by the dis-use of Beaver and other Skins,



necessary in the Fell-mongers Manufacture. There's abundance of all sorts of European Cattle, as Cows, Sheep, Goats, Hogs and Horses; the latter are a little kind, not much larger than that of *Wales*, but are very hardy and serviceable; many of them are exported to the *Leward* Islands for Saddle-Horses, and some for Draught. The *New-England* Merchants also send Leather thither, and vast Quantities of Pork and Beef, as has been before mention'd.

Of Creeping things, besides those in common with other Places on the Continent of *America*, the Rattlesnake is the most noted and dangerous.

There are also several kinds of Flies, which are very troublesome to the Inhabitants. There was such a swarm of a certain sort of Insects in *New-England* some years ago, that they poison'd and destroy'd all the Trees for 200 Miles together. They broke forth out of Holes in the Ground like Maggots, and turn'd to Flies, with a Tail or Sting, which they stuck into the Tree, and so kill'd it with the Venom in the Sting.

There is no Country almost where there is greater Variety of Fowl, wild and tame, than in *New-England*; as Pheasants, Partridges, Turkeys, Ducks, *Fowl*, Geese, Herons, Storcks, Cormorants, Swans, Widgeons, Doppers, Black-birds, and Barndoor Poultry; which leads me to the Grain of the Country, as Indian Corn; and in a word, all Grains that grow either in *Europe* or *America*. They send their Indian and English Wheat, Oats, Peese and Beans, Flower and Bisket, to *Bardadoes* and the *Caribbee* Islands. Flax and Hemp grow there, as well as in the *Baltick* or *Germany*; and there is hardly any advantagious Grain that they cannot and do not cultivate.

The Indian Corn being that which is most planted in this Country, and which was only us'd before the English came there, it will not be improper to describe the Culture of it, as we find it communicated to the Royal Society by Mr. *Winthrop*. Ib. 630.  
The Culture of  
Indian  
Corn.

The Natives call'd it *Weachin*, and in some Southern parts of *America*, 'tis known by the Name of *Mais* or *Maize*. The Ear is a Span long, compos'd of 8 Rows of Grain or more, according to the Goodness of the Ground, about 30 Grains in a Row. 'Tis of various  
Co-

Colours, as red, white, yellow, blew, olive, greenish, black, speckl'd, strip'd, &c. sometimes in the same Field, and the same Ear; but the white and yellow are the most common. The Ear is defended from the Cold and Storms by strong thick Husks; the Stalk grows 6. or 8 Foot high; that of *New-England* is not quite so tall as that of *Virginia*; and at *Canada* 'tis shorter than at *New-England*; 'tis jointed like a Cane, is full of sweet Juice like the Sugar Cane, and a Syrup as sweet as Sugar may be made out of it, as has been often try'd. At every Joint there are long Leaves or Flaggs, and at the Top a Branch of Flowers like Rye-blossoms. 'Tis generally planted from the middle of *April* to the middle of *May*. In the Northern parts the *Mohawk* Corn is not planted till *June*, and yet is ripe in season; the Stalks of this sort are short, the Ears near the Bottom, and are of several Colours. The manner of planting Maize, is in Rows at equal Distance every way, about 5 or 6 Feet; the Earth is open'd with a How 4 Inches deep, and 4 or 5 Grains are thrown in it, at a little distance from one another, in the breadth of a How; then they are cover'd with Earth: If 2 grow, the Crop will answer: the Corn is weeded at a hands length, and the Earth is loosen'd about it with a How; this Labour must be repeated as the Weeds come up; when the Stalk begins to grow high, a little Earth should be drawn about it, and on putting forth the Ear, so much as to make a little Hill, like a *Hopbill*. 'Tis ripe about the middle of *September*; it must be stripp'd as soon as gather'd, unless 'tis laid thin, to prevent its growing mouldy or sprouting; the common way is to move the Ear together in long *Traces*, by some parts of the Husk left thereon, which is call'd *Tracing*: These *Traces* are hung upon Bearers within doors; and will keep so all Winter good and sweet. The Indians thrash it as they gather it, dry it well on Matts in the Sun, and bury it in Holes in the Ground, lin'd with Moss or Matts, which are their Barns: The English lately plant it with the help of the Plow; they turn up single Furrows 6 Feet distant, then plow a-cross at the same distance, throw in the Corn where these meet, and cover it with a How, or run another Furrow over it with the Plough.

The Indians boil it till it becomes tender, and eat it with Fish or Vennison instead of Bread; sometimes they bruise it in Mortars, and so boil it: The most usual way is to parch it in Ashes, stirring it so artificially as to be very tender, without burning; this they sift and beat in Mortars into fine Meal, which they eat dry, or mix'd with Water. The English mix it into a stiff Paste, make Bread of it, which they bake all Day or all Night. The best sort of Food which is made of it is call'd *Samp*; to make it, the Corn is water'd half an hour, beaten in a Mortar to the bigness of Rice, sifted, boil'd and eaten with Milk, or Butter and Sugar, which is a very pleasant wholesome Diet. The English have also made good Beer of it, by malting it, or making it of Bread: When they malt it, it must chil both ways, Root and Blade; to do which, they heap it up at a convenient time, then take away the top of the Earth in a Garden-Field 2 or 3 Inches deep, after which they cover the Ground with the Corn, and the Corn with the Earth; when the Plot is green all over with the Corn-sprouts, which will be in about 10 days, it must be taken up, the Earth shaken from it, and dry'd, then wash'd and dry'd again in a Kiln: This makes the Malt and that Beer, which will be pleasant, wholesom, and of a brown Colour. The Beer made of Bread is more durable, and altogether as pleasant: To do it, they cut the Bread into great Lumps as big as a Man's Fist, marsh and manage it as they do Malt, adding or omitting Hops, as is desir'd.

Besides Garden and Orchard Fruit-trees, and Shrubs, of which there's scarce any sort wanting, the Woods and Swamps here abound with Oak, Elm, Ash, Cypress, Pine, Chesnut, Cedar, Aspin, Beech, Firr, Safafras, and Sumach.

Among the Rarities of *New-England*, is the *Sabina Vulgaris*, or common Savin, found very often in the Hills, a spontaneous Plant; Here, as well as at *Bermudas*, is that Berry to be met with, which breeds Low-Worms that turn to Flies, bigger than Cochineel thorp's Flies, feeding on the same Berry; in which has been found a Colour not at all inferiour to that of the Cochineal Flie, and as to Medicinal Vertue much exceeding it.

A certain Tree grows in the Eastern Parts of *New-England*, on the Bark of which are little Knobs wherein is a liquid Matter like Turpentine, of a very fanative Nature. The Dwarf Oak grows wild here and was sent hence into *England* to be cultivated.

But the Treasure and the Glory of their Woods is the Monarch Oak, the Spruce and Firr Trees, by which the Navy of *England* might be supply'd from hence with all manner of Naval Stores, at a cheaper rate than they are now imported from the *Baltick*. Pitch and Tar are made here, and as good in its kind as any from the *North*; and more Ships, as has been hinted, built in this Province, than in all the other parts of the *West Indies* belonging to the English, or perhaps to all the European Nations.

Trade.

'Tis easy to imagine, that the Advantage of so many English Hands thus employ'd, is of much more Service to the Crown, than they would be in *England*, where there are already too many thousands that are useles. Industry is necessary for Life in *America*, where 'twas impossible for a lazie Person to live at the first Settlement of the Colonies; but there being no such necessity in *England*, we have so many idle insignificant People, that 'twou'd be well if they were all in those Parts of the English Empire, where their Hands must provide for their Mouths, and I have no Notion of any more Difference between *Old-England* and *New*, than between *Lincolnshire* and *Somersetshire*: neither can I see, why the English in *America* shou'd not be suffer'd to cultivate their Ground, and improve it as they think fit, any more than that feeding and grazing shou'd be prohibited in *Somersetshire* for the Advantage of *Lincolnshire*.

The Advantage of it.

The People of *New-England* deal as much with *Old-England* as either of those Counties in proportion to their Numbers; and by their assisting the *Leward* Islands with Provisions, are rather a Service to the Publick Interest than a Prejudice; for without help from them, the *Sugar* Plantations cou'd not maintain three hundred thousands Mouths, Whites and Blacks, as they do at least, Provisions cou'd not be sent them from *England* with that Ease, Speed and Certainty, as from this Colony.

From the Islands, the *New-England* Men receive in exchange for their Lumber, by which is meant Boards, Masts, Pipe-staves and Hoops; and their Provisions, Sugar, Melasses, Rum, Ginger, Indigo and Cotton, more than enough to supply their home Consumption; the rest they ship for *England*.

They have several Still-houses in *Boston*, and make very good Spirits there; but the main of their Trade for all sorts of Necessaries is with *Old-England*, from whence they have their Stuffs, Silks, Linnen, *Birmingham-Ware*, Tools for Mechanicks; and tho they have many Conveniencies of furnishing themselves with most sorts of wearing Apparel at home; yet they import such Quantities of that and other Merchandise from *England*, as renders their Commerce very beneficial, and worthy Encouragement.

The Mines of Iron and Copper which are found there, do not produce so much as was expected, 'tis hop'd they will in time turn to a better account: Till then most of their Iron and Copper-Wares will come from hence; and we ought not to envy them the Improvements they make of their Pasture and Tillage, since we get so much by them otherwise: Which Observation will, we believe, remove any ill Impressions that some late Arguments may have made on the Minds of many, to the Disadvantage of this industrious People; *Because*, says a known Trader, by *Tillage, Fishing, Manufactures, and Trade, they to all intents and purposes imitate Old-England; and did formerly much, and in some degree do now supply the other Colonies with Provisions, in Exchange for their Commodities, as Tobacco, Sugar, &c. which they carry to Foreign Markets. How conveniently for the Nation's Interest I shall not determine, being no Enemy to any kind of honest Industry: But this cannot chuse but be allow'd, that if any Hands in the Indies be wrong employ'd, for Domestick Interest, it must be this and those other Colonies, which settle with no other Prospect than the like way of living; therefore if any, such only should be neglected and discourag'd, who pursue a Method that rivals our Native Kingdom, and threatens in time a total Independency thereon.*

*Sir Dalby Thomas East. Ac. of the W. India Colonies.*

We cannot omit doing so much Justice to the Colony of *New-England* as to repeat what we mention'd above, That they ship for *England* the Commodities they import from the *Sugar Islands*, and do not carry them to Foreign Markets; which, with what was said before, is, we hope, a sufficient Answer to this invidious Paragraph. Tho' for want of Current Coin, sufficient for the Trade of the Country, the *New-England* Men are forc'd to barter Goods, and exchange one Commodity for another, yet they have Money coin'd in *New-England* at *Boston*, where there is a Mint; and the Master or Warden of it is oblig'd to coin the Money of good Silver, of the Allay of New Sterling English Money. And there is enough of this and other Silver, to answer all Persons Occasions in a Retail Trade.

---

### C H A P. III.

*Of the Inhabitants, English and Indian; Their Religion, Laws, Customs, Manners, Language, Strength and Numbers: With a short History of the University in New-England.*

OF the many Nations of Indians mention'd by Capt. *Smith* and Mr. *Delaet*, there are now few left, and of these scarce any go by the Names they gave them. In those Authors we find the Indian Kingdoms of *Segetago*, *Pahtiantanuck*, *Pocossum*, *Taughtanaknet*.  
*The Indian Nations;* *Wabiggan*, *Nassaque*, *Maschecosqueek*, *Wawrigweck*, *Moshoquen*, *Wackcogo*, *Passaranack*, and their Confederates *Aucocisco*, *Acoominticus*, *Passataquac*, *Aggowan*, *Massachusset*, *Naemkek*. Of all whom only the two latter are mention'd by the Modern Historians. The former Nations lay to the Eastward; and the English settl'd in the Southern Parts of *New-England* where Captain *Smith* did not trade.

*Naemkek* is that Country which now makes the County of *Essex*; and the next to it was the *Massachussets*

*chusetts*, which gave name to the chiefst Colony in *New-England*: The People who inhabited those Parts that are now the Counties of *Suffolk* and *Middlesex*, were the most Populous of any of the other Indian Nations; they seem'd to be more civiliz'd than the rest, which might be occasion'd by their Commerce with European Nations; for all that came to trade there generally dealt with them, and fish'd off their Coasts.

As they differ'd very much in their Language, Manners and Customs from the other Indians, so they also differ'd in some measure from one another; and the same did the Nations more to the South, of which we find many mention'd, as the *Massasoits*, who dwelt about *Mount Hope* in *New-Bristol* County, the *Pocassetts* in *Plimouth* County, the *Manimoys* in *Barnstable* County, the *Nansetts*, *Mattachiests*, *Namaskets*, who inhabited the Inland-Country between *Providence* and *Merrimack* Rivers; the *Narragansetts*, who dwelt about *New-London* County; the *Pequots* and *Wapenokes*, with whom they were almost always at Wars; the *Marchicans*, the *Sequems* in *Hampshire*, about 20 Miles from the Coast, the *Navassii* and *Horakasi* further within Land; all these were Inhabitants of the Country about *Connecticut* River; the *Morattigons* to the Westward of the *Massasoits*; the *Patuxets* between the Counties of *New-Bristol* and *New-London*; the *Maquas* towards the Lake of the *Iroquoise*, Westward of *Connecticut* River; the *Meneqlus*, and others Eastward. These particular Nations had one more general Name, that of the *Armonchiquois*; and those of *Norembegua* were call'd *Etechemins*. But every *Sachem* or *Segamore* who was Lord of a Territory 8 or 10 Miles in length, erected his Lands into a Kingdom, and gave a Name to his Nation. These *Segamores* were their Captains, elected out of the Seniors of their Noble Families. The Extent of the Government of each was commonly bounded by some River or Bay. The Vote of the *Segamore* was definitive in their Publick Assemblies; sometimes their Priests and Wizzards, who were also their Physicians, were consulted; the Power of their *Segamores* was despotick: Valour made a Man noble, and they had no other Distinction among them, but the Men

The Massa-  
so its.

Other Indi-  
ans.

Their Go-  
vernment.

*Cloathing,* of Courage and *Poltroons*. They were cloath'd with  
 &c. Bear-skins, Wolf-skins, and the Skins of their wild  
 Beasts; which they threw off in Summer, and put on  
 again in Winter. Their Food was Maize, Fish and  
 Fowl; their Weapons were Bows and Arrows,  
 sharpen'd with Fish-bones instead of Knives; their  
 Boats were Canoo's wrought out of the Trunks of  
 Trees, made hollow by Fire: Some of 'em had no  
 settl'd Dwelling, but liv'd eight or ten Families toge-  
 ther in a moveable Tent, for the Convenience of  
 Fishing *alamode des Tartares*, from whom 'tis said  
 they are descended: But this is only a Guess, made  
 from a small Agreement in the Manners between  
 these barbarous People and those, which is harder to  
 be prov'd, than how *America* came first to be inha-  
 bited. Some of them had settl'd Habitations or Wig-  
 wams in Towns, built with Posts and Matts, and  
 cover'd with the Bark of Trees, large enough for se-  
 veral Families to cohabit, they being great Lovers of  
 Society, and not quarrellsom.

*Religion.* They had no Notion of Religion or God, they  
 worship'd a certain Devil, but not with Solemnity or  
 regular Rites as the Negroes do; they were then  
 and still are crafty, tимерous, fickle, quick of Appre-  
 hension, revengeful, thevish, have as many Wive  
 as they can maintain, their Women supporting the  
 Pains of Child-bearing without the least Groan.

Their Flesh is smooth, and their Complexion  
 good; but they spoil the latter, by painting them-  
 selves with certain Juices and Oils that render them  
 tawny.

Since their Commerce with the English they are  
 not quite so barbarous as before: Instead of Bear  
 skins, &c. they wear Mantles of Cloth. Some of  
 their *Segamores* and principal Men have Houses built  
 after the English Fashion; and many hundreds of  
 them have been converted to the Christian Religion  
 Mr. *Mayhew*, Minister of *Martha's Vineyard*, and the  
 famous new English Missionary Mr. *John Elliot*, were  
 very instrumental in propagating the Christian Faith  
 among them.

But before I enter upon that Subject, it may not be  
 improper to let the Reader know the present State of  
 these Barbarians, as to the several Manners, Customs



Forms of Government, Dress, Diet, and Language, abstracted from an Author who dwells among them.

Tho these People are divided into so many several Nations, that there are above 20 of them within the Limits of this Settlement, yet they seem by their Language to be originally of one Extraction, for notwithstanding they can't understand each other, 'tis occasion'd more from the variety of the Pronounciation of their Languages, than the difference of the Words. *Nuppaw, Duppaw, Ruppaw*, signifying the Sun in three several Dialects. *Winmit, Wirrit*, Good; *Pum, Pumme, Pim*, Oil. Their Language, if possible, is more barbarous than their Manners; and one wou'd think has not been refin'd since the Confusion of Tongues at *Babel*. For instance,

*Nummatchekodtantamoonganunnonash*; is in English, *Our Lusts*. Language.

*Noowomantammoonkanunnonash* Our Loves. Cot. Mat.

*Kummogkodon.attoottuminooctiteaongannunnonash* . . . Our Question. lib. 3. p. 193.

There certainly will be occasion of no more Examples, to convince any reasonable Person of the Barbarity of the Indian Language. Cot Mat. l. 4. p. 51. Govern- ment,

Their Government is a little more polite; their Kings are absolute Monarchs, yet they consult their Nobles sometimes, and whenever they do so, they behave themselves with a becoming Majesty: Their own Opinion desides all Matters of Council. The Emperors or greater Kings have their Lieutenants, who govern as arbitrarily as their Masters; the Crown always descends to the Eldest Son; their Nobles are such as are descended from their Princes, or enjoy Lands by virtue of Grants from them. They have *Yeomen* who claim a natural Right of living in their Prince's Dominions, and a common use of their Land; and *Villains*, who are known to be descended from Strangers and Foreigners, and are in some measure subject to the Yeomanry. The Prince's Revenues are Presents, Wrecks, Furrs, First Fruits; in time of War the People are at their disposal: They have a Contempt of the limited Authority of the English Governours; and one of these Kings visiting Mr. *Mayhem*, Priest and Governour

nour of *Martha's Vineyard*, desir'd something of him, which *Mayhew* promis'd to do, adding afterwards, *if the Inhabitants consented*; the Barbarian reply'd, *What I promise or speak is always true, but you English Governours cannot be true, for you can't make your Words and Intentions true, but mine are always true, for I make 'em true.*

Money.

Their Money they call *Wampam*, and is Beads made of the Shells of Fish. Their Houses are a few Matts ty'd about Poles fasten'd in the Earth. They lie a-nights round a fire without any Covering, but the Turf or Bark on their Houses. Their Cloathing is a Beast's Skin upon their Backs, with an Apron hanging before those Parts that Decency among Savages requires to be conceal'd. Their chief Diet is *Nokehick*, parch'd Meal and Water boil'd up to a Consistency, and the Flesh of Deer, Bears, Mose and Rackoons; Fish and Fowl, when they can catch it. Their Physick is some few odd Specificks, a Hothouse, or Charms us'd by their Priests. The Men are lazy; their Wives do all the Drudgery, plant, dress, house, and thrash their Corn, and build their Wigwams. The Men hunt in Companies of Scores, and sometimes Hundreds together. They divide the Time by *Sleeps*, *Moons* and *Winters*. They believe there are many Gods, that every remarkable Creature has a God in it, or about it; they sacrifice to the Devil; and Dancing is one of their Religious Ceremonies: They are great Dancers, and will spend whole Days, like so many monstrous Scaramouches. Those of 'em that are converted, conform themselves as near as may be to the English in every thing.

And now 'tis time to speak of these Indian Christians, of whom the first that embrac'd Christianity, was one *Jacoomes*, a Mean Man of *Martha's Island*, whom Mr. *Mayhew* perswaded to renounce Idolatry, which he did, and profess'd the Christian Religion before the Sachems of his Country, telling them, *The God they worship'd had great Power, but limited and subservient to the God he had now Chosen.*

Indians  
converted.

In 10 or 12 years time this Minister converted several hundreds, and reduc'd them into the Form of Churches, over whom Indian Pastors were in time set; after him, " Mr. *Elliot*, Minister of *Roxburgh*,  
" about

“ about a Mile from *Boston*, undertook the mission-  
 “ ry Work, learn'd the Indian Tongue, translated *Abstract of*  
 “ the Bible, and several Treatises of Practical Divi- *a Letter*  
 “ nity, and Catechisms, in and about the year 1670. *from Inc.*  
 “ he form'd an Indian Church in a Town call'd *Mather to*  
 “ *tuk*, baptiz'd them, and first administer'd the Lord's *Dr. Leuf-*  
 “ Supper to them. The Minister of that Church *den, Heb.*  
 “ 12 years ago, was one *Daniel* an Indian. Mr. *Elliot*  
 “ afterwards form'd four Churches of Indians in *Prof. at*  
 “ *Massachuset* Colony. *Utrecht;*

“ At *Mashipang*, 50 Miles from *Boston*, another  
 “ Church of converted Indians was establish'd, and  
 “ *Jacoomes*, whom we have mention'd before, being  
 “ now become a Man of Piety and Knowledge, was  
 “ admitted to be Pastor of it.

“ There are 5 Assemblies more of Indian Christi-  
 “ ans not far from *Mashipang*, the Preachers being all  
 “ Indians. At *Saconet* in *Plimouth* County, is a great  
 “ Congregation; and near *Cape Cod* six Assemblies  
 “ more, among whom there are six Indian Preachers.  
 “ Mr. *Treat*, Minister of *Eastham*, preaching to  
 “ them often in their own Language. At *Nantucket*  
 “ Island is another Indian Church, the Minister of  
 “ which is an Indian Convert.

C. M. 1. 3.  
p. 195.

“ At *Martha's Vineyard* is the two most famous  
 “ Churches of Indian Christians; the Ministers be-  
 “ ing *John Hiacoomes*, the Son of the former *Hiacoo-*  
 “ *mes*, and *John Tockinosh*, a converted Indian. They  
 “ meet twice every Sunday; the Pastor prays *extem-*  
 “ *por* with them, then they sing Psalms, then the  
 “ Minister expounds a Chapter in the Bible, gathers  
 “ Doctrines from it, proves them by Scriptures and  
 “ Reasons, and infers Uses as the English Presbyterian  
 “ Ministers do, by whom they were taught. They have  
 “ no Holidays, but Fast-days. The Barbarians being  
 “ ignorant of the true God, had no word to express  
 “ him; wherefore in their Prayers and Sermons they  
 “ use English Words and Terms, as *Jehovah*, or  
 “ God, or Lord. They teach their Children *Perkins's*  
 “ and the Assembly's Catechism.

There are four and twenty Churches and Assemblies  
 of Indian Christians in *New-England*, as many Indian  
 Pastors, and four English, who preach in the Indian *Indian Stu-*  
 Tongue; They have Apartments at *Harvard* Col- *dents.*

lege for the Indian Students, of which there are, or were lately between 20 and 30.

lib. 6. p.  
60.

At *Nantucket* Island there were 500 Indian Christians about 10 years ago, who were wholly under the English Government, having 3 distinct Courts, with Power to hear and determine all Causes below 400 *l.* in value. They choose their own Magistrates, and appeal from them to the English. They are ambitious of knowing and following the English Laws, and keep Records as the English do. They put their Children to learn to write and read.

Within the Liberties of *Eastham* there were 505 Christian Indians 12 years ago, who had four Indian Pastors, as many School-masters, and six Justices of the Peace. Their Deportment, Converse and Garb, are more Manly and decent than any other Indians. 214 Converts were about *Sandwich*: At the same time a new Church of 'em was erected at *Albany*, in the Province of *New-York*.

Christiani-  
ty oppos'd  
by their  
Kings.

Their Kings and Powaws oppos'd the Progress of Christianity to the utmost of their power, but they durst not make many Martyrs for fear of the English, to whom the Christian Indians in all times of Difficulty prov'd very faithful.

The French  
misrepre-  
sent  
the English  
Religion.  
C. M.  
l. 3. p. 201.

Of these Indians there are about 15 or 1600 in *Martha's Vineyard*, the whole Island being Christian; and in all, 'tis computed, that the Number of Indian Converts and their Children may amount to about 4000; of whom *Japhet*, the Indian Pastor at *Martha's Vineyard*, is a very famous Person for making Converts, tho' not as the French do at *Canada*, by preaching up Heaven as a sort of Mahometan or Earthly Paradise, and Hell as an horrible kind of a Dwelling, accommodating both to the Pleasure and Terror of their Senses. They tell the *Hurons* that the English murder'd our Saviour, and endeavour to make Converts for their own Interest, more than the Good of the Indians. Thus the Catholick Indians to the Eastward of *New-England* have not got much by changing their Religion.

As to the English Inhabitants of this Colony, who they were that went first thither, we shall best be inform'd of by Persons who liv'd in those days. The Lord *Digby*, a famous Confessor for the Cause of King

*Charles*

Charles I. said in Parliament, *That Men of the best Conscience were ready to fly into the Wilderness for Religion*; and Sir Benjamin Rudyard, *That a great multitude of the King's Subjects striving to hold Communion with us, but seeing how far we were gone, and fearing how much farther we wou'd go, were forc'd to fly the Land, very many into savage Wildernesses, because the Land wou'd not hear them. Do not they that cause these things cast a Reproach on the Government.*

But tho 'tis certain, many of those Gentleman and Ministers who first went thither, were driven out of *First Eng-England* by persecuting Rulers of *high-flown Principles*, *lish Inhabi-* yet they were not all of them of such nice Conscien-*zants.* ces; for when a Minister, soon after their Settlement there, preaching to his Congregation, *Urg'd them to approve themselves a Religious People, by endeavouring to propagate the Gospel, or otherwise they wou'd contradict the main end of Planting.* One of the Assembly cry'd out, *Sir you are mistaken, Our main end was to catch Fish.* However, it appears by their History they were very busie in settling Churches, summoning Synods, and establishing a Church there, which had the Form of Godliness; and it does not become us to judge whether it was without the Power.

The first Churches were *Independents* or *Congregational*; several *Presbyterian* Ministers coming over afterwards, there happen'd frequent Jars and Disputes *Schisms* among them, till at last they sign'd Articles of A-*there.* greement as to Matters of Discipline. They have had several Schisms, as they term them, among them, as the *Hierarchal Church* at *Weymouth*, the *Anabaptists* at *Swansey* and *Boston*, Mr. *Roger Williams's*, who preach'd up the Invalidity of King *Charles's* Patent, and against the Sin of taking the *Indians* Lands from them, a most pernicious Doctrine, for which he was banish'd.

The *Antinomian* and *Familistical* Tenets were broach'd, and a dreadful Confusion in Church-Affairs threaten'd to ruin the Infant Colony, but they got over all Difficulties, and settl'd their Church in some sort of Order, drawing up Articles of Worship and Discipline; which being more tedious than edifying, we shall not set down here, but refer the Reader, if he has any Curiosity to know them, to *Cotton Mather's History of New-England.*

The *Independents* and *Presbyterians* having agreed on a *Comprehension*, are the *Establish'd Church*, and the *Church of England*, *Anabaptists* and *Quakers* the *Tollerated Dissenters*. Their *Synods* have reserv'd to themselves so much Power, that the Government has little left it in *Ecclesiastical Cases*, and the Ministers of every Town are like so many Governours within their *Precincts*.

Civil Government.

The Civil Government was at first by Governours, Deputy Governours, and Major Generals, chosen by the *General Court*, who were the Deputies of the Towns, like our *Burgeses* in Parliament; but now those Officers are commission'd by the King. As to their Power, and that of the General and Inferiour Courts, their ways of raising Taxes, and making Laws, we refer the Reader to the *Laws of New-England*, in the *Abridgment* so often cited in this Treatise.

Their Strength.

The Strength of these three confederate Colonies consists in the number of their Militia and Inhabitants; it being computed; that in all *New-England* there are above 160000 Souls, and of them 50000 fighting Men; whereas the Indians, were they collected into one Body, cou'd not make an Army of 10000 Men; but as they are divided into above 20 several Kingdoms, differing in Language, Manners and Interests, 'tis impossible for them to enter into such a Confederacy, as to be able to do the English any considerable Damage; and the latter, when they please, can dispossess them of the small Territories they enjoy in their Neighbourhood; but either thinking it their Interest that they shou'd live as they do, to furnish them with *Peltry*, and help to till the Ground, or that 'tis an Injustice to turn the right Owners out of their Possessions, or being afraid that the French, jealous of the Growth of the English Empire in *America*, wou'd join with them, they let them alone, and are in no great danger of receiving much Disturbance by them.

That of the Indians.

The way of Living of the Inhabitants.

The People of *New-England*, in their way of Living, Manners and Appearance, resemble their Brethren in *Old-England*, excepting that they are more formal, precise, morose, and not so sincere as the English Dissenters. They are very severe in their

Laws

Laws against all sorts of Immorality, and so much, as if they thought Pleasure cou'd not be innocent; but in the Execution of those Laws, there is suitable Tenderness had to the Infirmities of Humane Nature.

The most commendable thing among them, is their Academy, and their Schools, every Township of 50 Families being oblig'd to have a School, to teach to write and read; and every Town of 100 Families, to have a Grammar-School; the Master of which, must be qualify'd to fit his Scholars for the *University*, which they began to establish as soon as they were well settl'd in the Country.

In the year 1630. the *General Court* advanc'd 400 *l.* towards building a College at *Newton* in *Middlesex*, about 7 or 8 Miles from *Boston*; and the Town on the founding the College there had its Name chang'd to *Cambridge*; but the small Sum of 400 *l.* would not have gone far in such a Design, had not Mr. *John Harvard*, Minister of *Charles Town* near *Boston*, dy'd soon after, and left almost 800 *l.* to carry on the Work, as we have already mention'd. Then the other Colonies gave some small Contributions towards it; and private Persons finding there was a Probability of succeeding in it, contributed much more than whole Colonies.

Cambridge University founded.

The College being built and endow'd, was in honour of their great Benefactor Mr. *Harvard*, call'd *Harvard College*; and Mr. *Nathaniel Eaton* was chosen President: He was a Man of Learning, but so cruel in his Nature, and lewd in his Morals, that he was expell'd the University, and excommunicated. Upon which he went to *Virginia*, and from thence to *England*; where he conform'd to the Church of *England*, was made Minister of *Biddisford* in *Devonshire*, after the Restoration became a violent Persecutor of Non-conformists, continu'd his wicked Courses, and dy'd in Jail for Debt.

Harvard College. Mr. Nath. Eaton President.

In the year 1640. The Magistrates and Ministers chose Mr. *Henry Dunstar* to be President of the College, to which the *General Court* granted a *Charter*, and made it a Corporation, consisting of a President, 2 Fellows and a Treasurer. The Governour, Deputy Governour, and the Magistrates of the Colony being

1640. Mr. Henry Dunstar Pres.

*The College* being appointed to be the Visitors. The Income of *Revenue*. *Charlton* Ferry was settl'd upon it, and its Revenues in a little time were sufficient to maintain the Expence, with a very small Assistance from the Treasury of the Colony.

'Tis observable that *Sir George Downing*, who was so often employ'd by the *Rump*, and afterwards by King *Charles II.* as their Envoy Extraordinary in *Holland*, was the second Person that was enter'd a Student in this College: *Sir Henry Mildmay* sent his Son *William Mildmay*, Esq; the Elder Brother of *Henry Mildmay* Esq; of *Sharnford* in *Hampshire*, to study here, as did *William Stoughton* Esq; late Lieutenant Governour of the Colony, and Founder of *Stoughton-Hall* in this University, *Joseph Dudley* Esq; the present Governour, and many other Gentlemen of the Province, who are of principal Note in this History.

*Mr. Dunstar* was a Person very well skill'd in the *Oriental* Tongues, and a Man of as much good Learning as ever visited the *American* Shore; but inclining to the *Baptist* Opinion: The rigid *Presbyterian* and *Independent* Party got him turn'd out, after he had been serviceable to them in helping their Ministers to translate *David's* Psalms.

'Tis true 'tis a very mean Performance, and unworthy the Spirit and Harmony of that Divine Poet, but Musick and Eloquence are not to be expected in *New-England*; and till they throw off that wretched Affectation which we commonly call *Cant*, and which is of no manner of use, unless to deceive Fools, and amuse Hypocrites, we cannot see what great use their Academy will ever be to them, for 'tis the main end of Learning to please and instruct; and how formal Nonsense and miserable Jargon, tho' 'tis larded with hundreds of learn'd Quotations, can have any Effect on a reasonable Mind, is beyond Reason to comprehend.

The *History of New-England* written by *Cotton Mather*, a Man of Fame in his Country, as appears by the barbarous Rhimes before it in Praise of the Author, is a sufficient Proof, that a Man may have read hundreds of Latine Authors, and be qualify'd to construe them, may have spent his Youth in a College, and be bred up in Letters, yet have neither Judgment



ment to know how to make a Discourse perspicuous, nor Eloquence to express his Sentiments so that they may please and persuade, the easiest way to Conviction; for of all the Books that ever came from the Press with the venerable Title of a History, 'tis impossible to shew one that is so confus'd in the Form, so trivial in the Matter, and so faulty in the Expression, so cramm'd with Puns, Anagrams, Acrosticks, Miracles and Prodigies, that it rather resembles School Boys Exercises Forty Years ago, and *Romish* Legends, than the Collections of an Historian bred up in a Protestant Academy.

The Reader will excuse this Digression, which hardly can be call'd so properly, it serving to give an Idea of the use the *New-England* Men make of their University, and to shew how far an Humour or Affectation may prevail to the Prejudice of the most useful and reasonable things.

That History of *Cotton Mather's* is enough to give one a Surfeit of Letters, if all the Schools in the World were like *Harvard-College*; for that the Eloquence and Elegance of all that School is the same with the Historians, will appear from his Father *Inc. Mather's* Letter to the Church of *Cambridge*, and C. M. p. a thousand Quotations of other *New-England* Authors 159. scatter'd up and down in the History.

This is not said to reflect on the Design of their University, but if possible to make them see their Error in the Execution of it, that they may leave off mean Cant, which was in Fashion a hundred years ago, add the Purity of Language to that of Doctrine, and let the Scoffers see that Religion needs no little Shifts and Arts to support its self, and that the Force and Harmony of the Divine Truths are never so convincing and moving on reasonable Souls, as when they are express'd in elegant and apt Phrases, free from the Poverty and Tautology of the present *New-England* Diction; let their own Dr. *Bates* instruct them better in his best Pieces, if they think themselves too pious to learn of our *Tillotson* and *Calamy*.

There was a Press set up at *Cambridge*, and the Psalms first Printed there, about the time of Mr. *Dunstar's* being elected President.

David's  
Psalms  
translated  
and printed  
in New-  
This England.

This Version, tho' tis abominable as to the Meter, has the Commendation of keeping closer to the Text than any. The Excuse the Translators gave for their bad Verses, *That God's Altars need not our Praises*, is of the same strain with their other Arguments, as if they had affected to be flat and rough, and cou'd have done better, or that we ought not to sing the Creator's Praise in our best Language and sweetest Melody, according to the Example of the Holy Psalmist whom they pretended to translate. If they wanted a faithful Translation, why did they not do it in Prose; for among all their Gifts, they might with a little Modesty have seen that they were not endow'd with that of Poesy.

In Mr. *Dunstar's* time the Library was set up at *Harvard College*, and several Gentlemen of *Old and New-England* contributed to it, as *Sir Kenelm Digby*, *Sir John Maynard*, *Mr. Baxter*, *Mr. Hill*, and *Mr. Gale*: And many others became Benefactors to the College Revenues, as *Alderman Ashhurst*, *Sir Richard Saltonstall*, *Edward Hopkins*, Esq; and the Most Reverend Arch-Bp. *Usher*.

The Students began to take Degrees of Batchelour and Master of Arts; but tho' the College have a Right to bestow that of Doctor, they never exercis'd it, except in the Case of the President *Mr. Increase Mather*, as will be shewn in its due place. *Mr. Dunstar* having been 14 Years their President, notwithstanding all his Learning and Merit, was expell'd by his Brother Non-conformists, for not conforming with them in all things; and *Mr. Charles Chauncy* (born in *Hartfordshire*) Minister of *Sciute*, was elected President in his place.

He had been *Greek Professor* at *Cambridge* in *England*, was skill'd in the *Oriental Languages*; and, says my Author, the Historian so often quoted, wrote a *Witty Latin Poem* on the Death of *Queen Anne*, Wife to *King James I.* Printed in the *Lachryma Cantabrigiensis*. He was intimately acquainted with *Dr. Usher*, and a Man of good Sense and Learning according to the Times, but was forc'd to retire to *New-England* for not coming up to *Bp. Laud's* Heights in Matters of Ceremony.

He govern'd *Harvard* College with Piety, Care and Judgment seventeen Years, and then dying, was succeeded by Dr. *Leonard Hoar*, the first President who had his Education in the same College. After which he travel'd to *England*, and commenc'd Doctor of Physick in *Cambridge*. He marry'd the *Ld. Listes's* Daughter, and returning with her to *New-England*, was elected President of the College; but some great Men in the Country taking a disgust to him, the Scholars, countenanc'd by those Gentlemen, were very disobedient, and made him live such an uneasy Life, that after he had been President four Years he resign'd his Office.

1671.  
Dr. Leo.  
Hoar Pres.

While he govern'd the College there was a new Subscription taken to enlarge it, and near 200 *l.* subscrib'd and paid, of which *Sir Thomas Temple* gave 100 *l.* With this Money there were so many Edifices built, that it look'd like a new College, which still went by the Name of the Old. Several Indians were admitted in the time of his Predecessor, and in his own Presidency. The first who took his Batchelours Degree was *Mr. Caleb Cheeschaumuk*: Since that, others have proceeded as far; and many Indians educated here, are Preachers to Indian Churches.

*Mr. Urian Oakes*, Minister of the Town of *Cambridge*, was chosen to succeed *Dr. Hoar*. He was born in *Old-England*, but brought over young to *New-England*, and educated in *Harvard* College, where he took his Batchelour and Master's Degree. This Man, excepting that he was very religious after the way of the Country, does not seem to have had any extraordinary Qualities worthy the Station to which he was advanc'd, and in which he liv'd six years.

1675.  
Mr. Urian  
Oaks Pres.

On his Death *Mr. Increase Mather*, one of the Ministers of *Boston*, was elected President, but his Congregation refusing to part with him he declin'd it; and *Mr. John Rogers* was chosen into that Place: His Father came to *New-England* when he was about 6 Years old; he ow'd what Learning he had to *Harvard* College, and is commended for abundance of good Nature.

1682.  
Mr. John  
Rogers  
Pres.

In his time the College was like to have been burnt to the Ground, but was prevented by his accidental shortening

tening

tening his Prayer; it being the Custom of the President of the College to pray in the Publick Hall with the Scholars. Mr. Rogers, like the rest of his Brethren, us'd to be somewhat long; but on the Day that the College took Fire he was shorter than ordinary, and the Scholar in whose Chamber it was, return'd time enough to have it put out.

1684.  
Mr. Inc.  
Mather  
Presf.

He dy'd after he had enjoy'd his Office two Years, and the present Rector Mr. *Increase Mather*, was chosen in his Place, to which he was now promoted with the Consent of his Congregation. This Man was the first President who was born in *New-England*, whither his Father Mr. *Richard Mather* was driven by Persecution in 1635. His Son is the Author of the *New-England History*; and the Father, when he was in *England* to sollicite the Affairs of the Country as their Agent, preach'd often in the Dissenters Meetings; his Stile being more affected and quaint than those of the *Non-conformist* Teachers who are most famous in that way, and wou'd confirm all that has been of the *Harvard* Eloquence, if any of his Sermons had been Printed.

On the taking of the Charter from this Colony, Col. *Dudley*, whom the King had made President of *New-England*, chang'd Mr. *Mather's* Title of President into that of Rector.

Mr. Leve-  
ret and  
Mr. Brat-  
tle.

1692.

While Mr. *Mather* was in *England*, Mr. *Leveret* and Mr. *Brattle*, two of the Fellows, govern'd the College; and when he return'd with the New Charter granted by King *William* and Queen *Mary*, the University had a New Charter granted them also by the Government of *New-England*.

Stough-  
ton Hall.

After this the Academy began to thrive, *Harvard* College or Colleges being too little for the Students, Mr. *Stoughton* built a New one, with more Expence than the Benefactor of *Harvard* was at; it is from him call'd *Stoughton Hall*, and in both of them there are near 400 Students English and Indians.

This University has produc'd several Writers, who have publish'd Sermons and other Discourses in *New-England* and *Old-England*, but they have had no great Currency or Reputation, tho it must be confess'd that some of the Authors seem to be what is generally understood by the Phrase *Good Schollars*; and we know no rea-  
son

son why they shou'd not be so, having the same Advantages of Books and Brains, as other Men in other Universities; but 'tis in Siile, as in Painting, ev'ry Nation has a Manner, by which 'tis known, and which will be more or less Polite, according to the Genius of the People.

In return for the Services Mr. Inc. Mather had done the Country and College by his Agency in England, the latter presented him with a Diploma, for a Doctor's Degree, Sign'd by the Fellows, with the University-Seal annex'd to it. The Power they had to do it appears by the Words of the Diploma,

Mr. Inc. Mather made a Doctor of Divinity.

*Quum gradus Academicas, tam in Theologia quam in Philosophia, pro more Academicarum in Anglia, conferendi Potestas, ab amplissimo Gubernatore, & a summa Massachusettensis Provincia Curia, secundum Sereniss. Regis ac Reginae Gulielmi & Mariae, illis concessum Diploma sit ad nobis commiss. & quoniam vir clarissimus, &c.*

Notwithstanding that the Charter granted by King William and Queen Mary had impower'd the Governour and General Court of Massachuset-Colony to grant a Charter to the College, with Power of conferring Doctor's Degrees, as is exprest in the Diploma; yet Mr. Mather himself never made use of the Title, nor the University before nor since thought fit to bestow it on any other Man. We shall conclude this Account of New England, and its University, with a List of all the Presidents and Fellows from the Foundation of Harvard College to the year, 1698.

A List of the Presidents and Fellows of Harvard College.

Mr. Nath. Eaton, President, expell'd.	1630.
Mr. Henry Dunstar, President, turn'd out.	1640.
Mr. Charles Chauncy, President.	1654.
Dr. Leonard Hoar, President, resign'd.	1671.
Mr. Urian Oaks, President.	1675.
Mr. John Rogers, President.	1681.
Dr. Inc. Mather, President and Rector.	1684.

Years in which they took their Batchelors Degree.

1643.	Mr. Samuel Mather,	} Fellows.
	Mr. Samuel Danforth,	
1647.	Mr. Jonathan Mitchel,	} Fellows.
	Mr. Con. Star,	
1649.	Mr. Samuel Eaton,	} Fellows.
	Mr. Urian Oaks,	
	Mr. John Collins,	
1651.	Mr. Michael Wigglesworth,	} Fellows.
	Mr. Thomas Dudley,	
	Mr. Thomas Shepherd,	} Fellows.
	Mr. Samuel Nowell,	
1653.	Mr. Samuel Hooker,	
	Mr. Samuel Bradstreet,	
	Mr. Joshua Moody,	
1655.	Mr. Nehemiah Ambrose,	} Fellow.
	Mr. Gershom Bulkley,	
1656.	Mr. Increase Mather,	} Fellows.
	Mr. Thomas Graves,	
1657.	Mr. Zachariah Symms,	} Fellows.
	Mr. Zachariah Bregden,	
1658.	Mr. Samuel Shepherd,	Fellow.
1659.	Mr. Samuel Willard,	Fellow.
	Mr. Samuel Elliot,	} Fellows.
1660.	Mr. Peter Bulkley,	
1661.	Mr. Nathaniel Chauncey,	} Fellows.
	Mr. Joseph Whiting,	
1662.	Mr. Solomon Stoddard,	Fellow.
1664.	Mr. Alexander Nowell,	} Fellows.
	Mr. Joseph Pincho,	
1666.	Mr. Joseph Brown,	} Fellows.
	Mr. John Richardson,	
1667.	Mr. Nehemiah Hobart,	Fellow.
1669.	Mr. Daniel Gookin,	Fellow.
1670.	Mr. Ammis Ru-Corbet,	Fellow.
	Mr. Isaac Foster,	} Fellows.
	Mr. Samuel Sevall,	
1671.	Mr. Samuel Danforth,	
	Mr. Peter Thacker,	
	Mr. Samuel Andrew,	} Fellows.
1675.	Mr. Nathaniel Gookin,	

Mr. John Danforth, Fellow.		1677.
Mr. John Cotton,	} Fellows.	1678.
Mr. Cotton Mather,		
Mr. John Leveret,	} Fellows, Vice Presi-	1680.
Mr. William Brattle,		
Mr. Samuel Mitchel, Fellow.		1681.
Mr. Neh. Walter, Fellow.		1684.
Mr. John White, Fellow.		1685.
Mr. Paul Dudley,	} Fellows.	1690.
Mr. Benj. Wadsworth,		
Mr. Ebenezer Pemberton, Fellow.		1691.
Mr. Jabez Fitch, Fellow.		1694.
Mr. James Allen,	} Fellows.	
Mr. Charles Morton,		

The two last were bred in *England*, and Mr. *Morton* taught Academical Learning at *Newington*, before he was forc'd to fly to *New-England*, by the Persecution in the late Reigns.

'Twas impossible to publish a Work of this Nature with that Expedition as was expected, the Author being oblig'd to stop longer for Informations from *America* than he at first imagin'd; by which means this Treatise has remain'd unpublish'd till the present Year, 1708.

We left Colonel *Dudley* in Possession of the Government; and he began the Exercise of his Power with vigorously entering into the War with *France* on that side: He fitted out 4 Sloops, put 200 Men aboard, and order'd them to cruise on the *French Coast*; from whom they took 9 Vessels; and at the same time, the *New-England Privateers*, who have been very successful, took 3 Ships bound for *Canada*. Sometime before this *Constantine Phips*, Esq; and *Wil. Vaughan*, Esq; presented a very loyal Address, to congratulate Her Majesty's Accession to the Throne, in the Name of the Province of *New-Hampshire*.

There has happen'd no material Events since relating to this Colony; the same Governour continues in his Post, and we should have added a List of the Council of *Massachusetts*; but the People, by Virtue of their Charter, choosing the Members themselves, we could not procure their Names, which are not regularly transmitted to *England*. It seems the Province of *East*

or *New Hampshire*, which we have spoken of, deliver'd up their Rights entirely into the Hands of the King; who by the new Charter that was granted to it, reserv'd to the Crown the Power of naming the Council. Tho' *New Hampshire* is incorporated with the Government of *New-England*, yet the Counsellors are not elected by the Inhabitants, as those of *Massachusetts*, but nam'd by the Government in *England*. Being at present,

Colonel *Joseph Dudley*, Governour.

*John Usher*, Esq; Lieut. Governour.

*Wil. Partridge*, Esq;

*Peter Coffin*, Esq;

*Robert Elliot*, Esq;

*John Gearish*, Esq;

*Wil. Vaughan*, Esq;

*Sam. Penhallow*, Esq;

*John Plaisted*, Esq;

*Richard Waldron*, Esq;

*Winthrop Hilton*, Esq;

*Joseph Smith*, Esq;

} Counsellors.



---

T H E  
H I S T O R Y  
O F  
N E W - Y O R K :

C O N T A I N I N G

An Account of its Discovery, Settlement,  
Revolution, and all other Events, to this  
Time ; Of the Climate, Soil, Trade,  
Inhabitants, *English* and *Indians*.

**T**HIS Country was at first call'd *Nova Belgia*; and the *Dutch*, who pretended to the Propriety of it, included *Martha's Vineyard*, and *Elizabeth-Island*: The former of which they call'd *Henry Christian's Island*; and the latter, *Adrian Block's*, from the Name of two Masters of Ships, who, they say, discover'd them: But it does not appear they had any Right to those Isles, or indeed to the *Continent* on *Hudson's River*, till they bought it of Captain *Hudson*, who discover'd it, and sold it to them about the Year 1608. which Sale being without the King's Licence, was excepted against by the *English*; but there were no Attempts made by them to settle here themselves, or hinder the *Hollanders*.

The *English*, who sail'd from *Holland* to the *West-Indies*, and settled *Plimouth-Colony*, intended to take Possession of the Territories lying on the Coast of the Bay form'd by *Newhaven Colony*, and *Long-Island*; but the Master of the Ship being a *Dutchman*, was brib'd by some of his Countrymen to betray them, and land them further *Eastward*; which he did accordingly, and prevented their settling in *Nova Belgia*; where the *Hollanders* had begun to plant, but had been driven thence by Sir *Samuel Argall*, Governour of *Virginia*. They then apply'd themselves to King *James I.* who gave them leave to build some Cottages, for the Convenience of their Ships touching there for fresh Water and Provisions, in their Voyage to *Brazil*. Under this Pretence, they incroach'd by little and little, so much, that they built Towns, fortify'd them, planted, and became a flourishing Settlement.

The Dutch  
Settlement

They built the City of *New Amsterdam*, in an Isle call'd *Manhattan*, at the Mouth of *Hudson's River*; to which they gave the Name of the *Great River*; and the Bay to the East of it, they call'd by that of *Nassau*. They built a Fort about 80 Miles up the River, which they nam'd *Orange Fort*; and from thence us'd to drive a profitable Trade with the *Indians*, who came over Land as far as from *Quebec*, to deal with them. *Henry Christian*, and after him, *Jacob Elkin*, were the first *Dutch* Governours here, for the *West-India Company* in *Holland*; to whom the States General had granted this Country.

Its Bounds.

The first Bounds of *New-York*, were *Maryland* on the *South*; the Main Land, as far as could be discover'd, *Westward*; the *Great River* of *Canada*, *Northward*; and *New-England*, *Eastward*. It now is reduc'd into a much narrower Compass; for King *Charles II.* having given this Tract of Land to the Duke of *York*, by a Charter, dated the 12th of *March*, 1664. the Duke made a Grant of part of it to Under-Proprietors, who call'd it *East* and *West-Jersey*; which are now its Limits in the *West* and *South*: On the *North*, 'tis bounded by *Long-Island*; and on the *East* by *New-England*: *Hudson's River* divides it from the *Jerseys*; and a Line drawn between *Rye* and *Greenwich*, separates it from *New-England*;

So

So that the whole Province on the *Continent* is not above 20 Miles over, but 'tis 120 in Length; and what was properly call'd *Nova Belgia*: It lies between 40 and a half, to 42 Degrees, 50 Minutes, Northern Latitude. The Climate is more temperate than that of *New-England*, and the Soil so fruitful, that one Bushel of *English* Wheat has produc'd a Hundred, which was a fair Temptation for the *English* to desire it. The Climate and Soil.

Accordingly in the Beginning of the first *Dutch* Wars after the *Restoration*, King *Charles* the II<sup>d</sup>, who had bestow'd it on his Brother, sent a Squadron of Men of War, and some Land-Forces, under the Command of Sir *Robert Car*, to recover it. Sir *Robert* arriv'd there in the latter End of the Year 1664. landed 3000 Men upon *Manhattan* Island, and march'd directly to *New-Amsterdam*. The Governour of the Town was an old Soldier, and had lost a Leg in the Service of the *States*; but being surpriz'd at the unexpected Attack of a formidable Enemy, and not knowing the certain Numbers of the *English*, he was prevail'd upon by the Inhabitants to surrender. Sir *Robert Car*, by Order from the King, had proclaim'd, that all who submitted to the Crown of *England*, should be receiv'd into his Protection; and the Citizens of *New-Amsterdam* fearing to be plunder'd, and outed of their Possessions, if they resisted, perswaded the Governour to deliver up the Town; which they could not have defended against the Besiegers, if they had brought their Artillery to bear: And thus this Place fell into the Hands of the *English*! 'Twas handsomely built by the *Dutch*, of Brick and Stone, cover'd with red and black Tile; and the Land being high, it affords an agreeable Prospect to the Spectators at a Distance. Above half the *Dutch* Inhabitants remain'd, and took an Oath of Fidelity to the King of *England*. Those that remov'd, had Liberty to carry off their Effects, and their Places were soon supply'd by *English*. There are now above 800 Houses, the meanest worth 100 *l.* in this City, which for the Strength and Pleasantness of its Situation, may compare with any in the World. 'Tis govern'd by a Mayor, Recorder, Alderman, and Sheriff, Common Council, Constables, and other inferior Officers, in

The Climate and Soil.

The English reduce it.

1664.

The Town of New-York.

Imitation of the Government of the Corporations in England. It has but one Parish Church, but that is large and beautiful; and the Minister has 100*l.* a Year settled on him. The Council-House is a fair Edifice. *James-Fort* is a strong, regular Fortification, and commands the River. Besides this, it has a Wall to the Land, mounted with Ordnance, and seems to defy the Power of *French* or *Indians*. There is a Printing-Press in this Town. The Island it stands in, is 14 Miles long, but is not of a proportionable Breadth. It was inhabited by a Nation call'd the *Manhattes*, who were more fierce and barbarous than the other *Indians*.

These the *Hollanders* dispossessing, had an Appearance of Right to succeed them; but Arms decided the Dispute much more to the Advantage of the *English*; who 13 Days after the Surrender of *New-Amsterdam*, to which City was now given the Name of *New-York*, march'd under Colonel *Nicholls*, up the Country to *Orange Fort*, which stood on *Hudson's* River, 5 Miles below where the Eastern Branch parts from the Southern, and runs up almost to the Lake of the *Iroquois*, 200 Miles within Land. This Fort Colonel *Nicholls* easily reduc'd, and call'd it *New Albany*, the Duke of *York's* *Scotch* Title. Here is always a Garrison of two Companies of Soldiers.

About 50 Miles above *New-York* is *Kingston*, a very pretty Town, containing 200 Families, *English* and *Dutch*. 'Tis well-built, and popular for its Bigness.

Twenty Miles above *Albany*, is *Schenectada*, a Town seated in one of the finest Vales in the World, not unlike the pleasant Valley, which the *Trent* waters, in *Nottinghamshire*, to which it has been often compar'd. Here are near 100 Houses. The Inhabitants are part *English*, and part *Dutch*. This Place was destroy'd in the beginning of the late War with *France*, by the *French Indians*, who massacred the People, sparing neither Age nor Sex; since which there's a Fort built to prevent a Surprize.

Indian Nations.

Between this Fort and *New-York* several *Indian* Nations dwelt; as the *Mackentowoni*, the *Pachami*, the *Wooran*, the *Mankikam*, and next them, the *Maquas*, Westward of *Fort Orange*. The Country all along is very fruitful. The *Indians*, who are not

very

very industrious, possess it all, except *Sopors-Kill*, on the Western Shoar of *Hudson's River*. And the *Dutch* had no Plantations there, as the *English* have since, tho the Inland Country is still thin of Settlements.

On the Coasts is the County of *West-Chester*, in which are the Towns and Parishes of *West and East-Chester, Yonkers, De Cham*, the Parish of *Rye, Stonebrook, Munerenock and Bedford*. The County Town and Parish of *Richmond*. Sir *Robert Car* having reduc'd all on the *East Side* of *Hudson's River*, took in the Town and Fort of *Arasapha* and *Delaware-Castle*, on the *West Side*, without losing a Man. *Staten Island*, at the Mouth of *Raritan River*, and *Long Island*, follow'd the Fate of the other Towns. Thus the *English* oblig'd the *Dutch* to submit every where to them. Col. *Nicholls* was appointed Governour of the Province of *New-York*, and he concluded a League between the Inhabitants and the *Indians*. Colonel Nicholls Governor.

Before we enter further into the History of this Colony, 'twill be requisite to say something of *Long Island*, which is part of the Settlement. 'Tis 100 Miles long, but 12 broad, and was inhabited by the *English*, before Sir *Robert Car* came thither; for King *James* having made a Grant of it to *William Alexander*, Earl of *Sterling*, Proprietor of *New-Scotland*, the Inhabitants of *Lyn* in *New-England*, finding themselves streighten'd in Ground, resolv'd to remove thither by Consent of the Lord *Sterling*; with whose Agents they made an Agreement, for a Part of the Island to plant and settle in. They then went thither, about 100 Families in all, with Mr. *Pierston* their Minister, and began to plant at the *West End* of the Island; but the *Dutch* of *New Amsterdam* gave them such Disturbance, that they deserted their first Plantation, and settled at the *East End*, entering into an Ecclesiastical and Civil Combination, for the Government of their little Colony. They built a Town, and call'd it *Southampton*; where it remains still, and is part of the Province of *New-York*, being annex'd to it when the *English* recover'd the Dominion of this Island, and the adjacent Continent. Out of *Southampton* the Parish of *Bridge-Hampton* was lately taken. The *West End* of the Island is now *Queens County* in this Province.

The

The Town and Parish of *Jamaica*, the Town and Parish of *Hempsted*, *Constable Town*, *Utrecht*, and others of less Note, belong to *Queens County*.

The whole Island is furnish'd with convenient Harbours; and off the Coast, particularly the *Eastern*, lie several Islands, but none of them inhabited. *Staten Island*, at the West End, is 10 Miles long, and 5 or 6 over. The chief Plantations upon it are *Billops*, at the *South End*; and *Palmers* at the *North*: On the *Eastern Point* is *Dover*, another small Settlement.

In *Long Island* there were also some *French* Inhabitants; but now they are either remov'd, or subject to the *English* Government. The *Dutch* made as good Earthen Ware here as they do at *Delft*; and some write; that it did not fall short of *China*; but the *English* do not come up to them in that Manufacture.

*The Trade.* The Trade driven by them, is Furs, Skins, Tobacco, as good as that of *Maryland*; Horses, Beef, Pork, Oil, Pease, Wheat, and all sorts of *English* Grain, which they sow, and have very good Increase of it. All other Fruits and Herbs thrive there, together with Flax, Hemp, Pumkins, Melons, &c. The Soil being most of it very good. Towards the Middle of the Island lies a Plain 16 Miles long, and four broad; where there grows very fine Grass, which makes extraordinary good Hay, and is excellent Pasture for Sheep or other Cattel. There is no manner of Rubbish, Stick or Stone to be found upon it; and the Place is so fit for Races, that twice a Year the best Horses in the Island are brought thither to try their Speed, and the Prize is a Silver Cup to the swiftest.

There are two or three other small Plains of about a Mile square, which are very beneficial to the neighbouring Towns..

On the South Side of *Long Island*, in the Winter lie Store of *Whales* and *Grampusses*, which the Inhabitants catch in their small Boats, and drive a considerable Trade with the Oil. An infinite Number of *Seals* lie all the Winter on some broken Marshes, Beaches and Bars of Sands. They make an excellent Oil, and wou'd be very advantagious to the People of the Country, if they fell into an easier way of coming at them.

The *English*, and others, on the Continent of *New-York*, deal with the *Indians* for the Skins of Elks, Deer, Bears, Beavers, Otters, Raccoons, and other rich Furs; and in Summer are supply'd by them, with Venison, Fish and Fowl very cheap. Their other Trade is to *Barbadoes* and the *Sugar* Islands, with Horses, Beef and Pork, for which they receive, in Return, Sugar, Melasses, Rum, &c. They also have a very profitable Commerce from *New-York* to *Madera* and the *Azores*, with Pipe Staves and Fish, for which they load their Ships back with Wine and Brandy; and there is scarce a more advantageous Trade in all the *English* Commerce. I have known a small Ship employ'd in this Voyage, backward and forward from *New-York* to *Madera*, clear the Owners above 3000 *l.* in less than two Years; when the first Adventure was not a sixth Part of the Neat Proceed of the Voyage.

The Productions of the Soil of this Country are the same with that of *New England*. It has nothing peculiar to it self, and we shall therefore refer the Reader to that *History* concerning this Article. The Soil is richer, and the Climate milder; lying 2 or 3 Degrees more to the South; but 'tis here also colder in Winter, and hotter in Summer, than in the European Countries of the same Latitude. Soil.

The Animals, Beasts, Birds, Fish and Fowl, the creeping Virmin and Insects, are the same as those in *New England*, and the Savages so little different, that 'tis needless to repeat the Description of them, but because every Nation of the *Indians* vary in some-thing or other; we shall give a short Account of those of *New-York*. Animals.

That their Language is as barbarous as that of the *New England* Indians will appear by the following Examples, as,

The Neck, *Nequoykangen*,

A Lyon, *Synquoumackergh*, &c. And of this dreadful Speech, there are several Dialects, according to the Difference of the Kingdoms. As for the Persons of these *Indians*, they are generally handsome and well limb'd. By dying or painting their Skin, they spoil their Complexions, which are all Tawny. Their Hair is black. They are bold and dextrous in handling

ling their Bows and Arrows, which are their chief Arms. They keep a friendly Correspondence with the *English*, whom *Pere Hennepin*, owns they love much better than the *French*; and never gave them any such Disturbance, as our Countrymen have met with in *New England* and *Virginia*. They are apt to learn all things, and willing to be instructed in the *Christian* Religion, but their *Pawaws*, or Priests, who live by Idolatry, hinder them from embracing it, as much as possible; and by Perswasions and Threats, keep 'em in their Diabolical Worship. As to their Wives, no People in the World make themselves so easie in Wedlock, if a Man dislikes his Wife, he turns her off for the least Offence that is, and takes another. The Woman, in Revenge, carries away her Children with her, and the House is rid at once. The Wife, while she lives with the Husband, may Cuckold him without Crime or Scandal; but then she must acquaint her Husband, or her Parents, that she has a Gallant. They have a very indifferent sort of Maids among them, it being lawful and reputable enough for their Virgins to be as generous to Mankind as they please, before Marriage, provided they keep constantly to one Man after it. When a Woman is with Child, she never admits of the Conjugal Embraces till she is deliver'd, and never while she gives suck. *Belle Coustume*, says a *French* Author, *On auroit bonne grace de Vouloir prescher cette doctrine aux femmes de L'Europe. Comme on en seroit Escoute?* Which because it reflects on our European Ladies in this Matter, I shall leave in the Language I found it.

The *Indians* pay a great Respect and Obedience to their Kings: They believe the Transmigration of Souls, and know as much, and talk as learnedly of the Creation of the World, as their Neighbours. They are everlasting Dancers, given to all manner of *American* Sports and Gaming, and will play away all they have at Cards. They have certain Festivals, or Times set apart for their Pastimes. They don't take much Care in their Dress, in which they differ little from the *New-England* Indians. Their Lodgings and Way of Living, are very homely. They are almost always at War. They seldom give any Quarter but to Women and Children, whom they keep for Slaves.



'Tis a bloody Battle with 'em, if 8 or 10 Men are kill'd; and a mighty Prince who has a hundred Subjects fit to bear Arms, of which there are, in all, scarce 1000 *Indian* Men in the Territory of *New-York*, whereas there are 7 or 8 times as many *English*. We must now give an Account how the Colony advanc'd from its Infancy to its present Maturity.

Colonel *Nicholls* continu'd Governour, till about the Year 1683, when *Sir Edmund Andros*, of whom we shall have often Occasion to speak, was appointed his Successor. The Reputation of this Settlement encreasing with its Trade, it became a populous and thriving Plantation, in which Condition it remains to this Day. Col. *Dungan* succeeded *Sir Edmund Andros*, in the Government of *New-York*. This Gentleman was a *Roman* Catholick, and King *James* the I<sup>ld</sup> put him into this Place: He was an old Soldier, having been long in the King of *Spain's* Service, and that gave him such an Aversion to the *French*, as hinder'd his betraying the Province to them, either in King *James's* Reign, or after the *Revolution*. Before the late King abdicated the Government, he consented that *French* Priests should come from *Quibec* in *Canada*, and have free Leave to make what Converts they could in the Province of *New-York*: Accordingly they came; but Col. *Dungan* immediately order'd them to be gone, saying, *Their Design was to gain over the English and their Allies to the French Interest, and not to the French Religion*; wherefore, like a Man of Honour, he drove them out of his Province. The *French* King complain'd of him to King *James*, who was highly displeas'd; and 'tis thought, Col. *Dungan* would have lost his Government, if his Highness the Prince of *Orange* had not been declar'd King. This Governour was afterwards Earl of *Limerick*, and is still living in *Ireland*. There happen'd nothing extraordinary in his Time: For the *Indians* giving the Inhabitants no Disturbance, there were no Wars to create Action, and disturb the peaceable Commerce of the People.

After the *Revolution*, Col. *Dungan* was recall'd; it being inconsistent with a Protestant Government to employ *Popish* Officers. The War broke out in those Parts almost as soon as in *Europe*, between the *English* and *French*, and their Confederates. We find mention

made

made of an Expedition, undertaken by the *English* against the *French*, by *La Hontan*; but that Author has not done us Justice; neither must we expect that ever the *French* will own they were beaten: He says, the *English* came within a Day or two's March of *Quibec*, and then return'd without doing any thing. The Truth of the Fact is: In the Year 1690. Col. *Peter Schuyler*, with 300 *English*, and 300 *Indians*, march'd from Fort *Albany* up to *Quibec*, 400 Miles from *New-York*, and the *French* Governour oppos'd him with no less than 13 Companies of regular Troops, and as many *Indians*: Notwithstanding the Inequality of their Numbers, Col. *Schuyler* charg'd the Enemy with equal Bravery and Success, routed them, kill'd 30 Officers, and 300 Soldiers with little or no Loss; but being not strong enough to attempt the Forts, he contented himself with his Victory, and retreated. A full Relation of this Action was printed at *New-York*. The *French* also made an Expedition against the *English*, surpriz'd *Schenectada*, burnt the Town, and murder'd the Inhabitants.

Colonel  
Fletcher  
Governour. King *William* appointed Col. *Fletcher* to succeed the Earl of *Limerick* in this Government, and he held it several Years. He had a Garrison of regular Troops, in the City of *New-York*, to prevent any Surprize from the *French* and their Confederates the *Hurons*.

In his Time, *A. D.* 1696, the Count *de Frontenac*, Governour of *Canada*, having a Design against *Schenectada* and *Albany*, in this Province, and intending to draw off the five Nations of *Indians*, inhabiting the neighbouring Parts, from the Friendship they liv'd in with the *English*, left *Quibec* about the 15th of *June*, and coming to *Mount-Real*, met there 3000 *French* and *Canada Indians*, and being provided with Canoos, Stores of all sorts, and other Necessaries for this Expedition, he advanc'd by the River of the *Iroquoise* towards *New-York*. After a long March of above 100 Leagues, he came into the Country of the *Orandaguese*, one of those five Nations, and surprising them with so great a Power, destroy'd one of their Castles, burning their Corn and Provisions. Colonel *Fletcher* having Notice of this Invasion, march'd with the *English* Soldiers, then in Garrison at *New-York*, a Body of the Militia, and some of the *Indian Allies*, to put

put a Stop to the Progress of the *French*. The Count *de Frontenac* hearing of his Approach, made a hasty Retreat. Upon which, a Party of the Upper Nations of the *Indians*, Friends to the *English*, who were coming to their Relief, attack'd his Rear, and kill'd several of the *French*, who were not only disappointed in their Project, but suffered a great Loss. The *Iroquoise* were all exasperated against them, by this Invasion, and desir'd Col. *Fletcher* to meet the Chief of their Nations at *Albany*, to concert Measures with them, for carrying on the War against the Common Enemy, and revenge themselves on the Count *de Frontenac* for invading their Country. Col. *Fletcher's* Successor was Col. *Slaughter*.

'Twas in the *Interregnum*, if we may be allow'd *Colonel* to use that Word, between this and Col. *Fletcher's* *Slaughter* Governments, that Col. *Lestey* took on him that *Governour* Office, without any Commission from *England*. He was of the Faction that always pretend to be more Zealous for the publick Good than others. And such Pretences never want Partizans. The Number of the Magistrates of this Province, who sided with him, were equal, at least, to the other; and cou'd he have maintain'd the Power he had usurp'd, till he had procur'd Remonstrances and Addresses, to be sent from them to *England*, he doubted not he should be able to get his Authority confirm'd. His Hopes, indeed, seem'd vain and chimerical. For no Prince will ever think that Person worthy of Power, who assumes it without his Consent, let his Cause, or his Merit, be what they will. Mr. *Jacob Milburn* was his great Friend in this Affair, and very instrumental in securing the Fort. But when Col. *Slaughter* arriv'd with the King's Commission, he got into the Fort by a Stratagem, seiz'd *Lestey* the Governour, and *Milburn*, and order'd them to be try'd for High Treason, for holding the Fort out against him, and killing one of his Men; he being the King's Lieutenant. The Judges and Jury made no great Difficulty of condemning them, and they were accordingly condemn'd, and executed as Traytors. The Governour, *Slaughter*, proceeded a little too hastily in this Affair, and no doubt would have been sent for to *England*, and perhaps serv'd as *Lestey* was, had he not dy'd in *New-York*,

Joseph  
Dudley  
Governour.

York, where his Faction was but too much encourag'd, especially after the Lord C---'s Arrival. *Slaughter* dying, *Joseph Dudley*, Esq; of *New-England*, held this Government till the Arrival of the Earl of *Bellomont*, whom his Majesty, King *William*, had made Governour of *New-England* and *New-York*. The Lord *Bellomont* intended to reside at *New-York*, it being the pleasanter City in the *English America*; but when he arriv'd at *New-England*, the Affairs of that Province requir'd his Presence, and he appointed Col. *Dudley* to be his Deputy at *New-York*, and after him Mr. *Nanfan*.

Mr. Nan-  
fan, De-  
puty Go-  
vernour.

In the Year 1700, the Deputy-Governour set up a Post-Office in *Long Island*, which runs twice a Week, from *Northfleet* to *Nettlebed*, *Egerton*, *Ashford*, *Huntington*, *Oyster Bay*, *Flushing*, *Newton* and *Bedford*, where the Mail is carry'd over in the Passage-Boat to *New-York*. He also appointed a Packet-Boat, to go from *Northfleet* to *Stoniton*, in *New-England*, very convenient for the Trade and Correspondence between the two Colonies. About the same Time, 1000 of the *Scots*, who had settled at *Darien*, put into *New-York*, and took their Passage Homewards, after they had abandon'd that Settlement, but the Deputy-Governour refus'd to assist them, pretending he cou'd not do it in the Absence of the Earl of *Bellomont*, who was then at *Boston*. A Library was erected, this Year, in the City of *New-York*: And the *Dutch* Inhabitants built Mills to saw Timber; one of which wou'd do more in an Hour, than 50 Men in 2 Days. The Earl of *Bellomont* sent over a very Loyal Address, from this Province, which was presented to the King, by Col. *Byard*, their Agent, in *London*, who had the Honour to kiss the King's Hand. His Majesty, in *June*, 1700, appointed *William Atwood*, Esq; to be Chief Justice of the Province of *New-York*; and he held that Office till the Arival of the Lord *Cornbury*, Son of the E. of *Clarendon*, who was made Governour of this Province, on the Death of the Earl of *Bellomont*.

In the Year 1701, His Lordship remov'd thither, with his Lady and Family, and has resided there ever since. He remov'd Mr. *Atwood* from being Chief Justice, and made other Alterations in the Government. The Party that espous'd Col. *Lestey*'s Cause continu'd still, and Mr. *Atwood* fell in with them, as

indeed did many good *Englishmen*. They were charg'd with favouring the *Dutch*, and they charg'd their Enemies with the same Partiality for the *French*; but we will not enter into this Dispute, which caus'd a great deal of Trouble both in *New-York* and *England*. The Lord *Cornbury* treated all *Lesley's* Friends roughly enough, and carry'd it with a high Hand. This Lord was afterwards Governour of *New-Jersey*, for he had not been long at *New-York* before he receiv'd Advice of King *William's* Death, and Letters from the Lord Commissioners of Trade, with one inclos'd from the Privy Council, containing Directions to proclaim her present Majesty, which was done with great Solemnity, the 18th of *June*, 1702. His Lordship was, on this Occasion, attended by the Mayor, Aldermen and Common Council; the Clergy, Gentlemen and Merchants of *New-York*; and the next Day having also receiv'd a Commission from Queen *Anne*, to be Governour of the *Ferseys*, he went over the Water to see the like Proclamation made there. My Lord continues in the Government of these Provinces to this Day.

It was impossible at this distance from the several Places we write of, to keep exactly to the Method we propos'd to our selves; and having, since the Writing the above Account of *New-York*, receiv'd further Information from a Gentleman of good Credit, we now communicate it to the Reader.

The City of *New-York* is thought to contain near 1000 Houses, most of them very well built. The Great Church was built in the Year 1695. Col. *Fletcher* being Governour, by the charitable Contributions of himself, Col. *Nicholson*, Governour of *Virginia*, and other well-dispos'd Christians. This Church is dedicated to the Holy Trinity. There are also a *Dutch* Church, a *French* Church, and a *Lutheran* Church; and a Free-school procur'd to be erected by the present Governour. The Minister of the *English* Church is the Reverend Mr. *William Vesey*. The City has a County belonging to it. For the whole Province of *New-York* is divided into 10 Counties; five of them, *viz.* *Albany*, *Ulster*, *Dutchess*, *Orange*, and *King's* County, are inhabited by the *Dutch*, and Persons

of *Dutch* Extraction. The five other Counties are, *Queen's County*, *Suffolk County*, *Chester County*, *Richmond County*, and *New-York*.

The Walls before-mention'd in the Description of this City were standing when 'twas call'd *New-Amsterdam*, but its chief Defence now is *Anne Fort* and two new Batteries, one on each Side of the *Narrows*, to secure the Place by Sea. The Fort is in good Order; and there are now two Companies of Foot in Garrison in it, the Governour's and Captain *Peter Matthems's*.

We have before made mention of the Town of *Albany*. There is a strong Stone Fort begun by the Lord *Cornbury*, in the room of the Old Fort, which was only stockado'd. The Town of *Albany* is mostly inhabited by the *Dutch*; it is near 150 Miles from *New-York*. The Province being above 170 Miles in Length, our former Computation was too short. Her Majesty has been graciously pleas'd to send a Minister here; and the Representatives for this County in the Assembly, desir'd they might have a Church of *England* Pastor there, tho' the Inhabitants are generally *Dutch*. Here the Governour often has Conferences with the *Indian Kings*; and a famous one was holden in the Year 1702. my Lord *Cornbury* being present, as also Col. *Peter Schuyler*, Major *Dirk Wessels*, Commissioners for treating with the *Indians*. *John Bleecker*, Esq; Mayor of *New-York*, *J. Abeel*, Esq; Recorder, *John Roosboom*, Esq; Alderman. *David Schuyler*, Esq; Alderman, *John Schuyler*, Esq; Alderman, and Mr *Richard Levingston*, Secretary for *Indian Affairs*. *Hillette van Olinda*, an old *Dutch* Woman, was Interpreter. The first that had Audience were 2 Sachems of the *Canada Indians*, five Sachems of the *Twightwights* and *Tionondade Indians*, then the Sachems of the five Nations, in Confederacy with the *English*, the *Oneydes*, the *Onontages*, the *Cayouges*, the *Sinckes*, and the *Maquais*; where mutual Presents were made, and Affairs of Trade settled. Here are two Companies in Garrison, Lieutenant Governour *Richard Ingoldsby's*, and Captain *Weems's*; and the Garrison is often reforc'd by Detachments from *New-York*.

At *Schenectada*, of which we have already spoken, is an old Fort, out of Repair, and the Pallisadoes very rotten. The Garrison here is Part of that at *Albany*. This Place is much more populous than before the *French* destroy'd it. Other Forts are on the Frontiers, as the *Half-moon*, *Nestigaun*, and *Saractoge*.

Indeed the *English* cannot be too careful of the Defence of their Frontiers here, considering what a powerful Enemy they have at *Canada*; and 'tis said the Expedition lately undertaken by Monsieur *Herberville* against *Nevis*, &c. was intended against *New-York*: For when Mr. *Nausan* was Deputy Governour, a *French* Man of War, as we are inform'd, was suffer'd to enter the Harbour, which the Captain order'd to be founded, and gave Information of it to the Court of *France*. The Stores at *New-York* were in such a Condition, that the Inhabitants were very glad they had no want of any; for had they been put to the Trial, they doubted whether they should have been able to have made so good a Defence as they would otherwise have done.

We must desire the Gentlemen of *New-York* not to expect that we should espouse their Factions: If we have been betray'd by some Persons to speak too favourably of *Lesley's* from their Misrepresentations, we shall not rake into the Ashes of the dead, and affront my Lord *Bellomont's* Memory, out of Complaisance to others.

We have been inform'd, since the first Part of this Account of *New-York* was written, that Col. *Lesley's* Usurpation happen'd before Col. *Fletcher's* Government, and consequently that my Lord *Bellomont* succeeded Col. *Slaughter*; but the Fact is true, and as to Chronology, if we sometimes err, 'tis the Fault of such as undertook to furnish us with Memoirs: We spar'd no Pains to have the best; and the World will see, by the Names of the Gentlemen, from whom we had our Informations, that we could not have better Authorities.

*Kingston* lies between *Albany* and *New-York*, on the West-side of the River. The Houses are stragling, except about 100, which compose the main Town. In the County of *West-Chester*, we must note one

Parish at least, that of *Decham*, is not yet laid out, and perhaps the Name is mistaken. There's but one Church in this County, at *West-Chester Town*, but there's a settled Maintenance for two Ministers, at 50 *l.* yearly each; one for *West-Chester*, of which Mr. *Barton* is Rector, and one for *Rye*.

We have nothing more to say of *Richmond County* and Town, but that it has an Allowance for a Minister at 40 *l.* a Year.

If we take another View of *Long-Island*, we must correct an Error in its Situation, which is a Print-Fault, for 'tis South-East from *New-York*, as *New-England* is North-East. The Island is 150 Miles long, and contains *Queen's County*, *Suffolk County*, and *Richmond County*. 'Tis sometimes call'd *Nassau-Island*. In *Queen's County* are two Churches, supply'd with Incumbants. *Jamaica*, of which the Reverend Mr. *William Urquhart* is Minister, he has 50 *l.* a Year, by Subscription, from the *Yorkshire* Clergy, and 15 *l.* for Books. The Town consists of about 40 Houses. The other Church is at *Hempstead*, of which the Reverend Mr. *John Thomas* is Rector, who has the same Income from *England*, rais'd by the Society for propagating the Gospel, as Mr. *Urquhart* has, and both of them are allow'd 60 *l.* a Year a piece in *New-York*.

'Tis in the Plain near this Town, call'd thence *Hempstead Plain*, that the Races are generally run; and the Breed of Horses being famous here, the Militia Regiment in this County is Horse.

*Suffolk County* has two Towns in it. *Oyster Bay*, where are 50 Houses; and in *Huntington* as many, but no Church built. There are abundance of Dissenters, *Independants* and *Quakers*.

Having nothing more to say of the History of *New-York*, we shall proceed to that of the *Ferseys*, having first given a List of the Chief Officers, Civil and Military.

The Right Honourable *Edward* Lord Viscount  
*Cornbury*, Governour,



Peter Schuyler, Esq;  
 William Lawrence, Esq;  
 Gerardus Beckman, Esq;  
 Rip van Dara, Esq;  
 Caleb Heathcot, Esq;  
 Thomas Wenham, Esq;  
 Willian van Ranslau, Esq;  
 Roger Mompesson, Esq;  
 John Barbarie, Esq;  
 Adolphus Phillips, Esq;

Counsellors.

Chief Justice and Judge Advocate, Roger Mompesson, Esq;  
 Second Judge, Robert Milward, Esq;  
 Attorney General, Sampson Shelton Broughton, Esq;  
 Secretary, George Clark, Esq;

The Names of the ASSEMBLY.

William Nicolls, Esq; Speaker.  
 Stephen de Laucey, Esq; Kilian van Rensalaer, Esq;  
 Henry Beekman, Esq; John Stillwell, Esq;  
 Thomas Garton, Esq; Abraham Lakeman, Esq;  
 Mynderp Schuyler, Esq; Josiah Hunt, Esq;  
 Thomas Codrington, Esq; Joseph Purdy, Esq;  
 John Jackson, Esq; William Willet, Esq;  
 Matthew Howel, Esq; Daniel Whitehead, Esq;  
 John Abeel, Esq; John van Cortlandp, Esq;  
 Evert Banker, Esq;  
 Clerk of the Assembly, Mr. Gabriel Ludlow.

The Militia Regiments are commanded by the following Colonels.

New-York County, Col. W. Paretree, Mayor of the City,  
 Suffolk County, Col. Smith.  
 King's County, Col. Beekman.  
 Albany County, Col. Schuyler.  
 Queen's County, a Regiment of Horse, Col. Willet.

Regular Troops, 4 Companies, 100 Men each.  
 Company, commanded by the Lord Cornbury.  
 Company, by the Lieut. Govern. Ric. Ingoldsby, Esq;  
 Company, by Cap. Weems.  
 Company, by Cap. Peter Matthews.  
 Engineer, Mr. Reldknap.

T H E

# H I S T O R Y

O F

## N E W - J E R S E Y .

**T**HIS Country, before the Surrender made by the late Proprietors of the Government, into Her present Majesty's Hands, was divided into two distinct Provinces, but as 'tis now under one Governour, and one Council; so we give it but one Name.

The first Discoverers of this Country were the *English*; and the first of them Captain *Hudson*. 'Tis included in *Nova-Belgia*, by Mr. *Delaet*. The *Indigena*, or first Inhabitants of this Territory, were the *Naraticongi*, on the North Side of *Raritan River*. The *Minquaas*, the *Capitanasses*, the *Gacheos*, and the *Senneaas* on the South. The latter inhabited the Country up almost as high as the Falls of the River. The first *Europeans* that settled here were the *Swedes*, who had three Towns, *Christina*, call'd by *Indians*, *Andostoka*, *Elfsimburgh* and *Gottemburg*. Their Settlements were chiefly on the South side of the River, and on the Frontiers of *Pensylvania*, opposite to which Province there's a Place, to this Day, call'd *Fort Elfsimburgh*. But the *Swedes* made very little of their Plantation. And the *Dutch*, always industrious in their Trade, work'd them so far out of it; that *Berghen*, the Northern Part of *New-Jersey*, was almost entirely planted by the *Hollanders*. King *Charles II.* who, like his Predecessors, look'd upon the Continent

of America, from Canada to Florida, to be his Right, incerted this Tract in the Grant he made to the Duke of York, the 12th of March, 1664. But the English never settled to the South of Hudson's River, on that side Maryland, till several Years after the Duke had invested this Province in John Lord Berkly, and Sir George Cartarett, by the Name of Nova Casarea; their Charter bears Date the 24th of June, 1664: The Lord Berkly's Assignee, Sir George Cartarett agreed to divide the whole Country into two Parts. East New-Jersey, or that Part which borders on New-York, fell to Sir George Cartarett; and West-Jersey, or that Part which borders on Pennsylvania, to the Lord Berkly. But before we enter farther into the History of these two Provinces, it will be convenient to give a Geographical Description of them, that the Reader may have a better Idea of the Places we speak of.

New-Jersey contains all that Country, to use the Words of the Patent, lying to the Westward of Long-Island and Manhattas-Island, or New-York, and bounded on the East, Part by the main Sea, and part by Hudson's River, and extended Southward to the main Ocean, as far as Cape May, at the Mouth of Delaware River; and to the Northward, as far as the Northermost Branch of the said Bay or River of Delaware, which is 41 Degrees and 40 Minutes of Latitude, and crossing over thence in a streight Line to Hudson's River, in 41 Degrees of Latitude; which said Tract of Land was then call'd Nova Cæsaria, or New-Jersey, by all; and thus we see it has the main Sea on the South East, the River Delaware to the West, Hudson's River to the East, the main Land to the North, and lies between 39 and 40 Degrees of North Latitude: It extends it self in Length on the Sea Coasts, and along Hudson's River about 120 Miles; and is almost as broad as long where 'tis broadest. We must now take some Notice of the two Provinces distinctly.

Bounds.

The biggest and best inhabited of these was East-Jersey, which extended Eastward and Northward, all along the Sea Coast and Hudson's River, from Little Egg Harbour to that Part of Hudson's River, which is in 41 Degrees of Northern Latitude; and Southward and Westward is divided from West-Jersey by a Line of Partition, passing from Egg Harbour to C

East-Jersey.

wick River, *Stony Brook*, and the South Branch of *Raritan River*. It extends in Length along *Hudson's River*, and on the Sea Coasts 100 Miles. In Breadth 'tis very unequal, being in some Places crowded by *West-Jersey*; but 'tis however the most valuable Part of this Country. It was divided into Counties; as *Bergen County*, on *Hudson's River*; *Essex County*, *Middlesex County*, on the North Side of *Raritan River*; and *Monmouth County* on the South. We shall begin with

*Berghen  
County.*

*Berghen County*. It lies on *Hudson's River* over against *New-York*, and was the first planted of any part of this Tract. This, as well as the other Parts of the *Jerseys*, is extremely well water'd with Rivers; besides that of *Hudson*, there are *Hacksack River*, *Passaick River*, and several less Streams. The chief Town is *Berghen*, and indeed the only Town in the County, for the rest of it is *Out-Plantations*. Within the Precincts of this Township, are 10000 Acres of Land cast out; that is, assign'd over by the Proprietors to Tenants in Fee; and in the County are 10000 Acres cast out. The Town is not very large, however it has 350 Inhabitants, most of them *Dutch*, who have been settled there above 40 Years. In the County are reckon'd a like Number of Inhabitants, by which we understand Men, Women, and Children. *Berghen Town* stands on the Western Point of the Neck of Land, which, with *Staten Island*, forms a *Sound*.

*Essex  
County.*

*Essex County* is of Note for *Elizabeth Town*, which lies three Miles within a Creek, opposite to the West End of *Staten Island*. Here the *English* settled first, and this Place has thriv'd most, notwithstanding the Endeavours that have been us'd to make a Capital of *Perth*. It has 250 Families in it, and 40000 Acres of Ground cast out. Here the Proprietors have a Plantation, which goes by the Name of their *Farm*, the Government of the Provinces manag'd, Courts kept, Assemblies held, and the greatest Part of the Trade of the Colony carry'd on.

*Newark* is the most compact Town in the *Jerseys*; it lies 6 or 7 Miles Northward from *Elizabeth Town*, consists of about 100 Families, and has 50000 Acres of Land laid out to be cultivated. The Western Part of this County is water'd by *Ramsey River*; upon which

which is a Saw-Mill; and Northward is a Ridge of Mountains, call'd the *Blew Hills*. The next County, is

*Middlesex*, the most populous and flourishing for its *Out Plantations*, tho the Capital of the Country, *Perth City*, which stands in it, does hardly yet deserve the Name of a Village. In this Division of the Province are two Towns:

*Piscataway*, which lies about 6 Miles up *Raritan* River. It has 80 Families, and 40000 Acres of Land cast out. Seven or eight Miles from hence is

*Woodbridge*, a good Town on a Creek within the *Sound*, form'd by *Staten Island* and this County. It has 120 Families, and 30000 Acres of Land laid out for Plantations. The Western Part of *Middlesex* County is water'd by *Milstone* River, which runs thro' a very pleasant and fruitful Country, belonging to Mr. *Will. Dockwra* of *London*, to whom that City owes the useful Invention of the Penny-Post. The Proprietors considering the happy Situation of *Perth City*, order'd their Agents to use their utmost Endeavours to procure Inhabitants to remove thither; but *Elizabeth* Town kept them, as we shall hereafter again observe.

*Perth Amboy* takes its Name from *James Drummond*, Earl of *Perth*, and *Amboy* Point, on which it stands. 'Tis a sweet, wholesome, and commodious Place, at the Mouth of the River *Raritan*, which runs into *Sandyhook* Bay, able to contain 500 Ships, and is never frozen. According to the Proprietors Project, they were to set out such a Spot of Ground there, and divide it into 150 equal Shares, for Purchasers to build upon. They reserv'd 4 Acres for a Market-Place, and three Acres for publick Wharfage. A Town was accordingly set out, and the *Scots* Proprietors were very industrious to have it built. The Governour's House was one of the first, and there are now about 40 Houses more scatter'd up and down; to which is given the pompous Name of *Perth City*. Two or three of these are Stone Houses. The whole Plan of the Town consists of 1070 Acres; and there are two good Roads from it to *Piscataway* and *Woodbridge*. But notwithstanding 'tis so commodious for Trade, that Ships in one Tide can come up to the Port, and

lie at the Merchants Doors, tho of 300 Tun Burthen; yet we do not find that *Perth City* deserves that Name better than *St. James City* in *Virginia*, which is not so big as *Kentish Town* in *Middlesex*, in *England*. 'Twas intended there should have been a Market here, but there is now no Occasion for one. All along the River *Raritan*, the Country is thick of Plantations; the chief of which were set out to two of the Proprietors, Mr. *Robert Barclay*, and Mr. *Will. Dockwra*. From hence we cross the River, and come to *Monmouth County*: Where we first meet with *Middleton*, a pretty good Town, consisting of 100 Families, and 30000 Acres of Ground, in what they call here *Out-Plantations*. 'Tis about 10 or 12 Miles over Land, to the Northward of *Shrewsbury*, and 26 Miles to the Southward of *Piscattaway*. Not far off, the Shoar winds it self about like a Hook; and, being sandy, gives Name to all the Bay.

Mon-  
mouth  
County.

*Shrewsbury* is the most Southern Town of the Province, and reckon'd the chief Town of the Shire. It contains about 160 Families, and 30000 Acres of *Out-Plantations* belong to its Division. 'Tis situated on the Side of a fresh Water Stream, thence call'd *Shrewsbury River*, not far from its Mouth. Between this Town and *Middleton* is an Iron Work; but we do not understand it has been any great Benefit to the Proprietors. Col. *Morris* is building a Church at the Falls. There's a new Town in this County, call'd, *Freehold*, which has not been laid out, and inhabited long. It does not contain as yet above 40 Families; and as to its *Out-Plantations*, we suppose they are much the same in Number with the rest, and may consist of about 30000 Acres.

We have not divided the Counties into Parishes, and that for a very good Reason, there being none, nor indeed a Church in the whole Province, worthy that Name. But there are several Congregations of Church of *England Men*, as at *Shrewsbury*, *Amboy*, *Elizabeth Town*, and *Freehold*, whose Minister is Mr. *John Beak*, his Income is 65 l. a Year; and a Church is building at *Salem*. As for,

West-  
Jersey.

*West-Jersey*, We can only give a general Account of it; for it is not divided into Shires, as *East-New-Jersey* is; tho Dr. *Cox*, when he was Proprietary, order'd

der'd seven Counties to be laid out; as *Cape-May* County, *Salham* County, *Gloucester* County, &c. but his Successors did not go on with his Project. Tho' *West-Jersey* has not so many Towns, nor is so well planted and inhabited, the Number of its navigable Creeks renders this Province as commodious for Trade as the other. They lie at a convenient Distance, and some of them run up a good way into the Country.

The most Easterly Point of Land in *West-Jersey*, is *Cape-May*, at the Mouth of *Delaware* Bay, and over against *Suffex* County, in *Pensylvania*. The Tract of Land between this and *Little Egg* Harbour, which divides East and West *New-Jersey*, goes by the Name of *Cape-May* County; but we do not understand, that there is now any other Division of this Province honour'd with the Name of a County.

Here are several stragling Houses on this Neck of Land, the chief of which is *Cox's* Hall; but there's yet no Town. Most of the Inhabitants are Fishermen, there being a Whalery at the Mouth of the Bay, on this as well as the opposite Shoar. Next to *Cape-May* is *Maurice* River, between that and *Cohenzy*: 'Tis the biggest in all the Country. Next to it is *Cohenzy*, a small River, but deep and navigable for small Craft. Ten or twelve Miles up this River, is *Cohenzy* Town; where are about 80 Families. From *Maurice* River, the next Stream to *Cape-May*, the Bay and River of *Delaware* waters all the South-East, South, and South-West Part of *West-Jersey*. The Plantations, some of which are so close, that they have assum'd the Name of a Town, lie all along on that Bay and River, and most of them on Creeks.

*Antioch* is a sort of a Town, and has a little Creek belonging to it. Next to it, nearer the Mouth of *Delaware* River, is *Gibbon's* Creek; next, *Alloway's* Creek; and then Fort *Elsimburgh*, at the River's Mouth, and over against *New-Castle* County, in *Pensylvania*: It formerly belong'd to the *Swedes*. Near it the River *Salham* falls into the *Delaware*. There's a Town about half way up this River towards its Head, from whence it takes its Name. 'Tis 20 Miles from *Cohenzy*, and contains about 120 Families. One of the Counties, laid out by the former Proprietary, was from this Place call'd *Salem*.

## The History of New-Jersey.

*Fins's Point* and *Town*, if it may be so call'd, lies over against *New-Castle Town*. Next to it is *Namen Creek*, then *Racoon Creek*, then *Almon Creek*, *Low Island*, and *Wass Creek*; the latter opposite to *Chester*, in *Pensylvania*; then *Great Manto Creek*, then *Woodberry River*, *Green Bank*, and then *Gloucester Creek*, and *Cooper's Point*, over against *Philadelphia* on the *Delaware*. *Gloucester* is a good *Town*, and gave Name to a County in the above-mention'd Proprietary's Division of the Province. It contains near 100 Houses; the Country about it is very pleasant. Above this is *Panthakin Creek*, then *Northampton* or *Rancocos River*; and then *Burlington Town*, the Capital of this Province; above thirty Miles from which there are few or no Plantations. In this *Town* the *Courts* and *Assemblies* of *West-Jersey* us'd to be kept. It contains about 200 Families, and has an answerable Number of Acres laid out by the Proprietary to the Under-Servants. The Houses here are well built, and almost all of Brick. The Market affords Plenty of all sorts of Provisions. It gave Name to one of the seven before-mention'd Counties. Above this *Town* is another, call'd *Maidenhead*, below the Falls also, containing 40 or 50 Families; 'tis built on *Dr. Cox's Lands*: And there's another small *Town* above the Falls. About 40 Miles higher is the Country of the *Minisinks*, an *Indian Nation*. The Soil being very fertile thereabouts, 'tis expected this Tract will be next inhabited, it bordering upon *New-York*, and has Communication with it, by Means of the River *Asopus*; which having water'd it, flows into *Hudson's River*, near *Kingston*. This Province has also an easy Communication with *Maryland*, there being a River within its Limits which runs not above eight Miles from the Bottom of *Chesapeake Bay*; and there was once a Project on Foot to cut thro' that eight Miles, but *Virginia* and *Maryland* oppos'd it so vehemently, that it did not succeed.

The Trade of *West New-Jersey*, and *East-Jersey*, as also the Soil and Conveniences of Rivers and Creeks, are much the same; except that *West-Jersey*, by its Situation on *Delaware River*, abounds more in the latter.



Both these Provinces, as to the Soil and Air, <sup>The Soil,</sup> have a near Relation with that of *Pensylvania*; <sup>Trade, &c.</sup> as also to its Trade and Products. The Country yields Plenty of all sorts of Grain; and the Inhabitants are said to have been so scrupulous, that they would not enter upon it, before they had given the *Indians* some Satisfaction: But there needed not so much Nicety; for 'tis certainly very lawful for any Man to possess himself of any Land that is desert and uninhabited, as this was towards the Sea-Coast especially. The few *Indians* that are to be met with in the *Jerseys*, are rather a Help than an Injury to the Inhabitants, who wish their Number was much greater. The *English* are so numerous in comparison of the *Indians*, that if it was in the Nature of the latter, they durst not offer the least Injustice to the New-Comers, for they might soon be extirpated by them, it being computed, that there are 10 or 12000 Souls of the *English* in this Province, and of these about 2000 Men fit to bear Arms, and not 200 *Indians* in all.

'Twill be needless to enter into the Particulars of the Products of these Provinces, since, as we have said, it has so much Relation to *Pensylvania*. Provisions are the chief Trade here, which are thence exported to the *Sugar Islands*. They have also some Furs, Skins, and Tobacco, for an *English* Market; and Oil, Fish, and other Provisions for *Portugal*, *Spain*, and the *Canaries*. Ships may be built here cheap and conveniently at *Perth Amboy*: But *New-England* carries away that beneficial Trade from all the rest of the *English* Colonies, on the Northern Continent of *America*. This Place was at first as likely to be soon inhabited as any, but its Progress has not been as promising as its Beginning.

*New-York* and *Pensylvania* have much the Advantage of it for Populoufness and Trade; and indeed *New-York* is its best Market, for buying or selling any considerable Quantities of Goods of any sort.

We have already hinted concerning the Smithing Forge that is set up near *Middleton*. 'Tis certain

tain, Iron has been made there; but that Project has lately fail'd; and notwithstanding all that is said of the Iron and Copper of *New-England*, and the Minerals all over that Continent, we do not find that any of the Mines of *America* have been worth working, except those of *Mexico* and *Peru*. We shall now return to the Historical Events relating to the Beginning, Progress, and present State of *New-Jersey*.

*History.*

The Lord *Berkley*, about twelve Years after the Duke granted this Province to him and Sir *George Cartarett*, assign'd his Right to

The first Proprietary in *Jersey*, under the Lord *Berkley*, who were,

*Will. Pen*, Esq;

*Mr. Gawen Laurie*, of *London*, Merchant;

*Mr. Nicholas Lucas*, and

*Mr. Edward Byllyng*,

These not long after agreed upon the Partition of the Province with Sir *George Cartarett*: And this Proprietary dying, the Earl of *Bath*, and others his Executors, with the Consent of his Widow, the Lady *Cartarett*, assign'd over his Share, which was the Northern Division, *Feb. 2. 1681.* to

*First Proprietaries in East-Jersey.*

The First Proprietaries of *East-New-Jersey*.

\* *Will. Pen*, Esq;

*Rob. West*, Esq;

\* *Mr. Tho. Rudyard*.

*Mr. Samuel Groom*.

\* *Mr. Tho. Hart*.

\* *Mr. Rich. Mem*.

*Mr. Thomas Wilcox*.

*Mr. Ambrose Rigg*,

*Mr. Hugh Hartshorn*.

\* *Mr. Clement Plumsted*.

\* *Mr. Tho. Cooper*.

*Mr. John Hayward*.

And from this Time the two Provinces have had their distinct Governours. The Proprietaries soon after sold Shares of *East-New-Jersey* to the Persons following, *viz.*

*James*

James, Earl of Perth.

John Drummond, Esq;

Sir George Mackenzy.

Rob. Barclay, } of Ury,

David Barclay, } Esqrs.

Robert Gourdon, Esq;

Mr. Robert Burnet.

Mr. Peter Sonnans, of Lon-  
don, Merchant.

Mr. James Braine.

Mr. Gaven Lawrie.

Mr. Edward Byllyng.

Mr. Will. Gibson.

Mr. Tho. Barker, } Mer-

Mr. Walter Benthall, } chs.

Mr. Rob. Turner, } of Dub-

Mr. Tho. Narne, } lin, Mer'

Mr. Thomas Cox,

Mr. Will. Dockwra.

Who, with the six Proprietaries distinguish'd in the second List by the *Astracisms*, procur'd a Confirmation of their Patent by another from the Duke of York, dated the 14th of March, 1682. by which they were invest'd with all the Powers and Privileges, which the Duke had granted to Sir George Cartaret; or indeed, which the King had granted to his Royal Brother himself. And we by these Lists perceive, that all the *Pattentees* of the Lord Berkley's Division, or *West-New-Jersey*, were Proprietaries of *East-New-Jersey*, except Mr. Nicholas Lucas; yet they did not procure any Conjunction of the two Provinces; on the contrary, separate Governours were appointed over each of them; and the first Governour of *East-New-Jersey* was Robert Barclay, Esq; by Commission, dated the 17th of July. His Deputy was Gaven *Laurie*, Esq;

The Scots were at that time as much persecuted for their Religion as the *English*; and Mr. Barclay, the Head of the *Quakers* in that Kingdom, and also in *England*, thought fit to remove hither with his Family.

We must note, that most of the first *English* Inhabitants in this Country were *Dissenters*, and most of them *Quakers* and *Anabaptists*. These People are generally industrious: Be their Hypocrisy to themselves if they are Hypocrites; but we must do them the Justice to own, that they are the fittest to inhabit a new-discover'd Country, as professing Industry, and shunning those publick Vices which beget Idleness and Want. Their Enemies drove great Numbers of them out of *England*; and the *Jerseys* had their Share of them:

First English Inhabitants.

them: The People here are for this Reason *Dissenters* to this Day, there being but two Church of *England* Ministers in both the Provinces; and this may be one Reason why there are no *Parish Churches*, which the Inhabitants may be afraid to build, least it might be a Temptation for more *Orthodox Divines* to come among them.

A Gentleman asking one of the Proprietaries, *If there were no Lawyers in this Country?* Was answer'd, *No*: And then, *If there were no Physicians?* The Proprietary reply'd, *No*: Nor *Parsons*, adds the Gentleman? *No*, says the Proprietary: Upon which the other cry'd, *What a happy Place must this be, and how worthy the Name of Paradise!* We do not perhaps differ more from this Gentleman than we agree with him.

The Proprietors, in the same Year, made Mr. *Geo. Lockhart* Marshal, and Mr. *William Dockwra* Register and Secretary, in which Office he continues to this Day; and 'tis to him the Writer of this *History* owes, in a great measure, the *Memoirs* relating to this *Colony*.

The Proprietaries made a Deed amongst themselves to prevent Survivorship, and agreed upon *Constitutions*, or general *Concessions*, for the Management of the Province, as to laying out Land for *Counties*, *Tribes*, *Towns*, and *Parishes*. They reserv'd one part in seven for themselves, and resolv'd to dispose of the rest on the following Terms: *Every Master of a Family was to have 50 Acres of Land set out, and 25 for his Wife, and each of his Children and Servants, paying 12 d. a Head to the Register, or his Deputy, for registering them as soon as landed. Servants, when their Times expir'd, were to have 30 Acres. All Persons to pay 2 d. an Acre Quit-Rent; or purchase their Freeholds at 50 s. for every Lot of 25 Acres so taken up, and so in proportion for a greater or less Number of Acres. All Persons were oblig'd to settle in some Township, and to have Land assign'd there for House and Garden, every one being oblig'd by the Concessions to build a House in seven Years time. The Rate of any Parcel of Land was ten Pounds for 100 Acres; and none were to purchase above 1000 Acres: But this Part of the Constitution has not, we suppose, been punctually kept; neither*

neither has *Land* always continu'd at 10 *l.* the 100 Acres; for 'tis certain, *Land* has been sold here for 20 *s.* an Acre, and very often for 60, 70, and 80 *l.* the 100 Acres, as it lay convenient for Townships and Trade, and as it was in Goodness.

Mr. *Barclay*, the first Governour of *East-New-Jersey*, had made his Name famous among his Brethren the *Quakers* by his Writings: he did not go over immediately, so the Government was exercis'd by his Deputy, *Gawen Lawrie*, Esq; who had a *Council* nominated by the *Proprietaries* to assist him: But it seems he did not please his Principals; whether or not it was, that being a *Proprietary* of *West-New-Jersey*, he was not willing the Province he govern'd should thrive too fast, or whether he did not think the Orders he receiv'd from the *Proprietaries* were for the Advantage of the *Colony*, is not determinable by us; but sure we are he disobey'd them in an Article, which was of the last Consequence for the Good of the Province. *September 14. 1683.* the *Proprietaries* wrote to Mr. *Lawrie* and the *Council*, to remove the Seat of Government, and the Courts from *Elizabeth Town* to *Amboy Point*, and there to settle, that by their Presence People might be encourag'd to build *Perth City*, which was then laid out, and great Advantages propos'd to all such as would inhabit it. It lay so commodious for Shipping, that the Concern'd did not doubt, if their Orders were obey'd, they should in a few Years see a City there, which would at least have been a Rival to *New-York* and *Philadelphia*. Mr. *Lawrie*, by disobeying the *Proprietaries*, gave those two Cities an Opportunity to get the start of *Perth-Amboy* so far, that the Inhabitants of *East-New-Jersey* despairing ever to come near them, have discontinu'd their Building; and this Town, which was intended to be the *Capital* of this *Colony*, lies now among the Number of its *Villages*.

Gawen  
Lawrie  
Deputy Go-  
vernor.

We find Mr. *Barclay* continu'd Governour till the Year 1685. when the Right Honourable the Lord *Neal* The Lord *Campbel*, Uncle to his Grace the present Duke of *Ar-* Neal *gyle*, was appointed Governour: In whose tinie *George* Campbel *Keith* came over to *East-New-Jersey*, and taught a Governor. School there. He was also appointed *Surveyor General*, on Account of his Skill in the *Mathematicks*.

He staid there two or three Years, and then went to some other *American* Colony: This is the Man, who, when he return'd to *England*, renounc'd his *Enthusiastick* Errors, and embrac'd the Orthodox Religion of the *Anglicane* Church: After which he became a regular Minister, was presented to a Benefice; and has made himself talkt off by his Disputes with the *Quakers*, and theirs with him; for they have not stuck to charge him with deserting them for a worldly Interest. When he left *Jersey*, Mr. *John Reed* was made Surveyor General. Since this he was sent over by the Society for propagating the Gospel, as a Missionary to convert the *Indians*, and make Profelytes to the Church of *England*: 'Tis said in the Society's Paper, That he has brought great Comfort to the Church. There is now a Minister of *St. Mary's Burlington*, who is Mr. *John Talbot*, Assistant to Mr. *Keith* in his Mission: He has 60 l. a Year from the Society.

Col. Hamilton  
Governor.  
Jeremy Basse, Esq;  
Governor.  
Col. Hamilton  
again.  
Mr. Basse  
again.  
Col. Andrew  
Browne  
Governor.

In the Year 1696. Col. *Andrew Hamilton* was appointed Governour of this Province: In which Post he did not continue long; for in 1697. we find *Jeremy Basse*, Esq; was sent from *England* with that Character, which he also kept but a little while; for Col. *Hamilton* procur'd Mr. *Basse* to be recall'd, and himself re-instated in his Government; which was of as short Duration as Mr. *Basse's*, for the latter in a Year's Time or less was restor'd.

His Successor, and the last Governour of *East-New-Jersey*, was Col. *Andrew Bowne*, who continu'd in that Post as long as the Proprietaries Power lasted. This Office, considering the Cheapness of the Country, was as good as the same in some other Colonies, where the Sallery and Advantages are greater, for the Governour cannot here make fairly above 500 l. a Year of his Government.

This Colony continu'd to thrive under all these Governours; and notwithstanding the Majority of the Proprietaries and Proprietors were *Quakers*, a People who affect a peculiar Tameness of Spirit, and declare against Fighting, yet a Militia has been form'd, and at a late Muster 1400 stout Men appear'd in Arms, Col. *Thomas Cox*, Son of Dr. *Cox*, commanding them. The Number of Souls in this Province is computed to be 12000, and *West-New-Jersey* 8000.

We must now take some Notice of those Events that relate to the latter: 'Tis true, we do not meet with many, and those not very important; but such as they are, we shall communicate them to the Reader.

Governours were settled in this Province much about the same time that the *Proprietaries* of the other appointed Persons to govern *East-New-Jersey*. The first Governour of *West-New-Jersey* was *Edward Byllyng*, Edward Esq; one of the *Proprietaries*, who was put into that Byllyng, Office, A. D. 1683. and continu'd in it several Years. Esq; Go- vernor. After which the greatest part of the Province was sold to Dr. *Daniel Cox*, one of the Members of the Dr. Da- niel Cox College of Physitians, who took the Government into his own Hands; but being then in very great Business Governor. in his Profession, he did not think fit to leave it for the Profits of his Province, and govern'd the Colony always by a Deputy. In the Year 1690. his Practice diminishing in *England*, he resolv'd on a Voyage to his *American Territories*, and was actually gone as far as *Salisbury*, in his way to *Plimouth*, to embark there for this Country, but he was dissuaded by a Friend from his intended Voyage; and returning to *London*, sold the best part of his Propriety to Sir *Thomas Lane*, and others, for above 9000*l.* a Sum of Money which has not often been known to be given in *London* for an Estate in either of the *English Colonies* on the Continent of *America*. What these Purchasers did with their Province, we have not heard; but we find they thought it convenient, for the Good of the Colony, to make a Surrender of their Patent to the Queen, reserving all their Rights to themselves, The Patent excepted. except the Sovereignty, which was restor'd to the Crown. The *Proprietaries* of *East-New-Jersey* did the same; for on the 22d of *April*, 1702. Mr. *Will. Dockwra*, in their Name, and Sir *Thomas Lane* in the Name of the *Proprietaries* of *West-New-Jersey*, waited on her Majesty, and made a formal Surrender of the Sovereignty to her. The Queen immediately appointed my Lord *Cornbury* to be Governour, and this The Lord Lord Cornbury made the late Governour, Mr. *Jeremy Basse*, Governor. his Secretary.

The Two Provinces, which had been divided 26 Years, became united, and now goes by the Name of

*The History of New-Jersey.*

*New-Jersey*; the Government being by a *Governour*, *Council*, and *Assembly*: The Governour chooses his Council out of each, and appoints a Lieutenant-Governour. In the Year 1703. Mr. Sergeant *Hook* made a Purchase of 3750 Acres of Land, in *West-Jersey*, upon *Delaware* River, and gave the 10th part of it as a Glebe to the Church. The Names of the present Officers are,

The Right Honourable the Lord Viscount *Cornbury*,  
Governour.

*Richard Ingoldsby*, Esq; Lieutenant-Governour.

<i>Lewis Morris</i> , Esq;	} Counsellors.
Col. <i>Andrew Bowne</i> ;	
<i>Thomas Revel</i> , Esq;	
<i>Francis Davenport</i> , Esq;	
<i>William Pinhorn</i> , Esq;	
<i>George Deacon</i> , Esq;	
<i>Daniel Leeds</i> , Esq;	
<i>William Sandford</i> , Esq;	
Col. <i>Robert Quarry</i> , and <i>Peter Sonmans</i> , Merchant,	

'Tis remarkable, that Col. *Robert Quarry*, is not only a Counsellor here, but also at *New-York*, *Pensylvania*, *Maryland*, and *Virginia*.

Secretary and Register, Mr. *William Dockwra*.  
Secretary to the Governour, Mr. *Jeremy Basse*.



---



---

T H E

# H I S T O R Y

O F

## P E N S Y L V A N I A .

**T**HIS is not the least considerable of our *American* Colonies; and for the few Years that the Tract of Land, which goes by this Name, has been inhabited, we believe none has thriv'd more, nor is more rich and populous.

The *Proprietary, William Pen, Esq;* is the Son of *The Proprietary, Sir William Pen*, who commanded the *English Fleet*, in Conjunction with other Admirals, in the time of the *Rump*; whom *Oliver* sent with *Col. Venables* to *Hispaniola*; and tho' that Expedition fail'd through the ill Conduct of *Venables*, *Mr. Pen*, for he was not then Knighted, was generally said to have behav'd himself with equal Wildom and Courage. He afterwards fell in with the *Royalists* upon the King's *Restoration*, and commanded the Fleet under the Duke of *York*, in the first *Dutch War*, having sometime before receiv'd the Honour of Knighthood; and dying not long after, was bury'd in *Redcliff-Church* in *Bristol*. For the Services he had done the King and Nation, his Son, the ingenious *William Pen, Esq;* sollicitated a *Grant* of this Province; but having declar'd himself the *Head* of the People in *England*, call'd *Quakers*, he met with

great Difficulties in obtaining this *Pattent*; which he at last procur'd, bearing Date the 4th of *March*, 1682. and gave his Name to the whole Country, which is from him call'd *Pensylvania* in the Original *Grant*, by the King's Authority. But before we proceed further in its History, we must give the Reader some Idea of the *Province*.

*Pensylvania* consists of all that *Tract of Land* in *America*, with all *Islands* thereunto belonging; that is to say, from the Beginning of the fortieth Degree of North Latitude, unto the forty third Degree of North Latitude; whose Eastern Bounds, from 12 English Miles above Newcastle (*alias Delaware-Town*) runs all along upon the Side of *Delaware-River*. So that 'tis bounded on the East by the River and Bay of *Delaware*, and the Eastern Sea; on the North, by *West New-Jersey*, or rather *New-York*, for it goes a great way above the *Jerseys*; on the West, by the *Indian Nations* about the Heads of *Susquahanaugh* and *Delaware Rivers*; and on the South by *Maryland*; and reaches from *Pensberry*, near the Falls of *Delaware River*, to *Cape Hinlope*, at the Mouth of *Delaware Bay*, near 150 Miles: But it runs along like a Strip of Land, being very much crowded in Breadth by *Maryland*.

Bounds.

We should have made mention of the first Inhabitants of this Country, and the first Discoverers; but what we have particularly to say of either the one or the other, we shall relate in the further Prosecution of this History, and continue our Geographical Description of it.

Rivers.

The River *Delaware* is navigable 300 Miles at least, in small Vessels; so high Mr. *Pen* has gone up it himself, as he was pleas'd to acquaint the Writer of this Treatise. It rises in the Mountains, in the Western Parts of this Continent, near the *Iroquoise*, and runs parallel with *Susquahanaugh River* in *Maryland*; the latter falling into the Bay of *Cheseapeak*, not far from where *Delaware River* discharges it self into the Bay that bears its Name. Some Ships bound for *Pensylvania* sail through *Cheseapeak Bay*, the Head falling within this Latitude. They both divide themselves, near the Falls, into two great Branches; and between them flows the *Schoolkill*, which runs into the *Delaware* at *Philadelphia*. These are the only Rivers of Note in this

this Province; the rest are rather *Creeks* than *Rivers*; the Southside of the *Delaware* abounding with them, as well as the North; of which we have spoken in the last *Article*.

We do not find any Counties in the *Western* Part of this Country; the first Town we come to below the Falls, is *Newton*; and next to it is *Pensberry*, over against *Burlington*, in *West New-Jersey*. Here's a small Creek, but never a one at *Newton*. This part of the *Delaware* is call'd the *Freshes*. The next Creek is *Neshimenck*, then *Portqueessin*, then *Pemmipeka*; between which and *Towcauny*-Creek, is *Franctford*; which seems to be a *Dutch* Village, or a *Swedish*; for both *Swedes* and *Dutch* inhabit several Places in *Pennsylvania*. The *Swedes* seated themselves mostly in the *Creeks* I have been speaking of, about the *Freshes*. The *Dutch* planted near the Bay. This Place is also call'd *Oxford*, and here is a Church of *England* Congregation, supply'd by the Ministers of *Philadelphia*, there being none yet sent to the Town, which consists of about 150 Houses. From *Towcauny*, having pass'd *Mill-Creek*, we come to

*Philadelphia*, the Capital of this Colony, dignify'd Philadelphia with the Name of a *City*. 'Tis indeed most commodiously situated between two navigable Rivers, the *Delaware* and *Schoolkill*. It has two Fronts on the Water; one on the East-side, facing the *Schoolkill*; and the other on the *West*, facing the *Delaware*. The Eastern Part is most populous on account of the *Schoolkill*, which is boatable 100 Miles above the *Falls*. Each Front of the City, as it was laid out, was a Mile long, and two from River to River. The Street that runs along the River *Schoolkill* is three Quarters of a Mile in length. The Houses are very stately; the Wharfs and Warehouses numerous and convenient. And as *Philadelphia* flourish'd so much at first, that there were near 100 Houses and Cottages within less than a Years time, so since the Foundation of this City, *A. D.* 1682. it has made answerable Progress; the Number of Houses being computed to be 1200 now. They are generally well built, and have large Orchards and Gardens. The Land on which it stands is high and firm, and the Conveniency of Coves, Docks, and Springs, has very much contributed to the Com-

merce of this Place, where many rich Merchants now live; and we have been inform'd, some of them are so wealthy, that they keep their *Coaches*. The Town was laid out, and a Draught taken of it by Mr. *Tho. Holme*, Surveyor General of the Province, which lies now before me; it seems to be a very fair Plan, and, if it was all built, would make a great and beautiful City; the *Streets* being broad, and so long all of them, that they reach from River to River; a Compass of Ground which is large enough to make a City for all the Inhabitants of the Northern Colonies, perhaps not excluding *New-England*. Ships may ride here in 6 or 7 Fathom Water, with very good Anchorage. The Land about it is a dry, wholesom Level. All Owners of 1000 Acres of Ground and upwards, have their Houses in the two Fronts, facing the Rivers, and in the *High-street*, running from the Middle of one Front to the Middle of the other. Every Owner of 5000 Acres has about an Acre in Front; and the smaller Purchasers, about half an Acre in the backward *Streets*. By which means the least has Room enough for a House, Garden and small Orchard. The *High-street* is 100 Foot broad; so is the *Broad-street*, which is in the middle of the City, running from North to South. In the Center is a Square of 10 Acres, for the State-house, Market-house, School-house, and chief Meeting-house for the Quakers: The Lord Proprietary being of that Profession, 'tis not strange, that most of the first *English* Inhabitants were of the same Opinion. The Persecution rais'd by the *Popish* Faction and their Adherents in *England*, against *Protestant Dissenters*, was very hot when Mr. *Pen* obtain'd a Grant of this Territory, and the *Quakers* flock'd to it, as an *Azylum*, from the Rage of their Enemies. But since the glorious *Revolution*, People have transported themselves to the *Plantations*, to enrich, and not to save themselves from Injustice and Violence at home.

Men of all Principles have settled in this Place, as well as others; and there are so many Orthodox Professors, that there's a great Church in *Philadelphia*, for the Exercise of Religion, according to the Discipline of the Church of *England*; and some of them have clamour'd lately very much for an *Organ*, to the great

great Offence of the *Brethren*. We do not use this Word out of Contempt, but to avoid that of *Distinction*, which is too scandalous for a serious History. The Church here is call'd *Christ-Church*, and the Congregation is very numerous. His late Majesty was pleas'd to allow the Minister 50 *l. per Annum*, besides the voluntary Subscriptions of the Inhabitants. The Schoolmaster has also an Allowance of 30 *l. per Annum*. The Patten for them was taken out at the Charge of the Society before-mention'd. Here are besides this several Meeting-houses, as a Quaker's, Presbyterian, Anabaptist, and a *Swedish Church*. The Reverend Mr. *Evans* is now Minister of *Philadelphia*. His Assistant is Mr. *Thomas*; Schoolmaster, Mr. *Club*. There are at least 700 Persons of the Orthodox Church.

In each Quarter of this City is a Square of 8 Acres, to be for the like Uses as *Moorfields* in *London*: And in the Plan there are Eight Streets, that run from Front to Front, parallel with *High-street*, and Twenty Streets, that run cross the City from side to side; both of which are 30 Foot broad. But we cannot suppose that near a tenth Part of this Ground is taken up, considering all the eight Streets are 2 Miles, and the Twenty, one Mile long, besides the Fronts, and *High-street* and *Broad-street*. The Dock is form'd by an Inlet of the River *Delaware*, at the South Corner of the Front, and has a Bridge over it at its Entrance. Several Creeks run into the City out of the two Rivers.

Here the Assemblies and Courts of Judicature are kept, and the Trade and Business of the Province is chiefly manag'd, as in all Capitals. Here is a beautiful Key, above 200 Foot square; to which a Ship of 500 Tun may lay her Broad-side. Here are most sorts of Trades and Mechanics, as well as Merchants and Planters; and considering 'tis the youngest Capital in our *English America*, 'tis far from being the least considerable. It gives Name to the Country about it; for the remaining part of *Philadelphia* is divided into Shires, there being 5 more besides *Philadelphia County*, as *Buckingham*, *Chester*, *Newcastle*, *Kent*, and *Sussex*.

At a little Distance from *Philadelphia*, is a pleasant Hill, very well Wooded, on the Banks of the *Schoolkill*,

kill, call'd *Fair Mount*. *Wioco*, half a Mile from the Town, is a *Swedish* Settlement; where the People of that Nation have a *Meeting-house* for religious Worship: They have another at *Tenecum*. But whether these Places are in *Buckingham* or *Philadelphia* County, we have not learn'd. Indeed where there are so few Inhabitants, there's more Vanity and Ostentation in dividing the Country into Shires, than real Use and Necessity; and if we do it, 'tis purely out of Complaisance to the Humour of the People.

Within Land lies *Radnor* or *Welsh* Town, finely situated, and well built, containing near 50 Families. In this Place is a Congregation of Church of *England-Men*, but no settled Minister. In these two Counties are several other Creeks; as *Darby* Creek, &c. *Amorstand* lies between that and another nameless Creek. From whence, passing by *Ridloyer*, we come to *Chester* Town, which also gives Name to a County. The Number of Families in this Division, as well as in the others, I have not heard; but by the Computation of the Number of Souls in all the Province, they cannot exceed 200. This Place is also call'd *Uplands*, and has a Church, dedicated to *St. Paul*, with a numerous Congregation of Orthodox Professors, whose Minister is *Mr. Hen. Nicholls*; his Income paid by the before-mention'd Society, 50 *l.* a Year. They are about erecting a School here, dependent on the Minister. There's another little Town at the Mouth of a Creek, call'd *Chichester*. Below that is a great Creek, which we may be sure belong'd to the *Dutch*, by the Name that is given it, *Brandywine*. Here's Room enough to lay up the whole Navy Royal of *England*, there being from four to eight Fathom Water in this Creek. Between *Brandywine* and *Christina*, is an *Iron Mill*: What Advantage it has been to the *Proprietors* we know not, and suppose we should have heard of it, had it been considerable.

Next to *Brandywine* is *Christina* Creek; where, when the *Swedes* inhabited this and the other Side of the *Delaware*, they had a Town which serv'd them instead of a *Capital*, and the Governour resided, if we may give Credit to *Monsieur Robbe*, in his Account of, *La Nouvelle Suede*, which included part of

this Country, and part of the *Ferseys*. This is a very large Creek ; but the Village is inconsiderable. The *Swedes* had however a Church here not long ago. Between this and the next Creek is *Newcastle Town* ; from whence the adjoining County takes its Name. 'Tis inhabited by *English* and *Dutch*, and is the next Town for Bigness and Trade to *Philadelphia*, containing 300 Families. Here's a Church built, and a Congregation, most of which are *Welsh*. Mr. *Ross* was lately Minister. The *Dutch* have a Church in this Town.

Next to it is *St. George's*, then *Black-bird Creek* ; and over against it lies a little Island, call'd *Road Island*, in the *Delaware*, where there is in that Place 10 Fathom Water. *Apaquamany* Creek is honour'd with the Name of a River. There's another Creek, so call'd, and they are distinguish'd from one another by the Name of *North* and *South*. The Inhabitants have built a Church, but 'tis not endow'd or supply'd with a Minister. Passing by *Bombays Point*, and *Duck Creek*, we come to *Kent County* ; in which are *Cranebrook*, *Dover*, *Murden*, and *Mispellivin* Creeks. At *Dover* is a Church of *England* Congregation ; the Minister, Mr. *Thomas Crawford*, who has 50 *l.* a Year, paid by the Society. In the Bay of *Delaware*, which is here about 7 Leagues over, *Cedar Creek* is by some dignify'd with the Name of a River. 'Tis the first in *Sussex County*, where we find *Plum Point* and *Lewis Creek*.

The Villages hereabouts are very thin, the *English* inhabiting that part of the Province that lies on the upper Rivers ; and since their Settlements in *Pennsylvania*, the *Dutch* and *Swedes* have made very little or no Progress in their Plantations, whereas the *English* have encreas'd so much, that there are now above 25000 Souls of that Nation in this Colony ; and their Numbers are yearly augmented. About three Miles below *Lewis's Creek* is the Line of *Partition*, which divides *Pennsylvania* from *Maryland*. The Society of Adventurers we shall have Occasion to speak of hereafter, had a *Whalery* near *Lewis's Town*, but this will more properly be mention'd, when we come to treat of the Trade of the Place.

We shall avoid needless Repetitions ; and when we have given the Reader an Idea of the *Indians* in any one Part of *America*, of the Soil, Climate, and Trade, if that Idea will serve for any other; we shall be glad to save him the Trouble of reading it under another Article. But tho 'tis probable, the *New-York* and *Virginian Indians* have a great deal of Agreement, as to their Language, Manners, and Customs, with those of *Pensylvania*, as the Climate and Soil of the latter agree with those of *Virginia* and *New-York* ; yet we having a very particular Account of these things written by Mr. *Pen* himself, in a Letter, dated the 16th of *August*, 1683. at *Philadelphia*, 'twill not be unwelcome to the Curious, to see what he has said of this Country. To which we shall add, what others have also written, or told us, as far as we could depend on their Authority.

Climate  
and Soil.

We shall begin with the Climate and Soil, and treat first of the Climate. We see by its Latitude that 'tis at a like Distance from the Sun with *Naples* in *Italy*, and *Montpellier* in *France*. The Air is sweet and clear, the Heavens serene, and Mr. *Pen*, who had seen the Southern Parts of *France*, compares the Face of them in *Pensylvania* to that in those Provinces. The *Fall* begins about the 24th of *October*, and lasts till the Beginning of *December*, being like a mild *Spring* in *England*. Frosty Weather and extream cold Seasons have been known there, as in the Year 1681. but the Sky was always clear, and the Air dry, cold, piercing, and hungry. The River *Delaware* was then frozen over, tho it is near two Miles broad at *Philadelphia*. From *March* to *June* the *Spring* lasts, without *Gusts* of Wind, refresh'd with gentle Showers, and a fine Sky ; but the Weather there, as well as in *England*, is more inconstant than in the other Seasons. The Heats are extraordinary in the *Summer* Months, *July*, *August*, and *September*, but mitigated by cool *Breezes*. The Wind is South-West during the Summer, but generally North-Westerly, Spring, Fall, and Winter. If Easterly or Southerly Winds raises Mists, Foggs, or Vapours, in two Hours time they are blown away.

The Soil of this Tract of Land is various : In some Places 'tis a yellow and black Sand, poor and rich ;



in others, a loomy Gravel; in others, a fast fat Earth, like the *Vales* in *England*, especially by Inland Brooks and Rivers, where the Lands are generally three to one richer than those that lye by Navigable Rivers. There's also another Soil in many parts of the Province, as a black Hazel Mould on a Stony bottom. The Earth is not only fruitful and fat, but easy to be clear'd, because the Roots of the Trees lye almost on the Surface of the Ground.

We have already observ'd how *Pensylvania* abounds *Rivers* in Rivers, the Waters of which are good, both the Rivers and Brooks having gravelly and stony Bottoms. There are also *Mineral Waters*, that operate in the same manner with those of *Barnet* and *North-hall*. These Springs are about two Miles from *Philadelphia*.

The Natural Product of the Country, of *Vegetables*, *Product*. are Trees, Fruits, Plants, Flowers. The Trees of *Trees*. most Note are the Black Walnut, Cedar, Cypress, Chestnut, Poplar, Gumwood, Hickory, Sassafras, Ash, Beech, and Oak of several sorts, as Red, White and Black, *Spanish* Chestnut, and Swamp, the most durable of all. Here are some excellent Shrubs, as Shumack, Snakeroot, Sassaforella, *Calamus Arramaticus*, Jallop and Spruce Cranberries.

The Fruits that grow naturally in the Woods, are *Fruits*. the White and Black Mulberry, Chestnuts, Wallnuts, Plums, Strawberries, Hurtleberries, and Grapes of several kinds. The great Red Grape, call'd the *Fox-Grape*, is commended by Mr. *Pen*; and he thinks it would make excellent Wine, if not so sweet, yet little inferior to *Frontiniac*; it tastes like that Grape, but differs in Colour. There's a *White* kind of Muscadel, and a little *Black* Grape, like the Cluster-Grape in *England*. Peaches are prodigiously plentiful in this Province, and as good as any in *England*, except the *Newington* Peach.

The artificial Produce of the Country is Wheat, *Corn*. Barley, Oats, Rye, Pease, Beans, Squashes, Pumkins, Water-Melons, Mus-Melons, Apples, Pears, Plums, Cherries, Apricocks, Carrots, Turnips, Parsnips, Cabbiges, Colworts, Potatoes, Radishes as bigg as Parsnips, Onions, Cucumbers; as also Quinces, Currants, *Indian* Corn, Hemp, Flax, and Tobacco, of which more hereafter. As

As to the Fertility of the Soil, this Instance of it is sufficient to prove it: One Mr. *Edward Jones*, whose Plantation was on the *Schoolkill* in the Infancy of the Colony, had, with ordinary Cultivation, for one Grain of *English* Barley, seventy Stalks and Ears of that Corn. 'Tis common from one Bushel sown here to reap 40, often 50, and sometimes 60. Three Pecks of Wheat sows an Acre.

*Animals.*

Of Living Creatures, Fish, Fowl, and Beasts of the Wood, there are divers sorts, some for Food and Profit, and some for Profit only. For Food as well as Profit, are the Elk, as big as a small Ox, Deer bigger than ours in *England*, Beaver, Racoon, Rabbits, Squirrels; and some eat young Bear, and commend it, but 'tis likely their *Tasts* are as barbarous as their *Food*. Here's Plenty of Oxen, Cows, and Sheep, in-somuch that some Farmers have 3 and 400 in a Flock. The Creatures for Profit only, by Skin or Fur, or for Carriage and Sale, are the Wild-Cat, Panther, Otter, Wolf, Fox, Fisher, Minx, Musk-Rat; and, to name the noblest last, Horses, some very good and shapely enough, which are exported to *Barbadoes*, and is one of the best Merchandise ship'd off from hence for that, or the other Sugar Islands.

*Fowl.*

Of Fowl. Here is the Land-Turtle, (40 or 50 Pound Weight) Pheasants, Heath-Birds, Pidgeons, Patridges, and Black-Birds in such Flocks, that they even darken the Air. A certain Inhabitant of the Province writes, That Pidgeons settle in such prodigious Multitudes, *they make the large Arms of Trees bend ready to break, and more have been kill'd at a Shot, than there were Corns of Shot in the Peice.* Of Water-Fowl, here are Swans, Geese, White and Grey, Brands, Ducks, and Teal, Snipe, and Curleus in great Numbers; but the Duck and Teal excel any of their kind in other Countries.

See Will. Bradford's Letter, printed in 1685.

*Fish.*

This, as well as other *American* Provinces, abounds with Fish, which the Bay and River of *Delaware* most plentifully supply them with. Sturgeon, Herrings, Roch, Shat, Catshead, Sheepshead, Eles, Smelts, and Peach are caught in Abundance in the Bay, and in the River below the *Freshes*; and Trout in the Inland Rivers. Oysters, Crabbs, Cockles, Conks,

Conks, and Muscles are plenty here. Some Oysters are 6 Inches long, and Cockles as big as Stewing-Oysters, with which a rich Broth is made; but we hope the Labour, Temperance, Continnence, Health and Virtue of this People render the use of such *Broths* very rare. *Whale-Fishing* has been attempted here by the Society, of which I shall say more in its due Place: A Company of *Whalers* were employ'd, Whales caught, and Oyl made; but that Trade was of no long Continuance, it being found to be expensive and uncertain.

There are divers Medicinal Plants to cure Swel-*Plants.* lings, Burnings, Cuts, &c. and several that smell very pleasantly, as the Wild Mirtle and others.

The Woods are adorn'd with Flowers, excel-*Flowers.* lent both for Colour, Greatness, Figure, and Variety.

The ancient Inhabitants of this Territory come *Indians.* next to be treated of. The *Indians* are generally tall, streight, well-built, and of singular Proportion. Of Complexion black, but by Design, as the Gypsies in *England.* They anoint themselves with Bears Fat clarify'd; and using no Defence against the Sun or Weather, their Skins are swarthy. Their Eye is little and black. As to their Faces, Mr. Pen says, *The thick Lip and flat Nose, so frequent with the East-Indians and Blacks, are not common to them; for I have seen as comely European-like Faces among them of both Sexes, as on our Side the Sea; and truly an Italian Complexion has not much more of the White, and the Noses of several of them have as much of the Roman.*

Their Language is lofty, yet narrow; the Accent and Emphasis of some of their Words are Great and Sweet, as *Octorockon, Rancocas, Orieton, Shakameron, Poquessin,* all Names of Places, and very sounding. Then for Sweetness, there are their *Anna* Mother, *Issimus* Brother, *Netap* Friend, *Usque Oret* very good, *Pone* Bread, *Metse* Eat, *matta no, hatta* to have, *paya* to come. *Tamare, Secane, Menanse, Secatereus,* the Names of *Persons.* Their Phrase for *I have not,* is *Metta ne hatta, not I have.*

As to their Manners and Customs, they wash their Children in Water as soon as born, and plunge them often in the Rivers while they are young, to harden them.

them. They wrap them up in a Clout, and lay them on a streight thin Board, a little more than the Length or Breadth of the Child, which they swaddle fast on the Board to make it streight: This is the Reason that all *Indians* have flat Heads. Thus they carry them at their Backs. At nine Months End the Children commonly go. They wear only a small Clout round their Waist, till they are big. The Boys fish till they are fifteen, then they hunt; and having given some Proofs of their Manhood by a good Return of Skins, may marry, else 'tis a Shame to think of a Wife. The Girls live with their Mothers help hough the Ground, plant Corn, and carry Burthens; and, says my Author, *They do well to use them to that young, which they must do when they are old: for the Wives are the true Servants of the Husbands, otherwise the Men are very affectionate to them.* Women marry at 13 or 14, Men at 17 or 18. Their Houses are Matts, or Barks of Trees set on Poles, like an *English* Barn, out of the Power of the Winds, for they are hardly higher than a Man. They lye on Reeds or Grass. When they travel, they lodge in the Woods, about a great Fire, with the Mantle or Duffils they wear by Day wrapt about them. Their Food is *Indian* Corn, which they dress several ways Beans and Pease, Flesh and Fish out of the Woods and Rivers. They treat the *Europeans*, who come among them, very civilly, and give them the best Place and first Cut. They sit mostly on the Ground, close to their Heels, their Legs upright; and after having saluted their European Visiters or Visiter with an *Itah*, or *Good be to you*, perhaps say not a Word more, but observe all Passages. They are pleas'd if you give them any thing, but never beg; and if they are not ask'd to eat, go away sullenly.

They conceal their Resentments as much as they can, and are suppos'd to do it on Account of the Revenge that has been practis'd among them; for in both their Resentments and their Revenge they are not exceeded by the *Italians*; an Instance of which happen'd while Mr. *Pen* was in the Country: A King's Daughter thinking her self slighted by her Husband, in suffering another Woman to lie down between them, rose up, went out, pluck'd a Root out of the

Ground.

Ground, and eat it, upon which she immediately dy'd. Her Husband made an Offering to her Kindred according to Custom, for an Atonement, and Liberty of Marriage. At the same time two other Husbands did it to the Kindred of their Wives that dy'd a natural Death: For till Widowers have thus aton'd, they must not marry again. Some of the young Women sell their last Favours before Marriage, to raise Money for a Portion; but after they are marry'd, they remain chaste, and never admit their Husband's Embraces when they are with Child. In the Month they touch no Meat, and eat with a Stick, lest they should defile it, nor admit their Husbands till that Time is expir'd.

May not some *European* Wives learn of these *Barbarians*; and is it not Vanity in any one People to call another barbarous, because their Customs differ? They are very liberal, insomuch that if an *European* gives any of them a fine Gown or Coat, it may pass twenty Hands before it sticks. They are the merriest Creatures living, feasting and dancing perpetually. Wealth circulates like Blood among them; all Parts partake; yet they are exact Observers of Property. They covet little, because they want but little. If they are ignorant of our Pleasures, they also know nothing of our Pains. Their Hunting, Fishing, and Fowling feed them, and their Sports are their Subsistence. They eat twice a Day, Morning and Evening. Their Seats and Tables are on the Ground. They have learnt Drunkenness of the *Europeans*, and are wretched Objects when drunk. When they are sick they drink a Teran, or Decoction of some Roots in Spring-Water; and if they eat Flesh, it must be of the Female of any Creature. They have a great Opinion of *Cold Baths* and *Sweatings*: An Instance of which we shall report, it being very extraordinary, and the Truth of it is not to be question'd; for the Gentleman who told it to us, was the very Person that saw it. Mr. *Pen*, in the Year 1683. travelling into the *Back* Countries, to make Discoveries, came to a Wigwam, where the Captain General of that Nation liv'd; for they have such an Officer, besides their Sachem or King, who commands the Army, and leads them to Battle:

The Captain General happen'd to be at that time ill of a Fever, and was about to try their usual Remedy to cure himself. His Wife to that end had prepar'd a little Bagnio upon the Ground, without Doors, into which he crept. This Bagnio was like an Oven; and his Wife, to heat it, put several great hot Stones on each side of it, which gave the Man an extream Sweat, while he sat or lay along in this Oven or Bagnio. She made a Hole through the Ice of the River, it being frosty Weather, and the Bagnio on the River's Bank. This Hole or Passage she dug with an Axe, the Ice being very thick. When the Passage was prepar'd, the Man came out of his Oven, the Drops of Sweat running down his Face and Body, leapt into the River, and duckt himself twice. He then crept through his Oven, and so went to his Wigwam, where laying himself down by a Fire, he gradually cool'd himself, and was afterwards as well as ever.

Thus far we have told this Story, to shew what Opinion the *Indians* have of *Sweating* and *Cold Baths*: The remaining part of it is to give the Reader an Idea of their Manners and Understanding; and being assur'd by Mr. *Pen* himself, that the following Relation is true, we recommend it as such to the World; for we cannot have better Authority.

While the Captain General was in the Bagnio, he first sang all the Acts of the Nation he was of, to divert him from the Troublesomeness of the Heat; then those of his Ancestors, who were Nobles and Generals in the Country; and last of all, his own. After which he fell into this Rhapsody: *What is the Matter with us Indians, that we are thus sick in our own Air, and these Strangers well? 'Tis as if they were sent hither to inherit our Land in our steads; but the Reason is plain, they love the great God, and we do not.* A Reflection very surprizing in a Barbarian; but Mr. *Pen* heard it, and attested it to be Matter of Fact to the Historian.

If they die, they are bury'd, Men or Women, with their Apparel; and the nearest of Kin throw some valuable Thing into their Graves, as Tokens of their Love. Their Mourning is blacking of their Faces, which they continue a whole Year. They  
are

are nice in the Choice of the Graves of their Dead ; for, lest they should be lost by Time, they pick off the Grass that grows upon them. They believe a God and Immortality, saying, *There is a great King, who made them, who dwells in a glorious Country, to the Southward of them ; and the Souls of the Good shall go thither, where they shall live again.*

Their Worship consists of *Sacrifices* and *Songs*. They feast one another in Harvest-Time, and invite the *Europeans* sometimes. Mr. *Pen* was at one of their Entertainments, on a green Bank by a Spring, under shady Trees. There were 20 Bucks kill'd, with hot Cakes of new Corn, Wheat and Beans, which they make up in a square Form ; then they dance. Those that go to these Feasts must carry a small Present in their Money ; it may be six Pence, which is made of the Bone of a Fish: The Black is with them as *Gold*, the White as *Silver* ; and they call it all *Wampum*.

Their Government is by Kings or Sachems, and chose by Succession, but always of the Mother's side, yet no Woman inherits. The Reason they render for this way of Descent, is, that their Issue may not be spurious. Every King has his Council, consisting of all the old and wise Men of his Nation, which perhaps is two Hundred. Nothing of Moment is undertaken, be it War, Peace, selling of Land, or Traffick, without advising with them ; and which is more, with the young Men too. 'Tis admirable, says my Author, *to consider how powerful the Kings are, and how they move by the Breath of their People.* And in those Monarchies where the true Ends of Government are maintain'd, no Power will be thought too much for the Prince, nor no Privileges too great for the People. The Simplicity of these Indian Monarchies give us a better Idea of the Origin of Power, than all that the *Filmers*, the *Lesleys*, and the infamous Supporters of Tyranny have shewn us in their *Sophistical Arguments*.

Their Justice is pecuniary ; in case of any wrong or evil Fact, be it Murder it self, they atone by *Feasts* and Presents of their *Wampum* ; which is proportion'd to the Quality of the Offence, or Person injur'd, or of the Sex they are of: For in case they kill a Woman,

man, they pay double ; and the Reason they render, is, *That she breeds Children, which Men cannot do.* This Argument is as false as simple ; for she could not breed them if a Man did not get them, and his Life is therefore as valuable as the Woman's. They seldom fall out if sober ; and if drunk, they forgive it, saying, *It was the Drink, and not the Man that abus'd them.*

Mr. *Pen* believes them to be of *Jewish* Race, but that Supposition is too chimerical, and we should not much mend the Matter, if we repeated the Arguments that some make use of to vindicate this Conjecture.

Their Way of living is simple, but nasty ; and we should wonder if they had learnt any Delicacy of the *New Comers*. They have been very civil and friendly to the *English*, who never lost Man, Woman, or Child by them ; which neither the Colony of *Maryland* nor that of *Virginia* can say, no more than the great Colony of *New-England*. This Friendship and Civility of the *Pensylvanian* Indians are imputed to Mr. *Pen*, the Proprietary's extream Humanity and Bounty to them, he having laid out some Thousands of Pounds to instruct, support and oblige them. There are 10 Indian Nations within the Limits of his Province ; and the Number of Souls of these Barbarians are computed to be about 6000.

We have met with very few Events relating to this Colony : They have had no Wars either with the *Indians* or *French*, and consequently little Action has happen'd here. Mr. *Pen* having obtain'd the before-mention'd Patent, invited several Persons to purchase Lands of them, as he, it seems, purchas'd of the *Indians*. The *Swedes*, who had encroach'd upon the *Dutch*, the first Planters here, as well as at *New-York*, settl'd upon or near the *Freshes* of the River *Delaware*. The *Finns*, or Inhabitants of *Finland*, were part of the *Swedish* Colony, and they apply'd themselves chiefly to Husbandry: The King of *Sweden*, to protect his Subjects in these Parts, appointed a Governour here, who had often Disputes with the Governour that presid'd over the *Dutch*. The latter apply'd themselves mostly to Traffick, living upon or near the Bay ; and by the Neighbourhood of *New-York* were



were too powerful for the *Swedes*, who finding they cou'd not maintain their Ground, submitted to their stronger Neighbours. Accordingly *John Rizeing* the *Swedish* Governour made a formal Surrender of the Country, *A. D.* 1655. to *Peter Styresant*, Governour for the States of *Holland*. After which this Province continu'd subject to that Republick till the English drove the Dutch out of *New Amsterdam*, or *New York*, and made the Possession of these Territories easy to Mr. *Pen*, when he had obtain'd a Grant of them: For both *Swedes* and *Dutch* are under his Government.

There were a few English here before this Gentleman sent over the first Adventurers under his Patent; their Governour was Col. *William Markham* his Nephew, to whom both *Dutch* and *Swedes* submitted; and when the Lord Proprietary came thither himself, he sent this Character of them to *England*; ' They are a plain, strong, industrious People, yet have made no great Progress in Culture or Propagation of Fruit-Trees, as if they desir'd rather to have enough, than Plenty or Traffick. The Indians made them the more careless by furnishing them with the means of Profit, as Skins and Furs, for Rum, and such strong Liquors. As they are a People proper and strong of Body, so they have fine Children, and almost every House full; 'tis rare to find one of them without three or four Boys, and as many Girls; some have six, seven, and eight Sons, and few young Men are more sober and laborious. The Number of these Inhabitants of *Swedish* or *Dutch* Extraction, may be about 3000 Souls. Mr. *Pen*, before he went over to *Pennsylvania*, sold 20000 Acres to a certain Society, Mr. *Nicholas Moor*, Mr. *James Claypool*, Mr. *Phillip Ford*, and others; who had a whole Street, and one side of a Street, laid out for them in *Philadelphia*; and 400 Acres of Land in the City-Liberties. This Society erected a Tannery, a Saw-Mill, a Glass-House, and a Whalery. They had a President in *London*: Their Officers were a President, Deputy, Treasurer, Agent, Secretary, Surveyor, 12 Committee-Men, Chirur-gions, Factors, Clerks, Overseers, Messengers, Porters, Butchers, Water-men, Car-men, and other inferior

Col. Wil.  
Markham  
Deputy Go-  
vernour.

ferior Mechanicks and Labourers. And having mention'd this Sale of 20000 Acres, 'twill not be improper to report what were the Proprietary's Conditions of Sale: *Buyers* purchas'd after the Rate of 20 *l.* for a thousand Acres, and 1 *s.* or the Value of it yearly, for 100 Acres. *Renters* were to pay 1 *s.* an Acre yearly, not exceeding 200 Acres; and Servants were to have 50 Acres when their Times were expir'd, whether Men or Women. The Owner was also allow'd 50 Acres a Head for such Servants.

We have hinted before, there were few English when Mr. *Pen* went over to take on him the Government of his Province, which was in the Year 1681. He carry'd along with him, and there came to him in the first Year near 2000 Souls, and before the New-Comers built Houses, they ran up Huts for their Reception. These Huts were generally 30 Foot long, and 18 Foot broad, with a Partition near the Middle, and another to divide one end of the House into two small Rooms. For this use they took eight Trees of about 16 Inches square, cut off ten Posts of about 15 Foot long, upon which the House stood, and 4 Pieces, 2 of 20 and 2 of 18 Foot long, for Plates to lay a-top of those Posts. They had 10 *Giests* of 20 Foot long, to bear the *Lofts*, and 2 false Plates of 30 Foot long to lie on the Ends of the *Giests*, for the *Rafters* to be fix'd upon. There were 12 Pair of *Rafters* of about 20 Foot, to bear the Roof of the House, with Windbeams, Braces, Studs, &c. They us'd *Clapboard* for the Covering of the House-Ends and Sides, and for the Loft; this *Clapboard* is riv'd Feather edg'd 5  $\frac{1}{2}$  Foot long, and if well drawn, lies close and smooth. They lin'd the Lodging-Room with it, and fill'd it up between, which made it very warm. The Lower *Flowr* was Earth, the Upper *Clapboard*. But these mean Dwellings serv'd only till the *Pensylvanians* were settled a little: And then having fell'd their Trees, clear'd and cultivated their Ground, rais'd Stocks, and planted a great part of their Purchases, they began to leave their Cottages for stately as well as convenient Houses, and to imitate the Inhabitants of the other Colonies in the Grandeur of their Buildings. As soon as Mr. *Pen* arriv'd, he enter'd upon Treaties with the Indian Kings

Kings to buy Land. The Natives being few, and not able to cultivate or defend a great Country, which the English cou'd easily have taken from them, were willing enough to part with their Lands for a small Consideration: Twenty Miles of Ground might have been purchas'd for a Trifle. But when the English flock'd thither, these Indians were not so ignorant, but they knew their Interest, that the Land would be wanted, and consequently worth more; accordingly they rais'd the Price ten times as much as it was at first. The Proprietary, in the Letter before-mentioned, gives us an Account of the Audience he had of the King, which 'tis probable the Reader will be desirous to be acquainted with, there being something in it worthy his Curiosity: ' I have had Occasion, says Mr. Pen, to be in Council with them, upon Treaties for Land; and to adjust the Terms of Trade, their Order is thus; The King sits in the middle of an Half-Moon, and has his Council, the Old and Wise, on each hand; behind them, or at a little distance sits the younger Fry in the same Figure. Having consulted and resolv'd their Business, the King commanded one of them to speak to me; He stood up, came to me, and in his King's Name saluted me, taking me by the Hand, and telling me, *He was order'd by his King to speak to me, and that now it was not he, but the King that spoke, because what he should say was the King's Mind.* He first pray'd me to excuse them, that they had not comply'd with me in a former Meeting. *He fear'd there might be some Fault in the Interpreter, being neither Indian nor English; besides it was the Indian Custom to deliberate before they resolve; and that if the young People and Owners of the Land had been as ready as he, I had not met with so much Delay.* Having thus introduc'd his Matter, he fell to the Bounds of the Land they had agreed to dispose of, and to the Price. During the Time this Person spoke, not a Man of them was observ'd to whisper or smile. The Old were Grave, the Young Reverend in their Deportment. When they spoke, which was but seldom, 'twas warmly and elegantly. I have never seen more natural Sagacity, considering them without the Help of Tradition; and he will de-

' serve the Name of Wise that is too hard for them in  
 ' any Treaty about a Thing they understand. When  
 ' the Purchase was agreed, *Great Promises past be-*  
 ' *tween us of Kindness and good Neighbourhood, and*  
 ' *that the Indians and English must live in Love as long*  
 ' *as the Sun gave Light.* After which another made a  
 ' Speech to the Indians, in the Name of all the Sa-  
 ' *chems or Kings, first to tell them what was*  
 ' *done, next to charge and command them, To love*  
 ' *the Christians, and particularly to live in Peace with*  
 ' *me, and the People under my Government; That ma-*  
 ' *ny Governours had been in the River, but that no Go-*  
 ' *vernour had come himself to live and stay here before;*  
 ' *and having now such an one that had treated them*  
 ' *well, they should never do him or his any wrong.* At  
 ' every Sentence of which they shouted, and said  
 ' *Amen* in their way. By Governour living himself  
 among them, they meant Proprietary: For they had  
 had several Dutch and Swedish Governours in Dela-  
 ware River. The Land thus bought was enter'd up-  
 on by the Under-Purchasers, who purchas'd by the  
 100 or the 1000 Acres what the Proprietary bought by  
 Miles. When the Country began to be a little plan-  
 ted, almost as far as the Bay's Mouth, 'twas laid  
 out into the six Counties we have spoken of, which  
 with the chief Towns or Villages chose Representa-  
 tives in the Assembly. For we must observe that by  
 the Constitutions in the Patent, the Proprietary was  
 impower'd, with the Consent of the People, to make  
 any Laws for the Publick Good. These Constituti-  
 ons were, *That the Governour and People have a Le-*  
*gislative Power, so that no Law can be made, nor Mo-*  
*ney rais'd, but by the Consent of the Inhabitants;*  
*That the Rights and Freedom of England be in Force*  
*there; That making no Law against Allegiance, the Go-*  
*vernour and People might enact what Laws they pleas'd*  
*for the Good, Prosperity and Security of the Province,*  
*&c.* All the Inhabitants, as well Swedes and Dutch,  
 as English, were very well pleas'd with Mr. Pen's com-  
 ing thither in Person, and the Foreigners receiv'd  
 him with as much Joy and Respect as his own Coun-  
 try-men. He held two General Assemblies, and with  
 such Unanimity and Dispatch, that tho they sat but  
 three Weeks, they past 70 Laws without one Dis-  
 sent

sent in any material thing. They presented the *Proprietary* with an Impost on certain Goods imported and exported, which Mr. *Pen* very generously remitted to the Province, and the Traders to it: People now went from all Parts of *England* to *Pensylvania*; as from *London*, *Leverpool*, and *Bristol* especially. For the West of *England* abounding with Dissenters, and with a lewd Herd of Persecutors, more than other Counties, they shipt themselves in that Port in great Numbers for *Philadelphia*. In the Year 1682. Mr. *Thomas Goldney* and Mr. *John Duddleston*, two Traders in that City, fitted out the *Unicorn*, a Ship of 300 Tuns for this Voyage, to carry Passengers and Goods to the new Colony. The Enemies of which reported, Mr. *Pen* was not only dead, but that he dy'd a *Jesuit*, in his Government. Upon which Mr. *Ford* his Agent in *England*, gave publick Notice in the *Gazette*, of his being alive and in good Health. The Answer Mr. *Pen* wrote to his Friends when he heard what was reported of him, is very ingenious. *I find some Persons, says he, have had so little Wit, and so much Malice, as to report my Death; and to mend the Matter, dead a Jesuit too! One might have reasonably hop'd that this Distance, like Death, wou'd have been a Protection against Spite and Envy; and indeed Absence being a kind of Death, ought alike to secure the Name of the Absent as the Dead, because they are equally unable as such to defend themselves. But they that intend Mischief, do not use to follow good Rules to effect it. However to the great Sorrow and Shame of the Inventors, I am still alive, and no Jesuit: I perceive many frivolous and idle Stories have been invented since my Departure from England, which perhaps by this time are no more alive than I am dead.* He was visited by the Kings, Queens, and Great Men of the Country, and settled the Affairs of the Province with equal Wisdom and Dispatch. He establish'd Courts of Justice in every County with proper Officers, as Justices of the Peace, Sheriffs, Clerks, Constables, &c. Which Courts were to be holden every two Months. But to prevent Law-Suits and Debates among this peaceable People, there were three *Peace-makers* chosen by every County-Court, in the nature of common *Arbitrators*, to hear and end Differences between  
Man

Man and Man ; and every *Spring* and *Fall* there's an Orphans Court in each County, to inspect and regulate the Affairs of *Orphans* and *Widows*.

Things being thus settled, the Colony thriv'd apace, and Merchants came thither to drive on a Trade with the Sugar Islands, which is very advantagious ; for to those Islands the *Pensylvanians* send Corn, Beef, Pork, Fish, Pipe-Staves, take their Growth, and carry it for *England*, and return with *English* Goods. Horses and live Cattle they also export to the Southern Plantations, and send their Furs to *England*, where, or in other Parts of *Europe*, they find a quick Vent. Here are other Commodities, as Hides, Tallow, Sheep, and Wooll, all in Demand in the Sugar Islands. The Indians help them to their Furs, as Peltry, Minx, Racoons, and Martins ; with which profitable Trades this Colony flourish'd as much as any ; and Mr. *Pen*, before he came away, might muster 2500 Fighting Men, there being above 6000 Souls in all, *A. D.* 1684. so much was the Colony encreas'd in his Time. 'Tis true, he carry'd over with him 2000 Souls in 18 or 20 Ships, which was a noble Foundation for a Settlement, and some of them were Persons of Estates, who fled from the Persecution at home, to enjoy the Peace of their Consciences, and the Privileges of the Laws of this Province ; the Government of which was then a sort of Republick ; and an excellent Form was drawn up by that Great Lawyer, *Sir Will. Jones*, and other famous Men of the Long Robe. The Government was indeed, as that of other Colonies, by Governour, Council, and Assembly ; but the Council was not nam'd by the Proprietary ; the Inhabitants of every Shire chose two or more for each, as they did Knights of the Shire : Neither had the Assembly Power to debate Laws, but the Constitution gave them the negative Voice. The Governour and Council drew up what Laws they thought were for the Good of the Colony, and having drawn them up, affix'd them in a publick Place, where all the People might see them, and judge of them, as to their Necessity or Convenience ; and the Assembly, whom they chose, pass'd or reject'd them arbitrarily, as the Governour in other Provinces rejects or passes Laws there ; so that the Constitution of *Pensylvania* was at first

first *Democratical*. Mr. Pen had all the Laws so fram'd, that no Difference was made in Opinion, where Property made no Difference. All Elections were by Ballot, and the Form of this Government, which was founded on what was excellent in the best *German* and other foreign Constitutions of Common-Wealths, was such, that every Man's Property, Privileges, and Liberties, Spiritual and Temporal, were perfectly secur'd: But such is the Weakness of Human Nature, that being it self imperfect, it cannot relish Perfection; and the nearer any thing approaches to it in this World, the more likely it is to disgust People. This Form was too fine for the heavy Intellects of some of the gross *Vulgar*. They valu'd themselves, and with good Reason in the main, on being *Englishmen*, and scorn'd, as they said, to give their Opinions and Votes in the dark; they would do nothing which they durst not own, and their Fore-heads and Voices should always agree with one another. Thus they clamour'd against that Part of the Constitution which secur'd the rest, the Election by *Ballot*, and never gave over clamouring till it was abolish'd, and the first Order of Government broken in upon in the most essential Parts of it. Upon which *Factions* of course commenc'd, and Discontents and Tumults follow'd, to the great Disturbance and Detriment of the Colony: But this happening afterwards, should also have been reported in a later part of this History, if we had not been desirous to give one View of this Constitution, and of the Fate that attended it.

Mr. Pen stay'd in *Pennsylvania* two Years, and would not then have remov'd to *England*, had not the Persecution against the Dissenters rag'd so violently, that he could not think of enjoying Peace in *America*, while his Brethren in *England* were so cruelly dealt with in *Europe*. He knew he had an Interest in the Court of *England*, and was willing to employ it for the Safety, Ease, and Welfare of his Friends; so having made a League of Amity with 19 *Indian Nations*, between them and all the *English* in *America*, having establish'd good Laws, and seen his Capital so well inhabited, that there were then near 300 Houses, and 2500 Souls in it, besides 20 other Townships, he return'd to *England*, leaving *William Mark-*  
ham,

Thomas  
Lloyd,  
Esq; Pre-  
sident.

ham, Esq; Secretary; Mr. *Thomas Holmes*, Surveyor General; and the Administration in the Hands of the Council, whose President was *Thomas Lloyd*, Esq; who by Virtue of his Office held the Government several Years, tho he had no Commission then to be Deputy or Lieutenant Governour; Mr. *Pen* kept the chief Government always himself, as Lord Proprietary.

What Service this Gentleman did the *Quakers*, in King *James's* Reign, and how far that Prince gave him his Ear, is well known to all that are acquainted with the History of those times, still fresh in our Memories.

Colonel  
Fletcher,  
Govenour

Mr. *Pen's* Enemies were very free of their Scandal, and stuck at no Calumny to blacken him after the Revolution. There was great Appearance of his having been a Favourite in the preceding Reign, and 'twas not likely he should be one in the next; however, whether he was not too severely dealt with to be treated as an Enemy, let the impartial Reader judge. His Prerogative of appointing a Governour in *Pensylvania* was taken from him, and his Majesty King *William* the III<sup>d</sup> gave a Commission to Col. *Fletcher*, to be Governour of this Province, about the Year 1690. which Post he enjoy'd two Years, and then Mr. *Pen*, whose Innocence of the things laid to his Charge began to be better known, recover'd his Right of nominating a Person to govern his Colony, and he accordingly appointed Capt. *Blackwell*, who had been formerly Pay-Master of the Army in *England*, to be Deputy Governour of *Pensylvania*. This Gentleman's Son, Sir *Lambert Blackwell*, was lately Envoy extraordinary from her Majesty to several Courts in *Italy*.

Captain  
Blackwell,  
Govenour

Capt. *Blackwell* govern'd the Province with equal Prudence and Success; it now thriv'd apace, its Commerce and Inhabitants increas'd, and about this time the *Pensylvanians* began to fall a little into the Tobacco Trade, which is so considerable at present, that 14 Ships have been loaden with that Commodity from *Pensylvania* to *London*, and other Parts of *England*.



To Capt. *Blackwell* succeeded *Thomas Lloyd, Esq;* as Deputy Governour, and his Administration prov'd as successful as his Predecessors. It had been doubtless for the Interest of the Colony, as well as for Mr. *Pen's* own Advantage, if he had resided upon the Place, and govern'd the Colony himself. Factions perhaps would not have got to such a Head so soon as they did. The Authority of a Proprietary might have restrain'd the Insolence of some Bigots, and others, whose Zeal is as blind as 'tis furious.

Mr. *Lloyd* dying, Mr. *Pen* appointed his Nephew Col. *Markham* to be again Deputy Governour of the Province, and he held the Government till the Lord Proprietary arriv'd himself the second time at *Pennsylvania*, which was in the Year 1698.

William  
Markham  
Deputy  
Governour  
Will. Pen,  
Esq; Go-  
vernour.

The Persecution ceasing in *England*, the *Quakers* here found the Country began to be settled by People, who came thither to mend their Fortunes, and not to enjoy the Liberty of their Consciences, for that they had at home. These Men being of the Orthodox Religion of the *Church of England*, *Presbyterians*, and *Anabaptists*, would have had a *Militia* settl'd, but the *Quakers* being the Majority, were against it, their Principles not allowing them the use of Arms: However, such as were of another Opinion, were allow'd to train themselves, and take such Military Care, for their Defence, as consisted with the Peace of the Colony.

Mr. *Pen* stay'd here two Years, and then return'd to *England*, leaving the Colony in an extraordinary flourishing Condition. We must not omit that he had a long Suit with the Lord *Baltimore*, for the South Eastern Parts of his Province, call'd, *The Three Lower Counties*, *New Castle*, *Kent*, and *Sussex*, but that Lord could make nothing of it. The Proprietary nominated Col. *Andrew Hamilton* to be Deputy Governour, and return'd to *England* in the Year 1700.

Col. And.  
Hamilton,  
Deputy  
Governour

We have spoken of this Gentleman in the Article of the *Jerseys*: 'Tis certain his Government gave Discontent to several Leading Men in *Pennsylvania*, all Parties there were in a Ferment, and Matters ran so high, that we have been inform'd they came to Executions; but not having been able to learn the Particulars, we shall be silent.

silent. Whether this Man, by favouring the Orthodox, and those that sided with them, provok'd the others, who were the Majority, we cannot decide, but he seems to have discharg'd his Trust unhappily, and not to have been very much lamented when he dy'd, which happen'd in the Year 1704.

By these Distractions, all Mr. *Pen's* first and fine Constitution was destroy'd; and this Province, like others, became govern'd by a Governour, Council, and Assembly, each having much the same Powers and Privileges with the Governours, Councils, and Assemblies of the other Colonies.

On the Death of Col. *Hamilton*, Mr. *Pen* sent over Col. *John Evans* to be Deputy Governour, and he was approv'd by the Queen; for the Lords Proprietaries, all over *America*, are by a late Act of Parliament oblig'd to have the Royal Approbation for all the Governours they send to *America*.

Col. John  
Evans, De-  
puty Go-  
vernour.

We shall not enter into any Enquiries into the Causes of the Trouble that has been given Mr. *Pen* lately about his Province of *Pensylvania*; it appears to us, by what we have heard of it from others, for from himself we had never any Information concerning it, that he has been involv'd in it by his Bounty to the *Indians*, his Generosity in minding the publick Affairs of the Colony more than his own private ones, his Humanity to those that have not made suitable Returns, his Confidence in those that have betray'd him, and the Rigor of the severest Equity; a Word that borders the nearest to Injustice of any. 'Tis certainly the Duty of this Colony to maintain the Proprietary, who has laid out his All for the Maintenance of them, in the Possession of his Territory; and the Publick in Gratitude ought to make good what they reap the Benefit of. This is all said out of Justice to the Merit of this Gentleman, without his Knowledge, otherwise 'twould have been without his Consent.

In the Geographical Description of this Province we have made some Omissions, which from better Information we shall now correct.

The Province properly call'd *Pensylvania* consists only of the three Upper Counties, *Buckingham*, *Philadelphia*, and *Chester*, for no more are within the  
Gran

Grant made by King Charles to Mr. Pen; and the Length of that Country is about 150 or 200 Miles, as we have said already; but then there are the *Three Lower Counties*, *Newcastle*, *Kent*, and *Suffex*; which Mr. Pen enjoys by a Grant from the Duke of York, for they were within his Patten of *New-York*, the *Ferseys*, &c. But being granted to the Proprietary of the Upper Counties, he includes them within the same Government. Nevertheless he has a Right to make them a separate Government if he pleases, holding them by a separate Charter.

The three upper Counties, or *Pensylvania*, properly so call'd, end at *Marcus Hook*, 4 Miles below *Chester*. The Three Lower Counties run about 120 Miles along the Coast, and are about 30 Miles deep towards *Maryland*.

The Marshes on the Bay of *Delaware* are as commodious and fertile as any in the World, notwithstanding this Distinction of Upper and Lower, since all six Counties are under one Government, have the same Lord Proprietary, and the same Governour, they are commonly call'd by the same Name, and are known to the World by the general Appellation of *Pensylvania*. We shall treat of them in Order, in this Addition to our other Observations, as they stand from West to East, beginning with the *Falls Township*.

The whole Country within Mr. Pen's Grants, from the *Falls Township*, and higher, to 20 Miles below *Cape Hinlopen*, or *Cape William*, is in Length about 330 Miles, and in Breadth 200. The first County we come to, travelling from the Falls to the Mouth of the *Delaware*, is,

*Buckingham-County*, where the first Town is call'd, the *Falls Township*, and consists of 20 or 30 Houses. Next to it is,

*Bristol*, the Capital of the County, consisting of about 50 Houses, lying over against *Burlington*, in *West New-Jersey*. 'Tis famous for the Mills there of several sorts, built by Mr. *Samuel Carpenter*, an eminent Planter in the Country, formerly a *Barbadoes Merchant*. It lies about 20 Miles from *Philadelphia*.

*Pennsberry* is a Mannor belonging to *William Pen*, Esq; the Lord Proprietary, who has built a very fine Seat there, both in its own Nature and Situation, as well as in its Improvement. The *Ld. Cornbury*, when he was Governour of *New-York*, (he being remov'd from that Government since our writing the History of that Province, and the Right Honourable the Lord *Lovelace* put in his Place) visited this Mannor, and was extremely pleas'd with the House, Orchards and Gardens. 'Tis seated in a treble Island, the *Delaware* running three times about it. The House is built with Brick, and stands high and dry, having 16 Acres of very good Orchards, producing better *Pare-mains* and Golden-Pippins than any in *England*, by the Confession of good Judges here; for Mr. *Pen* brought some of them with him to *England*. There are 10 or 12 *Townships* more in this County, which sends 6 Members to the Assembly; one of whom, *Joseph Growden*, Esq; is at this time their Speaker. He has been very instrumental in planting and settling this County; for which, and many other things, it is very much indebted to his Care and Services. Next to it is,

*Philadelphia* County, where the first Town we come to, is *Frankford*, already mention'd. 'Tis as big as *Bristol*, and well built. As to the City of,

*Philadelphia*, we have in the former Part of this Chapter or Head, discours'd of it at large; to which we have only to add, that the Streets there are very broad, and their Names denote the several sorts of Timber that are common in *Pennsylvania*: As *Mulberry-street*, *Sassafras-street*, *Chesnut-street*, *Walnut-street*, *Beach-street*, *Ash-street*, *Vine-street*, *Cedar-street*. There are others; as, *King-street*, *Broad-street*, *High-street*, &c.

The Court-House is built of Brick, and under it is a Prison. There are several Houses on the Keys worth each 4 or 5000 Pounds, and 15 Ships have been on the Stocks at a time. 'Tis suppos'd 100 Ships have been built in this City. The Cellars or Warehouses upon the Keys are made into the River with great Industry, and some of them are 3 Stories high. This City is now in a flourishing State. Here are two Fairs a Year, and two Markets a Week. The Buildings

Buildings encrease Yearly, and it has the Honour to send Members to the Assembly, which meets here, as has been elsewhere observ'd.

*Abington* and *Dublin* are two pretty little Towns in this County; but the most considerable next to *Philadelphia*, is,

*German Town*, a Corporation of High and Low Dutch. There are above 200 Houses in it. Peach-Trees are planted all along before the Doors, which in the time of Bloom make a beautiful Road for a Mile together. The Town is very pleasant and airy, being wonderfully clear'd from Trees. In this County, and on the other side of the River *Schoolkill* is the

*Welsh-Tract*, consisting of about 40000 Acres of Land, planted by *Welshmen*, or at least laid out to them. This Tract is thick of Townships; as *Radnor* before-mention'd, *Haverford West*, *Merioneth*, and others. 'Tis very populous, and the People are very industrious; by which means this Country is better clear'd than any other part of the County. The Inhabitants have many fine Plantations of Corn, and breed Abundance of Cattle, insomuch that they are look'd upon to be as thriving and wealthy as any in the Province: And this must always be said of the *Welsh*, that where-ever they come, 'tis not their Fault if they do not live, and live well too; for they seldom spare for Labour, which seldom fails of Success.

*Mountjoy*, in this County, is a Mannor belonging to a Daughter of Mr. *Pen*, the Proprietary, and in this Mannor the first Lime-stone was dug that ever was found in *America*.

The County of *Philadelphia* is remarkable for its excellent Gravel, which is very rare to be met with on all the *American* Continent. It sends 6 Members to the Assembly. The next County to it is,

*Chester-County*, so call'd, because the People who first settl'd here, came for the most part from *Cheshire* in *England*. The first Town in it is *Newton*: 'Tis small, and consists not of above 20 or 30 Houses. There are others a great deal bigger, as,

*Chester*, the Capital of the County, consisting of above 100 Houses. Here's a very good Road for Shipping; the whole Navy Royal might ride here; the *Delaware*, on which it stands, being in this Place three Miles over. Here is a Court-House and a Prison, but neither of them commendable for the Fineness of the Structure. Here's also a Church, as has been already observ'd. Next to it is,

*Chichester*, built on a navigable Creek, so call'd. It consists of about 100 Houses. *Concord* is another Town in this County, where are several other Townships, and the Country is well planted. Four Miles below *Chester* is *Marcus Hook*, the Boundary of the Three Upper Counties, properly call'd *Pennsylvania*, because so term'd in Mr. *Pen's* first Grant. But the Three Lower Counties go also by that Name. The County of *Chester* sends 6 Members to the Assembly. The next to it is,

*Newcastle County*, in which is a Hill, call'd *Iron Hill*, from the Iron Ore found there. The Mill before-mention'd is a Mistake, there being none erected for that Use, as we can understand upon later Enquiries. The Capital of this County,

*Newcastle*, is finely seated and built upon the *Delaware*; it stands high. The *Dutch* were the first Planters in this Neighbourhood, and the first Inhabitants of this Town, which they call'd *Amstel*; from *Amstel*, the River that gives Name to *Amsteldam*, or *Amsterdam*, the Capital City of the *United Provinces*. Here is a Court-House, and 2500 Souls are computed to inhabit here.

*Philpot Creek* is so large, that the Royal Fleet of *England* might ride there. *St. George's* is a pretty Village, 10 Miles below *Newcastle*. There's another Township, call'd *Apaquamany*. The Country within 12 Miles about the Capital of this County, North and West, is the proper Signiory of *Newcastle*. There are 6 Members chosen in this County for the Assembly. The next is,

*Kent County*, very fruitful, but not so well planted as the others. *Dover* is its Capital. 'Twas formerly call'd *St. Johns*. 'Tis thin of Houses, and does

does not consist even now of above 30 or 40 Families. This County is settl'd like *Virginia*, not in Townships, but in scatter'd Plantations. It contains many Tracts of excellent Land, and sends 6 Members to the Assembly. Next to it is,

*Suffex County*, which Mr. Pen so call'd, from his own Seat in that County in *England*. The Capital is,

*Lewes*, a handsome, large Town, standing on the lovely Bank of a River, between the Town and the Sea, which makes the Harbour.

Below this Place, at the Mouth of *Delaware Bay*, is *Cape Hinlopen*, or *Cape William*; and 20 Miles below that *Cape James*, the farthermost Bounds of the Province of *Pensylvania*. 'Tis said, this Cape takes its Name from King *James* the First; in whose time it was known, but the Country not well discover'd.

The Line of Partition between *Pensylvania* and *Maryland* is imaginary. The Whalery we spoke of was at *Cape William*.

*Suffex* is not full of *Townships*, but like *Kent*, is inhabited by Planters, scatter'd up and down, as they thought best for their Convenience. It sends six Members to the Assembly.

Thus we have given the Reader as full an Account, as we could get by the best Information of *Pensylvania*, which was, to use the Proprietary's own Words, *made at once a Country*: For 'tis certain, no Colony in *America* came to such Perfection in so little time, both in Trade, Settlements, and Numbers. Every one of the six Counties has a Quarterly and Monthly Sessions and Assizes twice a Year.

There's a Sheriff, or Sheriffs, for each Shire or County, and Justice is frequently and regularly ministr'd. The six Counties run along 20 or 30 Miles upon the Rivers and Bays, and backwards, as far as they are planted; in some Places above 20 Miles.

Mr. Pen reserves five Mannors in each County, as his particular Propriety. The Inhabitants consist of People of almost all Nations and Religions; but the Opinion of the Quakers prevails so far, that they

they are by much the Majority, as the *English* are of all the other Nations. And the *English, Dutch, Swedes, French, Indians,* and *Negroes* in the Province of *Pennsylvania*, may modestly be computed at 35000 Souls.

Tho we have already made some mention of the Climate and Soil, yet having something to add by further Enquiry, we shall do it in this Place.

The Summers here are not much hotter than in *England*, at least not for above one Week; when the Heat is sensibly more violent. The Earth abounds in Mines, *Samplers* of most sorts of Ore having been taken up in every County, and no Country in the World is better stor'd with Rivers and Creeks, most of them navigable for Ships of Burthen, and all of them for *small Craft*.

Tho not above a thirtieth Part of this Province is inhabited or planted, yet 'tis clear'd every where more than the other Parts of *America* in Possession of the *English*.

We shall conclude what we have to say on this Head, with a short, but clear Account of it, abstracted from a Letter the Proprietary, *William Penn, Esq;* did the Historian the Honour to write him.

‘ We consume about 18000 *l.* yearly of *English*  
 ‘ Growth, and return of our Productions directly  
 ‘ and by way of the Islands, what augments the Re-  
 ‘ venue of the Crown 30000 Pound. The High  
 ‘ lands of *Virginia* and *Maryland* are very profitable  
 ‘ ones, having moderate Hills, and large Vales  
 ‘ full of Springs and little Rivers, emptying them-  
 ‘ selves into the two great Rivers, *Sasquehanagh* and  
 ‘ *Delaware*; where Ships of the largest Burthen  
 ‘ may ride. Its Length is about 300 Miles; its  
 ‘ Breadth 200. All Provisions are reasonable, but  
 ‘ Labour dear, which makes it a good poor Man’s  
 ‘ Country; Husbandmen and Mechanicks getting  
 ‘ 15 and 20 *l.* Wages per *Annus* for their Work  
 ‘ besides Diet; such as Carpenters, Smiths, Joiners,  
 ‘ Taylors, Shoe-makers, Cart-wrights, and Husband-  
 ‘ men, &c.



By which the Reader may see, that the Temptation for People to go thither, to mend their Fortunes, to live pleasantly and plentifully, is so great, that 'tis not to be doubted but this Province will get the start of all the other *English* Settlements on the Continent of *America*.

We shall conclude this History and Account of *Pennsylvania*, with a List of the chief Officers of this Colony.

The Proprietary of *Pennsylvania*, *William Pen*, Esquire.

The Lieutenant-Governour, Col. *John Evans*.

- Edward Shippen*, Esq;
- Sam. Carpenter*, Esq;
- William Trent*, Esq;
- Thomas Story*, Esq;
- Richard Hill*, Esq;
- William Rodney*, Esq;
- Kaleb Peusy*, Esq;
- James Logan*, Esq;

} Members of the Council.

Speaker of the Assembly, *Joseph Growden*, Esq;

Master of the Rolls, *Thomas Story*, Esq;

- William Clark*, Esq;
- Edward Shippen*, Esq;
- Joseph Growden*, Esq;
- William Guest*, Esq;

} Judges.

Judge of the Admiralty, Col. *Robert Quarry*.

Treasurer, *Samuel Carpenter*, Esq;

Secretary to the Government, *James Logan*, Esq;

Attorney General, *R. Lowther*, Esq;

Register, *Peter Evans*, Esq;

\* Surveyor General lately, *Mr. Edward Pennington.*

Clerk of the Peace for the  
Town and County of } *Robert Ashton, Esq;*  
*Philadelphia.*

---

\* *This Office is now manag'd by the Under-Surveyors, accountable to the Secretary.*

---

---

T H E

# H I S T O R Y

O F

## M A R Y L A N D.

---

C H A P. I.

*Containing an Account of its Discovery,  
Settlement, Progress, and present State.*

**T**HIS Province was always reckon'd a Part of *Virginia*, till the Year 1631. when King *Charles* made a Grant of it to *George Calvert*, Lord *Baltemore*, of which we have made some mention in the History of *Virginia*; when and by whom 'twas discover'd, will there be seen. *George* Lord *Baltemore* not living to see his Grant made out, his Son *Cæcilius Calvert*, Baron of *Baltemore* in the Kingdom of *Ireland*, took it out in his own Name, and it bears Date the 20th of *June*, 1632. We cannot better ascertain the Bounds of this Country, than by making use of the Words of the Patent. *'Tis all that Part of a Peninsula, lying between the Ocean on the East, and the Bay of Chesapeake on the West,*

N 4 and

and divided from the other Part by a Right Line drawn from the Cape call'd Watkins Point, (situate in the aforesaid Bay near the River of Wighco) on the West, unto the main Ocean on the East, and between that Bound on the South, unto that part of Delaware Bay on the North, which lies under the 40th Degree of Northern Latitude, &c. And all that Tract of Land from the aforesaid Bay of Delaware, in a right Line by the Degree aforesaid, to the true Meridian of the first Fountain of the River Patowmeck, and from thence tending towards the South, to the farther Bank of the aforesaid River, and following the West and South Side of it to a certain Place call'd Cinquack, situate near the Mouth of the said River, where it falls into the Bay of Cheseapeak, and from thence by a streight Line to the aforesaid Cape call'd Watkins Point, &c.

The King himself, when he sign'd the Patten, was pleas'd to give this Province the Name of *Maryland*, in Honour of his belov'd Wife *Henrietta Maria*, Daughter of *Henry* the IVth of *France*. The Lord *Baltimore* held it of the Crown of *England*, in common Soccage, as of his Majesty's Honour of *Windsor*, holding and paying yearly for ever two *Indian Arrows* of those Parts at the Castle of *Windsor*. The Power of this Proprietary is as Sovereign as that of any in *America*.

*Maryland* lies between 37 and 40 Degrees North Latitude, is bounded on the North by *Pensylvania*, East by *Delaware Bay* and the *Atlantick Ocean*, South by *Virginia*, from whence 'tis divided by the River *Patowmeck*, and West by the *Indian Nations*.

The Lord *Baltimore* having obtain'd this Grant, resolv'd to go thither in Person; but afterwards changing his Mind, he appointed his Brother *Leonard Calvert*, Esq; to go Governour in his stead, with whom he join'd in Commission *Jeremy Hawley*, Esq; and *Thomas Cornwallis*, Esq; The first Colony that was sent to *Maryland*, was in the Year 1633, and consisted of about 200 People. The Chief of these Adventurers were Gentlemen of good Families; and *Roman Catholicks*; for Persons of that Religion being made uneasy in *England*, as well as Protestant Dissenters, they transported themselves to this Province, hoping

hoping to enjoy there the Liberty of their Consciences, under a Proprietary of their own Profession, as the Lord *Baltimore* was. These Adventurers sail'd from *Cowes* in the *Ile of Wight* the 22d of *November*, and having stop'd at *Barbadoes* and *St. Christophers* sometime, arriv'd at *Point Comfort* in *Virginia*, the 24th of *February* following. The Names of the principal Persons among them were as follows :

*Leonard Calvert*, Esq; Governour.  
*Jeremy Hawley*,  
*Thomas Cornwallis*, } Esqs; Assistants.  
*Geo. Calvert*, Esq; Brother to the Governour.  
*Richard Gerard*, Esq;  
*Edward Winter*, Esq;  
*Frederick Winter*, Esq;  
*Henry Wiseman*, Esq;  
 Mr. *John Saunders*.  
 Mr. *Edward Cranfield*.  
 Mr. *Henry Green*.  
 Mr. *Nicholas Fairfax*.  
 Mr. *John Baxter*,  
 Mr. *Thomas Dorrel*.  
 Capt. *John Hill*.  
 Mr. *John Medcalse*, and  
 Mr. *William Saire*.

They carry'd Letters in their Favour from his Majesty to the Governour of *Virginia*, who treated them in his Province with great Humanity. On the 3d of *March* they left *Point Comfort*, and came to *Patowmeck* River, which is about 24 Leagues distant. The Governour call'd the South Point of the River *St Gregories*, and the North Point *St. Michaels*. Sailing up *Patowmeck* 14 Leagues, they came to *Heron* Island, and anchor'd under a neighbouring *Ile*, to which they gave the Name of *St. Clements*. Here Mr. *Calvert*, in his superstitious way, set up a Cross, and took Possession of the Country for our Saviour, and for our Sovereign Lord the King of England. He went 4 Leagues higher up the River, with two Pinnaces, to make Discoveries; and landing on the South Side, found the *Indians* were fled for Fear. Thence he sail'd 9 Leagues higher, and came to *Patowmeck* Town,

Town, where the Werowance being a Child, *Archibau* his Uncle govern'd his Territories in his Minority, and receiv'd the *English* in a friendly manner. From *Patowmeck* the Governour went to *Piscattaway*, about 20 Leagues higher, where he found many *Indians* assembled, and among them an *Englishman*, Captain *Henry Fleet*, who had liv'd there several Years in great Esteem with the Natives. Capt. *Fleet* brought the Werowance or Prince aboard the Governour's Pinnace, to treat with him. Mr. *Calvert* ask'd him, Whether he was willing he and his People should settle in his Country, in case they found a Place convenient for them. The Werowance reply'd, *I will not bid you go, neither will I bid you stay, but you may use your own Discretion.* The *Indians* finding the Werowance stay'd aboard longer than they expected, crowded down to the Water-side, to look after him, fearing the *English* had kill'd him, and they were not satisfy'd till he shew'd himself to them to appease them. The Natives who fled from *St. Clements Isle*, when they saw the *English* came as Friends, return'd to their Habitations; and the Governour not thinking it adviseable to settle so high up the River, in the Infancy of the Colony, sent his Pinnaces down the River, and went with Capt. *Fleet* to a River on the North Side of *Patowmeck*, within 4 or 5 Leagues of its Mouth, which he call'd *St. George's River*. He went up 4 Leagues in his Long-Boat, and came to the Town of *Yoamaco*; from whence the *Indians* of that Neighbourhood are call'd *Yoamacoes*. The Governour landed, and treated with the Werowance there, acquainting him with the Occasion of his Coming; to which the *Indian* said little, but inviting him to his House, entertain'd him very kindly, and gave him his own Bed to lie on. The next Day he shew'd him the Country; and the Governour determining to make the first Settlement there, order'd his Ship and Pinnaces to come thither to him. To make his Entry the more safe and peaceable, he presented the Werowance and Wifos, or principal Men of the Town, with some *English* Cloth, Axes, Houghs, and Knives, which they accepted very kindly, and freely consented that he and his Company should dwell in one Part of their Town, reserving the other for themselves. Those

*Indians*, who inhabited that Part which was assign'd the *English*, readily abandon'd their Houses to them, and Mr. *Calvert* immediately set Hands to work to plant Corn. The Natives agreed further to leave the whole Town to the *English* as soon as their Harvest was in, which they did accordingly, and both *Indians* and *English* promis'd to live friendly together. If any Injury was done on either part, the Nation offending was to make Satisfaction. Thus on the 27th of *March*, 1634. the Governour took Possession of the Town, and nam'd it *St. Maries*.

There happen'd an Event, which very much facilitated this Treaty with the *Indians*. The *Sasquehanocks*, a Warlike People, dwelling between *Cheseapeak Bay* and *Delaware Bay*, were wont to make Incurfions on their Neighbours, partly for Dominion, and partly for Booty, of which the Women were most desir'd by them. The *Yoamacoes* fearing these *Sasquehanocks*, had a Year before the *English* arriv'd resolv'd to desert their Habitations, and remove higher into the Country; many of them were actually gone, and the rest preparing to follow them. The Ship and Pinnaces arriving at the Town, the *Indians* were amaz'd and terrify'd at the Sight of them, especially when they heard their Cannon thunder, when they came to an Anchor.

The first thing Mr. *Calvert* did was to fix a Court of Guard, and erect a Store-house; and he had not been there many Days, before Sir *John Harvey*, Governour of *Virginia*, came thither to visit him, as did several *Indian* Werowances, and many other *Indians* from several parts of the Continent: Among others came the King of *Patuxent*, and being carry'd aboard the Ship then at Anchor in the River, was plac'd between the Governour of *Virginia* and the Governour of *Maryland*, at an Entertainment made for him and others. A *Patuxent Indian* coming aboard, and seeing his King thus seated, started back, thinking he was surpriz'd; he would have leap'd over-board, and could not be perswaded to enter the Cabbin, till the Werowance himself came and satisfy'd him he was in no Danger. This King had formerly been taken Prisoner by the *English* of *Virginia*. After the Store-house was finish'd, and the Ship unladen, Mr. *Calvert*  
or-

order'd the Colours to be brought ashore, which was done with great Solemnity, the Gentlemen and their Servants attending in Arms; several Volleys of Shot were fir'd a Ship-board and a-shore, as also the Cannon, at which the Natives were struck with Admiration, such at least as had not heard the firing of Pieces of Ordnance before, to whom it could not but be dreadful.

The Kings of *Patuxent* and *Toamaco* were present at this Ceremony, with many other *Indians* of *Toamaco*; and the Werowance of *Patuxent* took that Occasion to advise the *Indians* of *Toamaco* to be careful to keep the League they had made with the *English*. He stay'd in the Town several Days, and was full of his *Indian* Compliments: When he went away he made this Speech to the Governour; *I love the English so well, that if they should go about to kill me, if I had so much Breath as to speak, I would command the People not to revenge my Death; for I know they would not do such a thing, except it were through my own Fault.*

This Infant Colony supply'd themselves with *Indian* Corn at *Barbadoes*, which at their first Arrival they began to use, (to save their *English* Store of Meal and Oat-meal.) The *Indian* Women perceiving their Servants did not know how to dress it, made their Bread for them, and taught 'em to do it themselves. There was *Indian* Corn enough in the Country, and these new Adventurers soon after ship'd off 10000 Bushels for *New England*, to purchase Salt Fish and other Provisions. While the *Indians* and *English* liv'd at *St. Maries* together, the Natives went every Day to hunt with the new Comers for Dear and Turkeys, which when they had caught, they gave to the *English*, or sold for Knives, Beads, and such Trifles. They also brought them good Store of Fish, and behav'd themselves very kindly, suffering their Women and Children to come among them, which was a certain Sign of their Confidence in them. 'Twas a great Advantage to the first Colony in *Maryland*, that they took Possession of a Town, about which the Ground was ready clear'd to their Hands, which gave them an Opportunity to plant Corn, and make Gardens, where they sow'd *English* Seeds, and they thriv'd wonderfully. They were very industrious to build Houses,



Houses, for they found only Huts ; but before they could accomplish those things to their Satisfaction, Capt. *Cleybourne*, one of the Council of *Virginia*, (who had in view to engross all the Trade of those Parts to himself) threw out Words among the *Indians*, which gave them Cause to suspect that the Adventurers who came to *Maryland* were not what they pretended to be, *Englishmen*, but *Spaniards*, and Enemies to the *Virginians*. The Natives were so simple as not to see he impos'd on them, as they might have soon found out by the Likeness of the *English* in *Maryland* to those in *Virginia*, as well in their Garb and Customs, as their Language and Trade ; yet such was their Stupidity, that they took what *Cleybourne* insinuated for Truth, and grew shy to the *English* at *St. Maries*. The latter alarm'd at this Alteration in their Carriage, thought of being on their Guard, and gave over building Houses to set all Hands to work towards erecting a Fort, which was finish'd in 6 Weeks time, and mounted with Ordnance. After that they renew'd their Labour about their Houses, and in a Year or two's time there were 50 or 60 at *St. Mary's Town* : But the Humour of Plantations has so far hinder'd its Progress, that there are not many more even at this Day.

The new Comers furnish'd themselves with Hogs, Poultry, and some Cows, from *Virginia*, and the Country was settled with so much Ease, and so many Conveniences, that it soon became populous and flourishing ; for several future Companies went thither, and chiefly Persons of the *Romish* Church, as has been hinted. The Country of *Yoamaco* being clear'd entirely of the Natives, the *English* planted it, and the Governour gave the River the Name of *St. George's*. Those that settled here first were taken with a Distemper somewhat like an Ague, which they call'd a *Seasoning*, of which for some Years many dy'd, for want of good looking to, and through their own ill Conduct ; but since the Country has been more open'd, by the cutting down of the Woods, and that there is better Accommodation of Diet and Lodging, with the Improvement of the Inhabitants Knowledge in applying physical Remedies, very few die of these *Seasonings* ; and some that come over from *England*, or elsewhere, never have them at all. The

The Government of this Colony, when it began to grow more numerous, was fram'd much after the Model of that in *England*. The Governour had his Council in the Nature of the House of Lords, and Privy-Council in *England*; and when the Country was divided into Counties, each had Representatives in the Assembly of the Province, and these Representatives form'd the Lower House; the Upper House consisting of the Governour and Council, and such Lords of Mannors, and others, as the Lord Proprietary, or his Lieutenant, from time to time shall call thither by Writ. This Assembly the Proprietary, or his Deputy, conven'd, prorogu'd, or dissolv'd at Pleasure; and their Acts being ratify'd by the Proprietary, or his Deputy, were of the same Force there, as an Act of Parliament is in *England*, and cannot pass, or be repeal'd, without the concurring Assent of the Lord Proprietary, or his Deputy, with the other two Estates.

Next to this Legislative Court was erected the Provincial Court, which is holden every Quarter in the City of *St. Mary's*. This is the chief Court of Judicature, where the most important judicial Causes are try'd; of which, in the Absence of the Lord Proprietary, the Lieutenant, or Governour and Council, are Judges. This Court is for the whole Province; but for each particular County there are other inferior Courts, which are held six times in the Year, in each of these Counties; for Trial of Causes not relating to Life, nor exceeding the Value of 3000 Weight of Tobacco, with Appeals from them to the Provincial Court.

Having mention'd the Counties in this Province, we must observe, that as the Number of the Inhabitants increas'd, *Mr. Calvert*, the Governour, thought fit to divide the Country into Shires; of which there were at first but 10, as 5 on the West-side of the Bay of *Chesapeake*, and 5 on the East-side. Those on the West side were *St. Mary's*, *Charles*, *Calvert*, *Ann Arundel*, and *Baltimore*; to which has lately been added *Prince George County*, which makes the whole 11 in all. Those on the East-side were, and still are, *Somerset*, *Dorchester*, *Talbot*, *Cecil*, and *Kent* Counties. There were Towns laid out in each  
of

of them, but they never came to Perfection; and for the same Reason that there are no Towns in *Virginia*, which the Reader will find in the following Pages.

The Governour built a House in *St. Mary's* for himself and Successors, and govern'd the Country till the Distractions happen'd in *England*, when the Name of a Papist became so obnoxious, that 'twas not likely the Puritans, who were then uppermost, would leave any Power in the Hands of a Roman Catholick. The Parliament assum'd the Government of this Province into their own Hands, and appointed \_\_\_\_\_ Esq; to be their Governour here; but upon the King's Restoration the Lord *Baltimore* recover'd the Right of his absolute Propriety; and about the Year 1662. sent over his Son *Charles Calvert*, Esq; the present Lord *Baltimore*, to be his Governour; and Mr. *Calvert* liv'd there almost twenty Years, a long time after his Father dy'd, and his Title and Estate fell to him. By his Wisdom and Presence this Colony flourish'd apace, and there were computed to be 16000 Souls in *Maryland*, so long ago as the Year 1665.

All the Indian Nations about this Province submitted to the Lord Proprietary of *Maryland*, and put themselves under his Protection: So that in the Year 1653. one *Naocosso*, who was chosen Emperor of *Piscattaway* (that is, he was advanc'd to an Office of more Authority than the rest of the Indian Kings or Werowances) was not thought to be absolutely confirm'd, till Mr. *Charles Calvert*, now Lord *Baltimore*, approv'd of their Choice.

The Lord *Baltimore* was at a vast Expence to bring this Province to its present Perfection; and allowing for his Partiality to the Roman Catholicks, which in a great measure helpt to lose him the Government of it, he behav'd himself with so much Justice and Moderation, while he kept the Power in his own Hands, that the Inhabitants liv'd easily and happily under him. They flourish'd, and encreas'd in Number and Riches. He procur'd an Act of Assembly, for Liberty of Conscience to all Persons who profess Christianity, tho of different Perswasions. By which means Protestant Dissenters, as well as Papists, were tempted to settle there; and that Liberty having never been  
in-

infring'd in any manner, is a severe Reflection on those pretended Protestants in other Colonies, where Dissenters have been oppress'd; while here, under a Popish Proprietary, they enjoy'd all the Rights, Liberties and Privileges of *Englishmen*, as far as the Laws permitted them.

But notwithstanding all his Lordship's Care to prevent any Rupture with the Indians, when they were at War with the *Virginians*, they committed some Hostilities in the Year 1677. on the East-side, and kill'd 4 Men and a Woman near *Nomani*, which put the Colony in Fears of further Mischief; however that Cloud blew over, those that did the Mischief were punish'd, and no more Blood was shed in the Quarrel. While the Lord *Baltimore* liv'd here, he marry'd one of his Daughters to Col. *Diggs*, a Gentleman of the Country, of great Interest in it, and a considerable Merchant or Factor also. But when the Lord Proprietary remov'd to *England*, he did not appoint him to be Deputy, but put in another Gentleman, whose Name we have not been able to learn, nor that of his Successor: In whose Time the Government of *England* took from the Lord *Baltimore* that of *Maryland*. And we must observe, King *James II.* intended to take it from him before the Revolution, instigated to it by Father *Peters*. What Reason that Jesuit had to do the Lord *Baltimore* such a Disservice, we know not, and would have thought the Agreement between Father *Peters* and this Lord in Religion, might have influenc'd the Priest more in his Favour. But 'tis very certain, that he was the first Instrument of the Lord Proprietary's losing the Government, and perhaps the Court might think, that as much as the Papists were favour'd in *Maryland*, they might hope for more Favour from a Proprietary of their own persecuting Principles. The Lord *Baltimore* might have expected more than Justice from a King of his own Religion; yet his Patent was then question'd, and 'tis suppos'd the Prerogative of naming a Government would have been taken from him, if King *James* had not abdicated his own Government. After the Revolution, this Lord had no Reason to look for any thing but strict Justice; for 'twas known, he was not a little zealous in opposing it.

King *William* the III. of glorious Memory, being settl'd on the Throne, the Steps that were taken for annexing the Government of *Maryland* to the Crown in King *James's* Reign, were with much more Reason continu'd; and after a long and expensive Dispute at the Council-Board, the Lord *Baltimore* was depriv'd of that part of his Power, and the King appointed Sir *Edmund Andros* to be Governour of *Maryland*, who call'd an Assembly, which in the Year 1692. pass'd an Act to recognize King *William* and Queen *Mary's* Title; and there having been great Confusion in the Courts of Judicature, by Reason of the Alteration in the Constitution of the Government in *Maryland*, an Act pass'd, to make all the Proceedings at Law valid, except where there were any Errors in any Process and Pleas. It provided also, that the Year 1690, and 1691. should not be accounted, concluded and meant in the Statute of Limitations.

We find Sir *Edmund Andros* did not act so inoffensively as might be wish'd in a Governour: For when Col. *Francis Nicholson*, whom King *William* appointed to succeed him, came to the Government, in the Act which pass'd to establish and ratify all Actions, Suits, Causes, and Proceedings in all Courts, &c. and all Officers Civil and Military, for, in, or by reason of any legal Acting or Proceeding in their respective Offices and Stations, from the Access of Sir *Edmund Andros*, to the then Governour, *Francis Nicholson*, Esq; his Arrival, any Clause, Imperfection, or want of Authority in the said Sir *Edmund Andros*, or his Commission notwithstanding, there is this Proviso; *Provided nothing in this Act shall justify Sir Edm. Andros's taking and disposing of the Publick Revenues, or debar the Assembly, or any other Person, of their Right or Claims to the same.*

The Government of this Province is now the same with that of the other Colonies, which are immediately under the Crown; by a Governour made by the King or Queen, a Council nam'd by the same, and an Assembly chosen by the Eleven Counties. The Lord Proprietary still enjoys the Profits of the Province, arising by certain Revenues granted to him by several Assemblies; as a Duty on each Hoghead of Tobacco exported, and other Incomes; which

with the Sale of Lands uncultivated, and unpurchas'd, amount to a considerable Sum yearly; and the Duty of Tobacco encreasing, as that Product encreases, 'tis probable that Revenue will one Day rise to a very great Sum. Besides this, the Lord *Baltimore* has a large Plantation at *Mettapany*; and in the whole, his Estate and Interest in this Province are very well worth his Care to maintain them.

About the Year 1692. the Lord Bishop of *London* appointed Dr. *Thomas Bray* to be his Commissary in *Maryland*. That Doctor went over thither to settle the Churches, according to the Rites and Worship of the Church of *England*. For by an Act of Assembly in the same Year, the Eleven Counties were divided into thirty Parishes, sixteen of which are supply'd with Ministers, who have a competent Maintenance settl'd upon them, with Glebes, and other Advantages. Libraries are fix'd, and many thousand practical and devotional Books have been dispers'd among the People, by the assiduous Care of Dr. *Bray*, who staid there 2 or 3 Years.

Besides these Churches, are several Chappels, and the Number of Papists and Dissenters are not inconsiderable. Mr. *George Macqueen*, and Mr. *Robert Keith*, have been employ'd by the Society for propagating the Gospel in foreign Parts, to advance that good Work here; but 'tis said the *Quakers and Papists* equally obstruct it.

A very ingenious Man, who was in this Province in Col. *Nicholson's* Time, sends this Account of the State of it to the Royal Society: 'The Inhabitants of *Maryland* are govern'd by the same Laws as in *England*, except that they have some Acts of Assembly, relating to particular Cases, not provided for by the Laws of *England*. The Church of *England* is pretty well establish'd among them: Churches are built, and there's an Annual Stipend allow'd to every Minister, by a perpetual Law; which is more or less according to the Number of Taxables in each Parish. Every Christian Male 16 Years old, and Negroes Male and Female above that Age, pay 40 Pound of Tobacco to the Minister; which is levy'd by the Sheriff among other publick Revenues; and this makes the Revenues of the Ministers, one with  
ano-

another, about 20000 Pound of Tobacco, or 100 l. Sterling a Year. It has been the Unhappinefs of this Country, that they had no Proteftant Minifters hardly among them till Governour *Nicholſon's* time (who has been a great Promoter and Encourager of the Clergy) but now and then an itinerant Preacher come over, of very looſe Morals, and ſcandalous Behaviour: So that what with ſuch Mens ill Examples, the *Roman* Priests Cunning, and the Quakers Bigotry, Religion was in a manner turn'd out of Doors. But by Col. *Nicholſon's* Protection, the Face of it mended, and the Orthodox Churches were crowded as full as they could hold. The People grew ſenſible of the *Romiſh* Superſtition, and the Enthuſiaſm of the Quakers: Inſomuch that their Parties, joining now both together, are very inconfiderable to that of the Church of *England*. Indeed the Quakers ſtruggle hard to maintain their Footing; and their *Teachers* (eſpecially of the Female Sex, who are the moſt zealous) are very free of their Reflections and Scandal againſt the Orthodox Divines and Profeſſors. The People here have not yet found the way of affociating themſelves in Towns and Corporations, by reaſon of the Fewneſs of Handicrafts-Men. There are indeed ſeveral Places allotted for Towns, but hitherto they are only titular ones, except *Annapolis*; where the Governour reſides Col. *Nicholſon* has done his Endeavour to make a Town of that Place. There are about 40 Dwelling Houſes in it, 7 or 8 of which can afford a good Lodging and Accomodations for Strangers. There are alſo a State-Houſe, and a free School, built with Brick, which make a great Shew among a Parcel of Wooden Houſes; and the Foundation of a Church is laid, the only Brick Church in *Maryland*. They have two Market Days in a Week; and had Governour *Nicholſon* continu'd there a few Years longer, he had brought it to Perfection.

Col. *Nicholſon* mightily promoted the Advancement of Religion in this Province, as did his Succeſſor Col. *Nathaniel Blackiſton*, with whom the Country, tho' healthy in its ſelf, did not agree, and he was ord'd to return to *England* for the Recovery of his health: In whoſe ſtead her Maſteſty was pleas'd to

make Col. *William Seymour* Governour of this Province; who in *Sept. 1703.* embark'd aboard the *Dreadnought* Man of War, which, with others, was appointed to convoy the *Virginia* and *Maryland* outward bound Fleet; but being separated from the rest by stress of Weather, the Governour put into *Barbadoes*, where he arriv'd the 2d of *February*. The Ship was forc'd off the Coasts of *Maryland* by contrary Winds, and did not arrive in the Bay till *April* or *May, 1704.* So that Col. *Seymour* was near 8 Months in his Voyage, which is commonly made in 6 Weeks. This Governour has given general Satisfaction to the Inhabitants, and is indeed a Man of Honour, worthy the Post her Majesty has been pleas'd to continue him in to this time.

It cannot be expected that we should be able to give as perfect an Account of every Colony, as we have done of *New-England, Virginia, Carolina, Barbadoes*, and some others. Our Helps have not been at all equal, tho our Application has. Those Gentlemen to whom we apply'd, who could have given us full Information, and neglected it, are to answer for what is imperfect in this History of *Maryland*; which is however the largest that has been publish'd; and had we been better supply'd with Memoirs, we should have given a better Account of this Colony, which we confess deserv'd it. The Gentlemen concern'd in it will excuse us, when we tell them we have done our best, and in another Impression shall enlarge in our History of *Maryland*, if they will transmit us Materials, to enable us to do it. We kept this Account backward, in hopes of such Assistance; and perhaps these Gentlemen will be as angry with themselves as with us, when they see how industrious we have been in the Histories of those Countries, that we were fully inform'd about, and what a Figure they make in the *British Empire in America*, where *Maryland* is far from being the least considerable Portion of it. 'Tis true it does not encrease much in Towns, and those that are honour'd with the Name, would not pass for any thing but little Villages in other Countries. This, as has been hinted in *Virginia*, is the Humour of the Inhabitants, and all Endeavours to bring them to build and settle at *Annapolis*, or



*Williamstadt*, have been ineffectual. Those two Towns are not bigger than they were, if they hold to be so big, and there are Villages in *Pensylvania* which may vie with them for Number of Houses and Inhabitants.

The Lord *Baltimore* disputed at Law with Mr. *Pen* for the Propriety of that Part of *Pensylvania*, known by the Name of the *Three Lower Counties*, as if it had been included within his Patent for *Maryland*; but Mr. *Pen* has maintain'd his Title, and 'tis probable will always maintain it against the Lord *Baltimore's* to those Countries. *Pensylvania* has lately endeavour'd at a Tobacco Trade, but *Maryland* and *Virginia* will hinder the Progress of any other Colony in this Commodity; they have been long settled in it, and can make enough to supply all the Markets in the World, and their minding this Traffick wholly, prevents their falling into that of Provisions so much as *New England*, *New York*, *Pensylvania*, and *Carolina*; which Provinces may flourish by that Trade and Manufacture, and leave to *Virginia* and *Maryland* their Natural Trade, for by their long Continuance and Perfection in it, it deserves that Name.

## C H A P. II.

*Containing a Geographical Description of the Province of Maryland; an Account of the Climate, Soil, Product, Animals, Trade, and Inhabitants, English and Indian.*

THO' we have given a large Description of *Virginia*, and the Bay of *Cheseapeak*, and have also set out the Bounds of *Maryland*, as we find it bounded in the Lord Proprietaries Patent; yet having had some Years since a compleat and distinct Account of both Provinces from an ingenious Gentleman, an Inhabitant of the Place, with whom we have been long acquainted, the Reader will be better satisfy'd to see

what he says, than to take it from us : Such then is  
 the Description communicated to us by Mr. *Philemon  
 Lloyd of Maryland* ; ‘ The Colony of *Virginia* and  
 ‘ Province of *Maryland* are situate upon the Bay of  
 ‘ *Cheseapeak*, whose Mouth or Inlet is between the Capes  
 ‘ call’d *Cape Henry* and *Cape Charles*, and yet so as  
 ‘ neither of the Provinces is plac’d on one particular  
 ‘ Side, but are both of them on each Side water’d by  
 ‘ that commodious Bay, which divides as it were in  
 ‘ half both Governments ; so that part of the Colo-  
 ‘ ny of *Virginia* is on the West Side of the said Bay  
 ‘ and the other part on the East Side, the Bay running  
 ‘ through the Centre of them. The Colony of *Vir-  
 ‘ ginia* on the West Side of the Bay, is divided from  
 ‘ *Maryland* by the great River *Patowmeck*, and on the  
 ‘ East by the River *Pokomoak*, whose Head lies near  
 ‘ the Sea to the Eastward. The Boundary of the  
 ‘ Province of *Maryland* begins at the River of *Patow-  
 ‘ meck*, and runs along the Bay Side Northwards, til  
 ‘ it intersects a Line drawn West from the Mouth of  
 ‘ *Delaware Bay*, situate in 40 Degrees North Latitude  
 ‘ having for its Bounds on the West high Mountains  
 ‘ and on the East the said Bay. The Eastern Side  
 ‘ of the Province of *Maryland* is bounded on the  
 ‘ West by the Bay of *Cheseapeak*, on the East by the  
 ‘ Main Ocean, on the North by *Delaware Bay*, and  
 ‘ on the South by the River *Pokomoak*, which is the  
 ‘ Line of Division between it and the Colony of *Vir-  
 ‘ ginia*. The Province of *Maryland* is divided into  
 ‘ 11 Counties, 6 on the Western, and 5 on the East-  
 ‘ ern Side of the Bay. Those on the Western Side  
 ‘ are *St. Maries*, *Charles*, *Prince George*, *Calvert*, *Ann  
 ‘ Arundel*, and *Baltimore* Counties. Those on the  
 ‘ Eastern Side of the Bay are *Somerset*, *Dorchester*  
 ‘ *Talbot*, *Kent*, and *Cecil* Counties. This Province  
 ‘ has but one City in it, call’d the City of *St. Mary’s*  
 ‘ from whence one of the Counties took its Name  
 ‘ being commodiously situate between the Rivers of  
 ‘ *Patowmeck* and *Patuxent*. This was formerly the  
 ‘ Seat of Government, and the Place where the Re-  
 ‘ presentatives of the several Counties assembled, to  
 ‘ concert and determine things for the Good of the  
 ‘ Colony. There are also two principal Towns  
 ‘ call’d by the Names of Ports, as the Port of *Anna  
 ‘ poli*

*polis*, and the Port of *Williamstadt*. There are several other Towns, but of no Consideration. The principal Rivers of this Province are *Patowmeck*, which divides it from the Colony of *Virginia*; *Patuxent* and *Severn* on the Western Shore; and on the other Side are *Chiptonk*, *Chester*, and *Sissafras*, of greatest Note. The Extent of the Province of *Maryland* runs further Northward than the Head of the Bay of *Cheseapeak*, being situate on both Sides of it.

In speaking of the Counties, we shall begin with those on the West Side of the Bay.

*St. Mary's* is the first of these, and is bounded thus: It begins at Point *Look-out*, and extends along *Patowmeck* River, to the lower Side of *Bud's* Creek, and so over to the Head of *Indian* Creek in *Patuxent* River. About the Year 1698. some Medicinal Waters were discover'd in this County, call'd the *Cool Springs*, which the Government order'd should be purchas'd, with the Land about it, and Houses built for the Entertainment of the Poor. In the City of *St. Mary's* the General Court is holden, for which there's a State-house, and the Council is kept the first *Tuesday* in *September*, *November*, *January*, *March*, and *June*, for Orphans. This City chooses two Citizens to represent the rest in the Assembly, and the Government is by a Mayor, Recorder, Aldermen; and Common-Council; tho' true it is, so much Magistracy might have been spar'd, considering there are not above 60 Houses in it, and since *Annapolis* has been made the Seat of Justice, and the publick Offices, there's no great Likelihood that the City of *St. Mary's* will encrease much in the Number of its Houses and Inhabitants.

*Mettapany* in this Country is noted only for having been the Lord *Baltimore's* Seat, when he dwelt in this Country. Here he built a handsome House, tho' more for Convenience than Magnificence; it stands near the Mouth of the River *Patuxent*. In *St. Mary's* County are the Parishes of *St. John's*, *St. Clement's*, and *Hervington*, the latter usurping the Name of a Town.

*Charles* County Bounds begin on the upper Side of *Indian* Creek and *Bud's* Creek, where *St. Mary's*

County ends, and extends to *Mattawoman* Creek, including all the Land lying on the upper Part of *Bud's* Creek and *Indian* Creek Branches. In this County the chief Places or Parishes are *Bristol* and *Piscattaway*.

Prince *George's* County is the newest in the Province, being laid out, *A. D.* 1695. It includes the Land from the upper Side of *Mattawoman* and *Swanson's* Creek, extending upwards by *Patowmeck* in the West, and *Patuxent* River in the East. In this County is the Parish of *Masterkont*, and others.

*Calvert* County borders upon *Charles* County, from which 'tis divided by the River *Patuxent*, as also from Prince *George's* County. In this County are three Towns or Parishes, *Harrington*, *Warrington*, and *Calverton*.

*Ann-Arundel* and *Baltimore* Counties are divided by 3 mark'd Trees, standing about a Mile and a Quarter from *Bodkin* Creek, on the West Side of *Chesapeake* Bay, and this Division runs thence West, till it crosses the Road from the Mountains of the Mouth of *Maggaty* River to *Rich. Beard's* Mill, and so continues Westward to 2 mark'd Trees, one for *Ann-Arundel*, the other for *Baltimore* County, and still continues West from *Maggaty* and *Potopsco* Rivers, till it comes to a Mountain of white Stone, from thence to the main Road to *Potopsco* Ferry, and two mark'd Pines, written at large on the North Side of the said Trees *Baltimore*, and on the South Side *Ann-Arundel* County; from thence West North West to *Elk Ridge* Road to two mark'd Trees there, thence to *Patuxent* River, and so up the said River to the Extent of it, for the Bounds of *Baltimore* County. All the Tract of Land on the North Side of these Division-Lines is in *Baltimore* County, and all the Land on the South Side in *Ann-Arundel* County. The chief Town in the County of *Ann-Arundel* is

*Annapolis*, which was formerly call'd *Severn*, and by an Act of Assembly, 1694. was made a Port Town, and a Collector and Naval Officer were order'd to reside there; the Name of *Annapolis* was then given it. The County Court was remov'd to this Place, a Church was order'd to be built within the Port, which was made a Parish; and in the Year 1699. the Port of *Annapolis* was made the chief Seat of Justice within

within this Province, for holding Assemblies, and provincial Courts, and all Writs, Pleas, and Process returnable to the Provincial, or to the Court of *Chancery*, were made returnable to the Port of *Annapolis*. All Roads leading through any County to this Port were by another Act of Assembly order'd to be mark'd on both Sides with two Notches in a Tree, and where the Road to *Annapolis* broke off from any other Road, it was to be distinguish'd on the Face of the Tree with the Letters *A. A.* The Assembly about 10 Years ago pass'd an Act for founding a Free-School here, to be call'd King *William's* School. Other Schools were also to be erected under his Patronage, and the Arch-Bishop of *Canterbury* was to be Chancellor of them. Trustees were appointed and incorporated by the Name of the *Rectors, Governours, Trustees, and Visitors of the Free-Schools of Maryland*; what has been the Effect of this good Bill we know not, but believe it is very inconsiderable. The first School that was to be built was to be at *Annapolis*. The County Court for Orphans is kept here the second *Tuesday* in *September, November, January, March,* and *June*. The Records of the County of *Ann-Arundel* were remov'd to this Town, where are now about 40 Houses, but it lately has not flourish'd according to Expectation; and while the Planters and Merchants in *Maryland* affect to live separately, as they do in *Virginia*, there's no great probability of this Towns making any considerable Figure.

In *Baltimore* County is a Parish or Town so call'd; but the Houses are so disjoin'd in this, and others, that the Townships are not worth the Name.

Thus we have given a short View of the Counties on the West Side of the Bay, and must observe, that the great River *Sasquehanagh* falls into that Bay a little above *Baltimore*.

On the East-side of the Bay are the 5 other Counties; the first of which, proceeding from West to East, is,

*Cecil* County, the Western Part of which is so near the *Delaware*, that the Cut would not be above 8 or 10 Miles to join that Bay and River to *Chesapeake*. This County runs along Parallel with *Newcastle* and *Kent* County in *Pensylvania*. We have not learnt how many

many Parishes are in it, and know nothing more of it, so we proceed to

*Kent* County, which runs out like an Isthmus into the Bay of *Cheseapeak*. We know not the Name of the Parishes in it. The next County is

*Talbot* County, divided from the County of *Kent* by a double Line of mark'd Trees. That part of this County that lies on the North Side of *Corseica* Creek, is the Southerly Bounds of the County of *Kent*, and on the North the County of *Cecil*. *Oxford* was formerly the Capital of this County, but by an Act of Assembly in the Year 1695. it was nam'd *Williamstadt*, and made a Port Town. 100 Acres of Land adjacent to it was order'd to be purchas'd, for a common Pasture for the Benefit of the Town. The second School that was to be built was appointed for this Place, and the Roads to it were to be mark'd out in the like manner with those of *Annapolis*. A Collector and Naval Officer were order'd to reside here. Besides *Oxford*, here are the Parishes of *St. Michael's* and *Bullingbrook*. The next County is

*Dorchester* County. The chief Parish is *Dorchester*, where the County Court is kept. 'Tis a small Place of about 10 Houses. The Land here lying on the North Side of *Nanticoke* River, beginning at the Mouth of *Chickacoan* River, and so up to the Head of it, and from thence to the Head of *Anderton's* Branch, and so down to the North West Fork, to the Mouth of the aforesaid *Chickacoan* River, was by an Act of Assembly in the Year 1698. declar'd to belong to *Panquash* and *Annatouquem*, two *Indian* Kings, and the People under their Government, their Heirs and Successors for ever, to be holden of the Lord Proprietary, under the yearly Rent of one Beaver Skin. There are more *Indian* Towns in this than in any other of the Counties.

*Somerset* County has a Parish of the same Name in it. The Names of the other Parishes in this and the other Counties are not come to our Knowledge; and we know nothing particularly remarkable in them, so we shall proceed to our Account of the Climate, &c.

The Climate of this Province, the Soil, Product, and all that's mention'd in the Contents of this Chapter, are the same, in a great measure, with those of *Virginia*: Both here and there the *English* live at large at their several Plantations, which hinders the Encrease of Towns; indeed every Plantation is a little Town of it self, and can subsist it self with Provisions and Necessaries, every considerable Planter's Ware-house being like a Shop, where he supplies not only himself with what he wants, but the inferior Planters, Servants, and Labourers, and has Commodities to barter for Tobacco, or other Goods, there being little Money in this Province, and little Occasion of any, as long as Tobacco answers all the uses of Silver and Gold in Trade. There are few Merchants or Shop-keepers, who may properly be so call'd, we mean who are not Planters also, but live wholly by their Trades. The Tobacco of this Province, call'd *Oroonoko*, is stronger than that of *Virginia*, and no *Englishman*, who has not a very coarse Relish in his Smoak, will bear it; yet 'tis as profitable to the Planter, and to the Trade of the Nation in general, being in demand in the Eastern and Northern Parts of *Europe*, where 'tis preferr'd before the sweet-scented Tobacco of *James* and *York* Rivers in *Virginia*. The Planters in *Maryland* finding so good Vent for their Commodity in foreign Markets, have cultivated it so much, that this Province is thought to produce as much or more Tobacco than that of *Virginia*. The Soil is here at least as fruitful, the Country being a large Plain, and the Hills in it so easy of Ascent, and of such a moderate Height, that they seem rather an artificial Ornament to it, than one of the Accidents of Nature. The Abundance of Rivers and Brooks is no little Help to the Fertility of the Soil; and there's no Grain, Plant, or Tree, which grows in *Virginia*, but thrives as well here. The Product, the Animals, and every thing is the same here as there, only the black and yellow Bird, call'd the *Baltimore* Bird, goes by another Name in *Virginia*. It had that given it, because the Colours of the Field of the Lord *Baltimore's* Coat of Arms are *Or* and *Sable*.

If the Reader has the Curiosity to know more of this Country in any of the Particulars mention'd in the Title of this Chapter, let him see the History of *Virginia* on the same Heads, and there's nothing there which may not also be said of *Maryland*, except it is added here.

The Air of the two Provinces has the same Agreement; and if there's any Difference in the Health of the one Country and the other, *Virginia* perhaps has the Advantage. The Province of *Maryland* however thrives in a greater degree, tho'tis the younger Colony; and that is a plain Proof of the Profit of the course Tobacco, preferable to the sweet-scented, or rather that which is sold to a foreign Market turns to better Account every way, than what is made for a home Consumption with more Labour and Cost, and at last with less Gain.

The Number of Ships trading hither from *England*, and other Parts of the *English* Dominions, was computed to be 100, above 30 Years ago; and we may imagine how many more there come now, from the Increase of the Inhabitants, who were then calculated to be 16000, and are now judg'd to be 30000 Souls. The Lord Proprietary had a Mint here, to coin Money, but it never was much made use of.

As to the Indians, their Language, Manners, and Customs are the same with those of *Virginia*. At the first settling of *Maryland* there were several Nations of 'em, govern'd by Petty-Kings; but 'tis thought there are not now 500 fighting Men of them in all the Province, if the Account Mr. *Hugh Jones* transmitted to the Royal Society of it be true: For Mr. *Glover*, who some Years before sent the same Society an Account of *Virginia*, says, *The Indians in the Lord Baltimore's Territories, at the Head of the Bay, where the English were later seated, are more numerous, there being 3000 of them still in some Towns; but these being in continual Wars with each other, are like shortly to be reduc'd to a small Number; which justifies Mr. Jones's Relation of their Number in Maryland, since in Mr. Glover's time there was not above 3000 Indian Souls in all Virginia; out of which one cannot reckon there were many more than 500 fighting Men. The same Mr. Jones gives us a large Account of several things in this Province worth notice.*

Lowth.  
Vol. 3. p.  
572. comp.  
with p.  
602.

The



The Bay of *Cheseapeak*, which runs *N. by W.* about 200 Miles, or more, divides *Maryland* as well as *Virginia*, into two Parts, which the Inhabitants of the two Provinces call the Eastern and Western Shoars. The Land is generally low on both Sides; no Hill that is to be seen, or is known by them 50 Yards perpendicular; but above 100 Miles West of them, towards the Heads of the Rivers, the Ground rises, and appears in very high Mountains, and rocky Precipices, running North and South; from the Top of which a Man may have a clear Prospect of both *Maryland* and *Virginia*.

All the *Low-land* is very woody, like one continu'd Forrest, no part clear'd, but what is clear'd by the *English*; who, tho they are seated pretty close one to another, cannot see their next Neighbour's House for Trees. Indeed 'tis expected that 'twill be otherwise in a few Years, for the Tobacco Trade destroys abundance of Timber, both for making of Hogsheds and building Tobacco Houses, besides clearing of Ground yearly for Planting.

The Soil of *Maryland* is generally sandy, and free from Stone, which makes it very convenient for Travelling, and there's no occasion for shoeing their Horses, except in frosty Weather; and what with the Goodness of their little Horses, and the Smoothness of the Roads, People, upon Occasion, can travel 50 Miles in a Summers Afternoon; and sometimes 100 Miles in a Day; but then their Miles are not accounted so long as in *England*.

The rich and plentiful Gifts of Nature add much to the Happiness of the Place; the three Elements affording Plenty of Food for the Use of Man, as Deer, Fowl, both Water and Land; and for the Preservation of Health, many excellent Herbs and Roots, the Discovery of whose Virtue is chiefly owing to the Indians.

They have Timber of several Kinds, good for Building, and of them several sorts of Oak; as Red, White, Black, Chesnut, Water, Spanish, and Line Oaks (which last bears a Leaf like a Willow) Cedar white and red; the latter serves only for Posts and Groundfills; the White to rive or split into Boards, that being the freest from Knots, and goes under the  
Name

Name of Cypress, tho'tis falsely so term'd. There's a Tree call'd Cypress, which is extraordinary large in Bulk, and bears a Leaf like the *Sensitive Plant*. 'Tis soft, spongy, will not rive, and is fit for no Use. Their Black Walnut is mightily esteem'd by the Joiners for its Grain and Colour. There's a sort of Poplar that makes good white Plank. 'Tis a large Tree, and bears a Flower like a Tulip. They have Plenty of Pine, and Dogwood, which is a fine Flower-bearing Plant, Sassafras, Locust, a Tree of quick Growth, and very durable in Building. Hickery, of which there are two sorts, Red and White; the latter serves chiefly for Fire-Wood, being the best for that Use. There's abundance of Chesnuts and Chinquapines, another Species of Chesnuts; a sort of Elm like a Dutch Elm; and the Sugar mention'd in the History of *Virginia*, as well as others nam'd here. In *Maryland* is a kind of Elder, whose Bark is closely guarded with Prickles, like a Briar. The Tulip-bearing-Lawrel and Myrtle of several sorts, one of which bears a Berry that is work'd up in the Eastern Shore to a kind of Green Wax, very proper to make Candles with, if mix'd with Tallow.

The Humming-Bird and Mocking-Bird are the most curious Birds in this Province, as well as in the next; and the Rattle-snake in both is the most noted of their Reptiles.

The Air is now more wholesome than formerly, which proceeds from the opening of the Country, the Air having by that means a freer Motion. The Summers now are not extream hot, as in the first seating; but their Winters are generally severe. The North-East Wind is then very sharp, and even cools the Air very much in the Heat of the Summer, when a sudden North-Western Blast too often strikes their Labourers with Fevers, if they are not careful to provide for it, by putting on their Cloaths while they are at work.

There's little or no Woollen Manufacture follow'd by any of the Inhabitants, except what is done in *Somerset* County. Tobacco is their Meat, Drink, Cloathing, and Money: Not but that they have both *Spanish* and *English* Money pretty plenty, which serves only for Pocket-Expences, and not for Trade, Tobacco

bacco being the Standard of that, as well with the Planters and others, as with the Merchants. Their common Drink is Cyder, which is very good; and where it is rightly ord<sup>r</sup>'d, not inferiour to the best white Wine. They have Wine brought from *Madera* and *Fyall*, Rum from *Barbadoes*; Bear, Mault, *French* and other Wines from *England*. There's Plenty of good Grapes growing wild in the Woods, but no Improvement is made of them.

Most of the Indians live on the Eastern Shore, where they have two or three little Towns: Some of them come over to the other side in Winter-time, to hunt for Deer, being generally employ'd by the *English*. They take Delight in nothing else, and 'tis very rare that any of them will embrace the Christians way of Living or Worship. The Cause of their Diminishing proceeded not from any Wars with the *English*, for they have had none with them worth speaking of, but from their own perpetual Discords and Wars among themselves. The Female Sex also have swept away a great many, insomuch that their Number is now very inconsiderable.

One thing is observable in them, tho they are a People very timorous, and cowardly in Fight, yet when taken Prisoners, and condemn'd, they will die like Heroes, braving the most exquisite Tortures that can be invented, and singing all the time they are upon the Rack.

If we have at any time mention'd the same thing in two severall Provinces, we have taken all possible Care not to describe it but in one, that the Reader might not be tir'd with needless Repetitions. But it will be observ'd, that every Nation of these *Barbarians* has some particular Customs, which distinguish 'em from the rest; and to make the History of each Province as perfect as lay in our Power, we have, as far as we cou'd, describ'd the Manners and Customs of all of them. We have nothing more to say of this Colony, and shall conclude with the Names of the present Governour and Council.

Col. *William Seymour*, Governour.

*Thomas Tench*, Esq;  
*Samuel Young*, Esq;  
*John Hammond*, Esq;  
*Francis Jenkins*, Esq;  
*Edward Lloyd*, Esq;  
*William Holland*, Esq;  
*Kennelau Chittleton*, Esq;  
*William Courcy*, Esq;  
*Thomas Ennals*, Esq;  
*Robert Quarry*, Esq;  
*Thomas Grinfeild*,  
*John Contee*,

Members of the  
 Council.

Secretary to the Government, *Sir Thomas Lawrence*.  
 Speaker of the Assembly, *Mr. Thomas Smithson*.  
 Naval-Officer at *Annapolis*, *Mr. William Bladen*.

---

THE  
**HISTORY**  
 OF  
**VIRGINIA.**

---

C H A P. I.

*Containing the History of Virginia, from its  
 Discovery to the Present Times.*

**B**Y the Name of *Virginia*, was formerly call'd all that Traët of Land which reach'd from *Norembequa* to *Florida*; and contain'd the Country, now known to the English by the Names of *New-England*, *New-York*, *New-Jersey*, *Pensilvania*, *Maryland*, *Virginia* and *Carolina*. The Natives call'd it *Apelehen*; and 'twas, as 'tis said, first discover'd to the Europeans by *Sebastion Cabot*, a Genoese Adventurer, who liv'd at *Bristol*; and who in the Year 1497. was sent by King *Henry VII.* to make Discoveries in the *West-Indies*. *Columbus's* Successes <sup>1497.</sup> *Its Disco-* 5 Years before, having set all the Trading Nations <sup>ry.</sup> in the World upon Expeditions into *America*, in hopes of sharing the Treasures of the *New discover'd World* with the Spaniards.

The French, who will never allow any Nation to be before them in any thing, pretend this Country was discover'd by *John Verazzan*; who took possessi-

Robbe  
Geog.

on of it in the Name of *Francis I.* that he call'd it *Mocosa*; and with *Canada*, to which he gave the Name of *New-France*, added it to the French Dominions. But this is a Fiction of their own, exploded by all Authors who treat of the Discovery of *Virginia*: For which the Crown of *England* is certainly indebted to the Care and Expence of the famous *Sir Walter Rawleigh*; who having, as appears by his admirable History of the World, made strict Enquiries into the State of the Universe; and hearing of the prodigious Profit the Spaniards drew from their Settlements in the *West-Indies*, resolv'd upon an Adventure for further Discoveries.

*Sir Walter Rawleigh undertakes it.*

His Mistress Queen *Elizabeth* was then too much employ'd in *Europe*, to think of making Attempts for Acquisitions in *America*. She was apprehensive of a War with *Spain*; and was busy'd in protecting the States of the United Provinces, and the French Protestants, against the Tyranny of *France* and *Spain*. *Sir Walter* therefore found himself under a necessity of undertaking the Adventure, on the account of private Persons, who bearing the Charge of it, were to have the Advantage.

1583.

To this Purpose, in the Year 1583. he procures several Merchants and Gentlemen to advance large Sums of Money towards carrying on the Design: And in the Year following, obtain'd Letters Pattents from the Queen, bearing Date the 25th of *March*, 1584. To possess, plant, and enjoy for himself, and such Persons as he should nominate, themselves and their Successors, all such Lands, Territories, &c. as they should discover, not then in the Possession of any Christian Nation.

1584.

*Amidas and Barlow's Voyage.*

In *April*, the Gentlemen and Merchants, by *Sir Walter Rawleigh's* Direction, fitted out two small Vessels under the Command of Captain *Philip Amidas*, and Captain *Arthur Barlow*, two of *Sir Walter's* Servants; who knowing no better Course, sail'd away for the *Canaries*, from thence to the *Caribbee* Islands, and crossing the Gulph of *Mexico*, made the Coast of *Florida*.

They were so ignorant of Navigation, that by Computation of able Seamen, they went above a thousand Leagues out of their way. Their Voyage was

was however prosperous; and they anchor'd at the In-let by *Roenoke*, at present under the Government of *North Carolina*. They landed on certain Islands on the Coast, between *Cape Fear* and the great Bay of *Chesapeac*. They afterwards went ashore on the Continent, in a Country call'd *Wingandacoa*; over which there reign'd a King, whose Name was *Wingina*. They traded with the *Indians*, and made good Profit of their Truck, the Natives parting with their Furs for things of much inferiour Value. With this Commodity, *Sasafras* and *Cedar*, they loaded their two Vessels, and return'd home, carrying with them some Pearl, which was taken for an evident Sign of the great Riches of the Country. *Amidas* and *Barlow* had made a very advantagious Voyage; and to encourage their Owners, the *New West-India Company* to continue the Trade, they represented the Place they had discover'd to be so plentiful, and so desirable, the Climate so pleasant and healthy, the Air so sweet, the Sky so serene, the Woods and Fields so fruitful and charming, and every thing so agreeable, that all that heard it were taken with the Description; and such as had not Conveniences to live pleasantly at home, were tempted to remove to this Paradise.

But the Discovery was in its Infancy, and the English then could only admire, without daring to attempt the enjoying the Sweets of so delicious a Country. Besides the Pleasantness of the Place, and the Profit of the Trade, *Barlow* and *Amidas* highly extoll'd the Innocence and good Nature of the *Indians*, and the Advantages that might be made by their Ignorance, and their Love of the English. To this they added an inviting Account of the Productions of the Soil, the Variety of Fruits, Plants and Flowers there, and their Beauty and Excellence.

They also brought over with them some Tobacco, *Tobacco* the first that was seen in *England*, and two *Indians*, *first* whose Names were *Wanchese* and *Manteo*. *brought in-*

Queen *Elizabeth* was her self so well pleas'd with the Account these Adventurers gave of the Country, that she honour'd it with the Name of *Virginia*, either because it was first discover'd in her Reign, a Virgin Queen; or, as the *Virginians* will have it, because it

*to Eng-*  
*land.*

still seem'd to retain the *Virgin Purity and Plenty* of the first Creation, and the People their Primitive Innocence.

The English Merchants were the more fond of further Adventures to *America* at this time, for that her Majesty's Ships had lately intercepted a Spanish Vessel bound home from *Mexico*, which had Letters aboard, containing a Description of the vast Treasures that were dug out of the Mines there. And the Company erected under the Auspices of Sir *Walter Rawleigh*, who some affirm gave the Name of *Virginia* to the Country himself, resolv'd on a second Voyage thither.

Sir *Walter* intended to have commanded in this Expedition himself, and to have carry'd with him a sufficient number of Forces, to have compleated his Design of making a Settlement there; but being at that time jealous that his Absence might be prejudicial to his Interest at Court, which the Earl of *Liecester* sought all Occasions to lessen, he committed the Conduct of this second Enterprize to his Lieutenant Sir *Richard Greenville*; who on the 9th of *April* set sail from *Plymouth* with seven Ships fitted out by the Company; of which himself and several other Gentlemen were Members: and this Company was the first of that kind that was establish'd in *Europe*. These King *James* incorporated by the Name of the *Governour and Company of the West-Indies*; which for their Male-administration was dissolv'd by his Son King *Charles I.*

1585. Sir *Richard Greenville*, for want of better Information, sail'd round by the *Western* and *Caribbee* Islands. He had laden his Ships with Provision, Arms, Ammunition, and spare Men to settle a Colony: With these he took the two Indians, to assist him in his Negotiations with their Countrymen: And having a prosperous Voyage, he arriv'd at *Wokokon* on the 26th of *May*; being the same place were the English had been the Year before.

In *August* following he began to plant at *Roenoke*, an Island about 5 Leagues from the Continent, which lies in 36 Degrees of Northern Latitude. He also made some little Discoveries more in the *Sound* to the Southward; trading with the Indians for Skins, Furrs, Pearl,



Pearl, and other Commodities; which they barter'd with him for things of inconsiderable Value.

He left 108 Men on *Roenoke* Island, under the Command of *Mr. Ralph Lane*, and Captain *Philip Amidas*, to keep possession of it; and himself return'd to *England*. Mr. Ralph Lane first Governor.

As soon as *Sir Richard* was gone, the Men he left behind set themselves about discovering the Continent, and rang'd up and down 80 Miles Southward, and 130 Northward, venturing indiscreetly too high up the Rivers, and too far into the Country; by which the Indians growing jealous of their Designs, began first to be weary of their Company, and cut off their Stragglers when they fell into their Hands; they also form'd a Conspiracy to destroy the rest, but were happily prevented.

The Journals of the Colony's Proceedings were duly transmitted to the Company in *England*; who was not so careful as they should have been, to send them Supplies of Provision: And the English not understanding the Nature of the Climate, had neglected to gather Food in Season, as the Indians did; by which means they were reduc'd to terrible streights. The Natives never after kept Faith with them, but watch'd all Opportunities to cut them off. And, as this oblig'd them to be more wary in their Enterprizes on the Main, so it hinder'd their receiving any Supply from them: However they endur'd all with incredible Resolution, and extended their Discoveries near 100 Miles along the Sea-Coasts.

They kept the Indians in awe, by threatning them with the return of their Companions, and a Reinforcement of Men. But no Ships coming from *England* in all that Winter, nor in the Spring following, nor in Summer, they despair'd of being able to support themselves any longer; the Natives beginning to despise them, when they saw them; as it were, abandon'd by their Countrymen, and the English expected daily to be sacrific'd to their Cruelty.

In this Distress their chief Employment was to look out to Sea, in hopes of finding some means of Escape or Recruit: And when they were almost spent with Want and Watching, Hunger and Cold, in *August* they spy'd *Sir Francis Drake's* Fleet, who was returning

from an Expedition against the Spaniards in *North-America*, and had been commanded by the Queen to visit this Plantation in his way, and see what Encouragement or Assistance it wanted.

The sight of Sir *Francis's* Fleet was the most joyful one that ever the Eyes of the poor Wretches who were left on *Roenoke-Island* beheld. Their first Petition to him, was to grant them a Supply of Men and Provisions, with a small Ship or Bark to attend them; that in case they could not maintain themselves where they were, they might embark in it for *England*.

Sir *Francis* granted their Request; and they set all hands to work to fit the Ship he had given them, and furnish her with all manner of Stores for a long stay: but a Storm arising, which drove the Vessel from her Anchor to Sea, and the Ship suffering so much in it, that she was not fit for their use, they were so discourag'd, that notwithstanding Sir *Francis* offer'd them another Ship, they were afraid to stay, and earnestly entreated him to take them with him home, which he did; and this put an end to the first Settlement.

An end of  
the first  
Settlement.

In the mean time, Sir *Walter Rawleigh* being very solicitous for the Preservation of his Colony, solicited the Company to hasten their Supplies of Men and Provisions, resolving to go with them in Person: And fearing the Colony would suffer by their Delays, he fitted out the Ship he was to go in with all possible speed; and when it was ready, set sail by himself: A Fortnight after, Sir *Richard Greenville* sail'd again from *Plimouth*, with three other Ships for *Virginia*.

Sir *Walter* fell in with the Land at *Cape Hattaras*, a little to the Southward of *Roenoke*, where the 108 Men settled; whom, after strict search, not finding there, he return'd.

The Virginians positively affirm, that Sir *Walter Rawleigh* made this Voyage in Person, but the Histories of those Times, and the Authors of the Life of Sir *Walter Rawleigh*, which has been twice written, make no mention of it. 'Tis more probable, that the common Account of it is true, that he fitted out a Vessel of a hundred Tun, loaded it with Necessaries, and dispatch'd it away to relieve his little Colony.

Before

Before this Ship arriv'd, the English had abandon'd their Settlement, and return'd with Sir *Francis Drake*. And the Master of the Vessel not being able to get any Information concerning them, made the best of his way home.

Though the Author of *The History and Present State of Virginia*, assures us Sir *Walter Rawleigh* went then himself, 'tis not likely a Man of his Quality and Character would hazard his Person so far, in no better an Employ than the Master of an Advice Boat or Tender.

When Sir *Richard* arriv'd, which was a few days after the departure of the Vessel we have mention'd, he found the Island *Roenoke*, where he left his Men, entirely deserted. He knew nothing of Sir *Francis Drake's* having been there; and thought they had been all murder'd by the Indians, till *Manteo* satisfy'd him of the contrary; but he could not tell how they got away. However Sir *Richard* left fifty Men more (some Accounts say but 15) in the same Island; order'd them to build Houses, giving them Materials, and two Years Provision; after which he return'd, having assur'd them that they should be speedily and constantly supply'd.

Navigant, Itinerant.  
A Second Settlement.

In the Year following Mr. *John White* was sent thither by the Company, with three Ships. He carry'd with him a Supply of Men, and some Women, as also plentiful Recruits of Provisions, having a Commission to settle there, and to preside over the Settlement as Governour.

He arriv'd at *Roenoke* the 22d of *July*, 1587. but found no Englishmen there; at which he was very much troubled. He enquir'd of *Manteo* what was become of them; this Indian inform'd him, that the Natives secretly set upon them, kill'd some, and the rest fled into the Woods; where they were never heard of afterwards.

1587;

Destroy'd.

To confirm *Manteo's* Information, the Fort they had built he found demolish'd, their Huts empty, the place of their Habitation all grown up with Weeds; and at the Entrance of the Fort the Bones of a dead Man.

This did not discourage Mr. *John White* from making Attempts towards a third Settlement: So he sat

A third Settlement.  
down

down in the same place, repair'd the Houses : And when he had put all things in the best Order he could for their Preservation, he proceeded to constitute a Form of Government among them, consisting of a Governour and twelve Counsellors, incorporated by the Name of the Governour and Assistants of the City of *Rawleigh* in *Virginia*.

On the 13<sup>th</sup> of *August*, *Manteo* the faithful Indian was christen'd, and created by the Governour Lord *Manteo* of *Dassamenpeak*, an Indian Nation so call'd, as a *Re-Christen'd* ward of his Fidelity and Services to the English : And on the 18<sup>th</sup> of the same Month was born the first Child that was the Issue of Christian Parents in that place, being the Daughter of Mr. *Ananias Dare* : She was after the Name of the Country christen'd *Virginia*.

'Tis from these small Beginnings that we are to trace this Colony, which has encreas'd so much since, that 'tis now one of the best Branches of the Revenue of the Crown of *England*.

Good Government and Industry soon render'd Mr. *White* and his Men formidable to the Indians, who courted their Friendship, and made Leagues with the Corporation, which they kept or broke as they thought themselves too weak or too strong for the English ; who, as much as they seem'd to thrive, underwent so many Hardships for want of due Supplies from *Europe*, that nothing but the invincible Constancy, which is the distinguishing Character of their Nation, could have supported them in so much Misery : yet so far were they from repenting of their Undertaking, or desiring to return, that they disputed for the Liberty of remaining at *Roenoke* ; and oblig'd Mr. *White* their Governour to return for *England*, and sollicite the Company to send them Recruits of Men and Provisions.

Mr. *White* undertook to negotiate their Affairs ; and leaving 115 Men in the Corporation, set sail for *England*, where he arriv'd in safety, and was two Years there before he could obtain a Grant of the necessary Supplies : At last he had three Ships fitted out for him, with Provisions and more Men for the Colony.

1589. He sail'd from *Plimouth* in the latter end of the Year 1589. taking the usual Course round by the Western and

and *Caribbee* Islands; for no other was then known. Tho they were skill'd in Navigation, and in the Knowledge of the use of the Globes, yet they chose rather to follow a prevailing Custom, and sail three thousand Miles about, than to attempt a more direct Passage.

On the 15th of *August* he arriv'd at Cape *Hattoras*, and landing on the Island *Roenoke*, found by Letters cut on the Trees, in large Roman Characters, that the English weré remov'd, but he could not tell where; They saw the Letters *C. R. O.* on several Trees; and searching further, on one of the Pallisadoes of the Fort which they had quitted, they found cut in large Capital Letters the Word *Croatan*; one of the Islands forming the Sound about 20 Leagues Southward of *Roenoke*.

On this Advice they reimbark'd in quest of their Fellows at *Croatan*; but they were scarce aboard all of them before a dreadful Storm arose, which separated the Ships one from another. They lost their Anchors and Cables, and durst not venture in with the Shore; so they all shifted for themselves; and with various Fortunes arriv'd in *England* and *Ireland*. An End of  
the third  
Settle-  
ment.

There were no more Attempts to find and relieve the 115 Men *Mr. White* left at *Roenoke* for sixteen Years following; and what became of them God only knows, for they were never heard of to this Day. 'Tis suppos'd the Indians seeing them forsaken by their Countrymen, fell upon them and destroy'd them. Mr.  
White  
returns.

This Misfortune was enough to put a stop to any further Enterprizes of this Nature for some time; and 'tis rather a matter of Wonder, that the English ever after it attempted a Settlement in *Virginia*, than that they neglected it so long, this being their third Miscarriage, and the two last with more terrible Circumstances: These were certainly the Reasons that the Design of settling a Colony there was laid aside for so long a while, and not *Sir Walter Rawleigh's* Troubles, as the Author of the *History* before mention'd pretends; for *Sir Walter* from the Year 1590. to the Death of Queen *Elizabeth*, was in full Favour at Court, and at the head of several famous Expeditions.

1602. In the Year 1602. in which Queen *Elizabeth* dy'd.  
 Captain *Bartholomew Gosnold* fitted out a small Vesse  
 Gosnold's at *Dartmouth*, and set sail in her from that Port, with  
 Voyage. 32 Sailors and Passengers for *Virginia*. He had been  
 one of the Adventurers in a former Voyage thither.  
 was an excellent Mariner, and had found out that  
 there must be a shorter cut to that part of *America*  
 than had hitherto been attempted; wherefore he de  
 sign'd a more direct Course, and did not stand so far  
 to the Southward, or pass by the *Caribbee* Islands, as  
 all former Adventurers had done, by which they not  
 only sail'd many hundreds of Leagues out of their Way,  
 but were expos'd to the difficult Shores and dangerous  
 Currents of the Islands, and the Coasts of *Florida*.

He attain'd his end in avoiding those Coasts and  
 Currents, and taking a nearer Course than any had  
 done before him.

He arriv'd in the Latitude of 42 Degrees, and a few  
 Minutes, to the Northward of *Roenoke*, among the  
 Islands, forming the North side of *Massachusetts* Bay  
 in *New-England*; where not finding the Convenien  
 ces he desir'd, he set sail again; and when he thought  
 he had got clear of the Land, he fell upon the Bay of  
*Cod*, now part of *New-England*.

By his Method of Navigation he shorten'd his way  
 500 Leagues, and yet went farther about by as many  
 more than our Ships do now.

Captain *Gosnold* stay'd some time on the Coast,  
 trading with the Indians for their Furrs, Skins, &c.  
 with which, *Sassafras* and some other Commodities,  
 he loaded his Ship, and return'd, having too few Men  
 in his Company to pretend to a Settlement. This  
 Voyage was so healthy, that neither himself nor any  
 of his Crew were in the least indispos'd in all the time.  
 He was the first that had made it turn to any account  
 since *Barlow* and *Amidas's* Voyage; and gave such a  
 good Description of the commodious Harbours, plea  
 sant Places, and profitable Trade he had met with,  
 that the English once more began to talk of a Planta  
 tion in *Virginia*; and several Merchants, particularly  
 the Mayor and some Aldermen of *Bristol*, with  
 whom Mr. *Hackluit*, who made a very good Collecti  
 on of Voyages to *America*, was concern'd, set out  
 Ships to trade to the same Places.

Two Vessels fitted out by the *Bristol Men*, fell in with the same Land Captain *Gosnold* had done, follow'd his Method and Traffick, and return'd with a rich Lading.

The *Bristol Merchants* encourag'd by this Adventure, continu'd their Voyages thither, and encreas'd their Commerce from time to time so much, that for many Years they were the most considerable Traders to that Colony; and, considering the Inequality of their Numbers, out-did the Londoners by much, till the Merchants of *Leverpoll* drove them out of the Irish Trade, and rivall'd them in that to *Virginia*.

The next Ship that sail'd thither from *England* was commanded by Captain *Martin Pring*, fitted out by the *Bristol Men*, who came to *Whitsan Bay*, anchor'd there, and traded with the Natives to advantage.

Capt. Pring's Voyage.

The same Year Captain *Gilbert* in the *Elizabeth* of *London*, made a Voyage to *Virginia*, but not with the like Success. He traded with the Savages in the *Caribbee Islands*, viz. *St. Lucia, Dominica, Nevis, St. Christophers*, and thence proceeded to the Bay of *Chesepeac* in *Virginia*, being the first that sail'd up into it, and landed there. The Indians set upon him and his Company in the Woods, and Captain *Gilbert* and 4 or 5 of his Men were kill'd by their Arrows; upon which his Crew return'd home.

The trading Voyages of *Gosnold* and the *Bristol Men* began to put the English on new Attempts for a Settlement: But before it could be brought to pass, *Henry Earl of Southampton*, and *Thomas Lord Arundel* of *Warder*, fitted out a Ship under the Command of Capt. *George Weymouth*, who fell upon the Eastern Parts of *Long-Island* (as 'tis now call'd) where they landed, and traffick'd with the Indians, made Trial of the Soil by English Grain; and found the Natives more affable and courteous than the Inhabitants of those other parts of *Virginia* which the English had discover'd; but the Adventurers being greedy of Gain, over-reach'd the Indians, imposing on their Ignorance; of which they growing jealous, it occasion'd the many Murthers and Massacres that follow in the Course of this History.

Capt. Weymouth's Voyage.

Capt. *Weymouth* enter'd the River of *Powhatan* Southward of the Bay of *Chesapeac*. He sail'd up above Forty Miles, finding the Channel deep and broad, being a Mile over, and 7 to 10 Fathom in depth, having Creeks on every side at every half Mile Distance, all deep and safe; in which Ships of 500 Tuns may ride in many places, with a Cable or shore in the soft Oaze.

As he coasted along this River, he traffick'd with the Natives, bartering his Trifles for their Treasures: the Indians giving him to the value of 10 or 12 *l.* in Furs, Beaver, Otter, and Sable, for five Shillings worth of Knives, Combs, Beads and Toyes.

In one place where he traded, he and his Crew had like to have been surpriz'd by the Natives, who inviting him ashore on pretence of Traffick, plac'd 300 Men with Bows and Arrows in an Ambuscade; but Capt. *Weymouth* march'd with so much Caution, and so well arm'd, that they durst not attack him. He sent his Boat 70 Miles up the River, in which his Ship lay 6 Weeks. While he was there he made trial of the Soil of the Country with English Grain, which he found thriv'd; as it did in other parts of *Virginia* where the Experiment had been made.

Having laden his Ship with the Commodities of the Place, such as Furs, Safafra, and Tobacco, he return'd to *England*, carrying 3 or 4 Savages whom he had taken Prisoners with him.

The Account he gave of his Voyage when he came home, tempted others to adventure thither, but none had the Courage to think of a Settlement. They had forgot the 115 Men whom Mr. *White* had left at *Roanoke*: Their Pity was too weak for their Avarice, Trade and Profit was all they thought of; and these private Adventurers would have put the Design of a Colony out of the Peoples head, had not Capt. *Gosnold* so effectually sollicitated the Settlement of *Virginia* in the Court of King *James*, that several Gentlemen contributed towards it; and the King incorporated two Companies in one Patent, bearing date the 10th of *April*, 1606. for two Colonies.

1606. The first Company were Sir *Tho. Gates*, Sir *George Summers*, the Reverend Mr. *Richard Hackluit*, Prebend of *Westminster*, and *Edward Maria Wingfeild*, Esq;

The South  
Virginia  
Company.



Esq; who were the *London-Adventurers*, and had liberty by their Patent to seat themselves, and such as shou'd join with them at any place on the Coast of *Virginia*, between the Degrees of 34 and 41 of Northern Latitude. They were allow'd to extend their Bounds from the place of their Plantation 50 English Miles, each way, and one hundred Miles up in the Country, directly from the Sea-Coast, and none was permitted to Plant or dwell there without leave of the Company or their Council.

This Patent included *Maryland*, *Virginia* and *Carolina*, as they are now distinguish'd from each other.

The second Company were *George Popham*, Esq; and others, as we shall shew in the History of *New-England*, these were call'd the *Plimouth-Adventurers*.

They had liberty by their Patent to plant and inhabit any Part of the Continent between the Degrees of 38 and 45 of Northern Latitude, with the like Privileges and Bounds as the First Company.

In this Patent was included *New-England*, *New-York*, *New-Jersey* and *Pensilvania*, as they are now divided into several Provinces; but the whole Country was then call'd *Virginia*, That which was granted to the second Colony, as well as that which was granted to the first. The latter was the earliest in their Settlement: For in the same year with the Date of their Patent, they fitted out two Ships under the Command of Capt. *Newport*, who fell in with the Coast near Cape *Henry*, the Southermost Point of the Bay *Cheseapeac*.

1606.

With him went the Honourable Mr. *Percy*, Brother to the Earl of *Northumberland*, Capt. *Gosnoll*, Capt. *Smith*, Capt. *Ratcliffe*, Capt. *Martin*, Mr. *Wingfield*, of whom the 5 last were of the Council. They took a Minister, and abundance of Handicraft Tradesmen with them. Capt. *Newport* rais'd a Fort at the Mouth of the River *Powhatan*. Here he left 100 Men, with Provisions, Arms, Ammunition, and other Necessaries to make a Settlement; and this was the first Colony that remain'd on the Place. The first Company resolving to prosecute their Undertaking vigorously, had taken Capt. *John Smith* into their Service. He was a noted Seaman, who from a mean Original had acquir'd a great Reputation by his Adventures. Capt. *Smith* chearfully undertook the Employment, and

Capt.

Newport.

First Colo-

ny that

remain'd.

and ventur'd his all on that Bottom. The Company were impower'd by their Patent to choose a President and Counsellors to grant Commissions, and exercise judicial Authority. Accordingly they gave a Commission to the Gentlemen above-mention'd to establish a Colony in their Territories, and govern it by a President and Council, who were invested with sufficient Authorities and Powers.

The Gentlemen who went over with Capt. *Smith*, were very unkind to him, and envying his Zeal and Experience in Maritime Affairs, they us'd him so ill, that 'twas thought they intended to put him to Death. This was carry'd on by the President Mr. *Wingfield*, a covetous haughty Person, who, while Capt. *Smith* was trading and treating with the Indian Kings, contriv'd his Ruin: False Witnesses were produc'd to swear ill Designs against him, and he was not only refus'd to be admitted into the Council, but thrown into Prison, where he lay till all the Forgeries of his Enemies were detected. He then was admitted a Member of the Council; Mr. *Wingfield* was depos'd from his Precedency, and Capt. *Radcliff* chosen President, who knowing Capt. *Smith's* Ability, left the Administration of Affairs to him.

Mr. *Wingfield* President.

Capt. *Radcliff*, President.

The Company gave Captain *Newport*, when he set out, orders to Sail to that Part of *Virginia*, where Mr. *White* left his Miserable Colony, tho there was no Security of Harbour there. Captain *Smith* was the Pilot of this little Fleet, and as good a Seaman as he was, went the old round-about way, by the Western and Charibbee Islands, and past his own Accounts in Navigation twice or thrice, in-somuch that his Companions began to Despair of reaching the Place they were bound for, and to think of returning to *England*. But when they were at the Point of returning, Capt. *Smith*, with two of his Vessels, luckily fell in with *Virginia*, at the Mouth of *Chesapeac* Bay. Some Authors distinguish Capt. *Smith's* Voyage from Capt. *Newport's*; and affirm, that the first Settlement which remain'd, was made by *Smith*, but others make the Voyage of Capt. *Newport* Prior to *Smith's*. Leaving this Dispute to be decided by the Company's Books, and the *Virginians*, we proceed in our History.

Capt.

Capt. *Smith*, when he had the Management of Affairs, built a Fort on the Southern Cape, which he nam'd Cape *Henry*, from Prince *Henry* King *James's* Eldest Son: the Northern he call'd Cape *Charles*, from Prince *Charles*, afterwards *Charles I.* And the River *Powhatan* he call'd *James River*, after the King's own Name.

Before the President and Council proceeded to a *James*-Settlement, they made a full Search of *James River*, and Town then they unanimously pitch'd on a Peninsula, about built 50 Miles up the River to build a Town upon, which they call'd *James-Town*.

The Soil about it is very good, the place it self two thirds environ'd by the Main River, which affords good Anchorage, and the other third by a small narrow River, capable of receiving Vessels of 100 Tuns, by which means the Ground the Town stands upon is a sort of an Island. Here they built Castles and a Fort, and might have gone on with Success, had not their own Divisions put a stop to the Growth of their Settlement, and given the Indians an Advantage over them. One hundred and eight Men staid upon the place.

'Tis certain that in this year 1607. the Plantation of *Virginia* was first settled by about one hundred Persons, and that from these small Beginnings it rose to the Figure it has since made in the British Commerce. The two Ships were sent back by the President and Council to fetch Recruits of Men and Provisions, and in the mean while those that remain'd fell to Planting and Sowing, to Building, Fortifying, and Trading with the Indians, making a prodigious Profit by their Traffick. But each private Trader being at liberty to sell their Goods at what Rates he please, the English undersold one another, by which means the Natives who had bought dearer than their Neighbours, thought they were cheated, and so conceiv'd an Aversion to the English in general, which ended in a National Quarrel.

The Trade was further interrupted by a sort of yellow *Dust-Isinglas*, which was found to be wash'd down by a Stream in a Neck of Land on the back of *James-Town*. This the English mistook for Gold, and all their Hearts were set

set upon it, to the neglect of their real Profit by Traffick, and their Security and Preservation, by making Provision for a time of Necessity, which then came upon them; for while they were all running mad after this Visionary Gold; their Town was burnt, their Stores consum'd, and they were reduc'd to the last Extremities of Wants. Many of them were also destroy'd by the Indians, none minding their defence, so much were they infatuated with the Hopes of Mountains of Wealth, by the help of these New-found-Sands; and they already began to despise the Mines of *Mexico* and *Peru*, in comparison of their own inestimable Stream. In the mean time they labour'd under unspeakable Difficulties, which however they bore with patience, being comforted by their golden Dreams. One of the Ships that had been sent back to *England* for Provisions, return'd; and they loaded her home with this *Yellow Dust*, thinking all the Stowage wasted that was bestow'd on Furr's or Druggs, and cou'd hardly afford any room for Cedar. Not long after her departure the other Ship arriv'd, and her they also loaded home with this imaginary Gold Dust, with Cedar and Clap-board to fill up. They were all so busy in Fishing for the Dirt, that they cou'd spare no time for Discoveries, till the heat of their Avarice began to Cool a little, and some of the wiser Sort to suspect, that according to a good old English Proverb, *All was not Gold that glister'd*. At last Capt. *Smith*, with part of the Colony, made several Discoveries in *James-River*, and up *Chesapeac Bay*, with two Sloops which they had brought with them for that Purpose.

1608.

In the same Year 1608. the English first gather'd Indian Corn of their own Planting, and they might have flourish'd, had not their Feuds, Folly, and Negligence, hinder'd their Success, and been the cause of their Future Mischiefs. For in Capt. *Smith's* absence, Matters fell into Confusion; several uneasy People were for deserting the Settlement, and attempted to run away with a small Vessel, which was left to attend it, but they were prevented.

Capt. *Smith* in his Expedition among the Savages, was surpriz'd, assaulted, and taken Prisoner by them. He was then making Discovery on the River

*Chico-*

*Chicohomony*, where *Oppecamcanough*, a King of that Nation, fell upon him treacherously, and put all his Men to death, after he had forc'd them to lay down their Arms. He not only spar'd Mr. *Smith's* Life, but carry'd him to his Town, feasted him, presented him to *Powhatan* the Chief King of the Savages, who wou'd have beheaded him, had he not been sav'd at the Intercession of *Powhatan's* Daughter *Pocahonta*, of whom we shall have occasion to say more hereafter. Capt. *Smith* returning to *James-Town*, found the Colony in such Distractions, that 'twas likely to break up. When he had prevail'd upon them to remain there, Capt. *Newport* return'd with Supplies of Men and Provilions, and they both paid a Visit to *Powhatan*, who receiv'd them in great State. Capt. *Newport* did not stay long in *Virginia*, and Capt. *Radcliff* resigning his Presidency, Capt. *Smith* was unanimously desir'd to accept of that Office. He made a second Expedition for Discoveries, leaving Mr. *Scrivener* Vice-President, but the Affairs of the Settlement still ran to destruction.

In the year following, 1609. *John Layden*, and *Anne Burroughs* were marry'd, which was the first Christian Marriage in *Virginia*, and in the same Year the President and Council at *James-Town* sent out People to make two other Settlements, one at *Nansamund*, under Capt. *Martin* in *James-River*; and the other at *Powhatan*, 6 Miles below the Falls of *James-River*, under the Honourable Mr. *West*: Mr. *Martin* attempting to seize the King of *Nansamund*, was forc'd to fly from his Settlement, and Mr. *West* did not stay long at his.

The Colony was by this time so encreas'd by Recruits from *England*, that the People of *James-Town* cou'd spare 120 Men for each of these Settlements. Not long after another Settlement was made at *Kiquotan*, at the Mouth of *James-River*. *Powhatan* was an Indian Town, and was bought of *Powhatan* King of *Werocomoco*, for some Copper.

The Company in *England* understanding how prejudicial the Divisions in their Colony were to the advancement of the Settlement, Petition'd the King for leave to appoint a Governour, which was granted them in a new Patent. Pursuant to this Grant they made the

Lord De-  
laware  
Governour.

Sir Tho. Lord *Delaware* Governour of the Colony, whose  
 Gates, Sir Brother Mr. *West* liv'd then in *Virginia*. My Lord  
 George appointed three of the Members of the Society, Sir  
 Summers, *Thomas Gates*, Sir *George Summers*, and Captain *New-*  
 Capt. *Newport*, to be Joint Deputy Governours.

Dep. Go- These three Gentlemen embark'd in one Ship, and  
 vernors. set sail, with eight more in their Company, loaden  
 with Provisions and Necessaries. The Ship in which  
 the Governours were, being separated from the rest  
 in a Storm, was driv'n ashore, and stay'd at *Bermudas*,  
 but the Crew were all sav'd, and the three Gover-  
 nours with the rest; who, notwithstanding the dan-  
 gers they had run, were always jangling, to the great  
 detriment of their Affairs.

While they were there, the two Knights had per-  
 petual Quarrels among themselves, form'd Factions;  
 and their Differences grew to such a height, that they  
 would not embark in the same Vessel; so they built  
 each of them one of Cedar, picking up the Furniture  
 of their old Ship for Rigging; and instead of Pitch  
 and Tar, they made use of Fish Oil, and Hogs Grease  
 mix'd with Lime and Ashes.

Several of the Nine Ships that came out with the  
 Governours, arriv'd in *James-River*; and by their  
 Arrival, encreas'd the Disorder in the Settlements  
 there; for, pretending that the new Commission  
 dissolv'd the old one, they would not submit to the  
 Government they found on the Place; the fatal Con-  
 sequence of which we shall see hereafter.

We must now return to Capt. *Smith*, who while  
 the Company were preparing to dispatch away the  
 three Governours, and those Gentlemen stay'd at  
*Bermudas*, continu'd his making Discoveries with  
 great Difficulties and Hazards; in which he was op-  
 pos'd by *Powhatan*; with whom he made War, and  
 had frequent Advantages of the Indians, tho not with-  
 out Loss; himself was twice taken Prisoner by him,  
 once, as was hinted before, as he was making a Di-  
 sccovery of the Head of *Chickahomony* River, and a-  
 nother time by an Ambuscade at *Onawmomet*. The  
 manner of his Treatment among the Indians, and his  
 Escape, his Friendship with *Nautaquaus* the King's  
 Son, and the surprizing Tendernefs of *Pocahonts* his  
 Daughter for him, when he was about to be executed,

Capt.  
 Smith's  
 Adven-  
 tures.

are Incidents equally agreeable and surprizing. He has given a large Account of them in his own History, to which the Reader is refer'd; only we cannot omit relating the wonderful Humanity of *Pocahonta*, who when Mr. *Smith's* Head was on the Block, and she could not prevail with her Father to give him his Life, put her own Head upon his, and ventur'd the receiving of the Blow to save him, tho she was then scarce thirteen Years old: A remarkable Instance, how vain we are to our selves, in thinking that all who do not resemble us in our Customs are barbarous.

*The Friendship of Pocahonta, an Indian Princess.*

We shall have occasion in this Chapter to say something more of this generous Lady, who was the first *Virginian* that ever spoke English, or had a Child by an Englishman, and the first Christian of that Nation.

Capt. *Smith* having twice got out of the Hands of the Indians, proceeded in advancing the new settled Colony, which was now so numerous, that there were 500 Men in *James-City*, and Plantations up and down the Country; but Mr. *Smith* happening to be blown up by the accidental firing of some Gun-powder in his Boat, was so wounded that his Life was despaired of, and his Friends oblig'd him to embark for *England* to be cur'd.

*Capt. Smith returns to England.*

He was no sooner gone, but those he left behind, Capt. *Radcliff* and Capt. *Martin*, fell out among themselves, and the Confusion increas'd upon the Arrival of the Ships belonging to the three Governours Fleet. The Colony soon mis'd their late President Mr. *Smith*, who by his Wisdom, Vigilance, Courage and Care, preserv'd the Settlements in good Order. Without him they had certainly been destroy'd, either by their own Laziness and Negligence, or the Treachery and Cruelty of the Indians: He always kept their Granaries full, and by fair means or force oblig'd the Indians to bring in Corn and Provisions. He aw'd them so much by his Valour, that they durst not make any Attempts against the English, for whose defence he rais'd Forts and Batteries, and was indeed the Soul of the Settlement; for as soon as he left it the People decreas'd daily, and by the Treason of the Natives, or Want and Hunger, to which they were soon reduc'd, their Numbers were lessen'd to 60, when Sir *Thomas Gates* and Sir *George Summers* arriv'd: 'Tis true, they

*The miserable State of the Colony.*

made some unsuccessful Attempts to defend themselves ; Capt. *Sicklemore* and Capt. *Radcliff*, with a Company of Men, going amongst the Indians to trade, were surpriz'd, and 60 Men slain by *Powhatan*, who would have no Dealing with them after Capt. *Smith's* Departure. All those that had settled in any other part of the Country, fled from the Indians to *James-Town*, except the Planters at *Kiquotan*, who being defended by *Algernoon-Fort*, maintain'd themselves against the Natives, but could not subsist for want of Provisions, which they, as well as their Country-men at *James-Town*, had wasted, and like them they were almost famish'd : Their Distress was so great, that they fed on the dead Bodies of the Indians whom they slew, and even dug up and eat those that were bury'd.

This dreadful Famine is still remember'd in *Virginia*, by the Name of the *Starving Time*. The Persons who came in the last Ships continu'd their Dissention amidst these Calamities; during which, some of them who pretended to be of the Three Governours Council, assum'd the Administration; and tho' the Commission was not arriv'd, usurp'd the Power of Governing, to the Ruin of the Settlement; which, by Famine and Sicknes, bred by bad Diet, were reduc'd from above 500 to 60 Persons.

1610. The Three Governours in the mean while set sail on the 11th of *May*, 1610. from *Bermudas*, in their two small Cedar Ships, with 150 Men in their Company; and in 14 Day arriv'd in *Virginia*. They went up to *James-Town* with their Vessels, where they found the poor Remains of the Colony.

Sir *Thomas Gates*, Sir *George Summers*, and Capt. *Newport* pity'd their deplorable State, and immediately call'd a Council, to consult of what should be done for their Relief. They inform'd them they had but 16 Days Provision aboard, and demanded of them whether they would venture to Sea with that, or stay in the Settlement, and take their Fortunes; in which they would very willingly share with them.

They soon resolv'd to abandon *James-Town*, and return for *England*; and, because Provisions fell short, to call at the Banks of *New-foundland*, in hopes to meet some Fishermen there, and in such case, to divide them-



themselves into several Crews, and go aboard several Ships, for their better Accomodation.

This Resolution being taken, they all went aboard, and fell down to *Hog-Island* the 9th of *June*, at Night; and the next Morning to *Mulberry-Island*, 18 Miles below *James-Town*, and 30 from the Mouth of the River; where they spy'd a Ship's Boat coming up to them, which the Lord *Delaware* had sent before him to sound the Channel.

The Lord Delaware arrives.

This Lord brought with him 3 Ships, very well provided with all manner of Provisions and Necessaries, and 250 People to recruit the Colony. The Lord *Delaware* perswaded them to return to *James-Town*; and by his good conduct brought the Settlement into a flourishing Condition. He restor'd Discipline among them, renew'd their Trade with the Indians, which had been interrupted by their Wars with them; and made the Savages once more afraid of attacking them, either openly, or by surprize.

In his time the Government had the Form of an Establishment, and several Men of Quality bore Offices in it, as the Lord *Delaware* Lord Governour, and Captain General, Sir *Thomas Gates* Lieutenant General, Sir *George Summers* Admiral, the Honourable *George Piercy* Esq; Governour of *James-Town* and *Fort*, Sir *Ferdinando Wenman* Master of the Ordnance, Capt. *Newport* Vice Admiral, *William Strachy* Esq; Secretary; an Appearance of Officers that has not since that time been seen in *Virginia*.

My Lord sent Sir *George Summers* and Capt. *Argall* to *Bermudas* to fetch Provisions: Sir *George* dy'd in the Voyage; but Capt. *Argall* got a Supply of Cod-fish at *Sagadahoc* in *New-England*.

Sir *Thomas Gates* was sent for by the Company at *London*, to give them an Account of their Proceedings; and the Lord *Delaware* being taken sick, left Mr. *Percy* Deputy Governour, and return'd to *England*; where he made the Adventurers such a pleasing Report of their Affairs, that they order'd it to be published.

The Honourable Geo. Piercy Esq; Deputy Governor.

There were now about 250 Men on *James-River*; over whom Sir *Thomas Dale* was plac'd, with the Title of Marshal General, by the *London* Council: He arriv'd there the 10th of *June*, 1611. with three Ships laden

laden with Provisions and Necessaries, having Supplies of Men, and some live Cattle, and Hogs aboard, for Labour and Breed.

On his Predecessor's Departure the Colony fell into their old Disorders, and began to be in Want, occasion'd by their Sloth and Dissention. They depended on their Supplies from *England*, and neglected to plant Corn, to subsist them in case of a Disappointment, which they might reasonably have expected, considering the Length and Hazards of the Voyage.

From this Knights Government the Prosperity of the Plantation may be dated, for he set all the English to work, and did not disdain to put his own Hand to the Spade and the Axe, to help to turn up the Earth, and fell Trees; and that they might no more depend on the Natives for Corn, he put them upon sowing Grain of their own; which, tho they did not begin to prepare the Ground till the Middle of *May*, yielded an indifferent good Crop: he order'd Land to be wall'd in for Fences from wild Beasts, and the wilder Indians: He enlarg'd the English Bounds; survey'd the Rivers to find out a Place convenient for the building a new Town, which was done at his own Charge, and was from him call'd *Dales-Gift*.

*Dales-Gift*  
built.

The Company in *England*, notwithstanding they had hitherto met with very little Encouragement, continu'd to supply their Colony with all sorts of Necessaries, sollicit'd to do it by the Lord *Delaware* and Sir *Thomas Gates*: The latter was sent with 6 Ships more, having 350 Men on board, 100 Head of live Cattle, and Plenty of Provisions and Tools for Labour and Life.

*Sir Tho.*  
*Gates Co-*  
*vernor.*

Sir *Thomas* arriv'd in *August*, took upon him the Government; and in *September* he settled a new Town at *Arrahattuck*, about sixty Miles above *James-City*, calling it *Henricopolis*, or *Henry's-Town*, in honour of *Henry* Prince of *Wales*.

*Henrico-*  
*polis built.*

Here he built Forts and Centry-boxes, and ran a Palisadoe on the other side of the River at *Coxendale*, to secure their Hogs.

The English now plough'd the Ground, whereas before they planted all their Corn with the Spade; they also spread themselves abroad in the Country, and

and possess'd themselves of private Plantations, which they cultivated, and planted Tobacco and Corn, each Planter paying a Quit-Rent to the Treasury of the Colony.

Their Cattle, especially their Hogs, encreas'd prodigiously; Laws and Order began to flourish, Industry to thrive, and the Plantation to have the Face of a Settlement that look'd to be lasting; yet it was not long before new Dangers threaten'd their Destruction; from which however the hand of God deliver'd them.

The Company at London finding the Colony was in a flourishing Condition, thought it their Duty to provide for the Welfare of their Souls, as well as their Bodies; and to that end invited many charitable Persons to contribute to the building them Churches, and founding Schools for the Education of their Youth. Many devout People, in hopes of propagating the Gospel, open'd their Purfes; Ministers were sent over, Churches built, and supply'd with Preachers; as will be shewn more at large in its proper place.

In the Year 1612. Capt. *Argall*, afterwards Sir *Samuel*, arriv'd from *England* with two Ships more for the use of the Settlement. Sir *Thomas* sent *Argall* to *Potowmack* to buy Corn, where he met with *Pocahonts*, the Lady of whom we have before made honourable mention. He invited her to come aboard his Ship, which with some small difficulty she consented to, being betray'd by the King of *Pastancy*, Brother to the King of *Potowmack*, with whom she then resided.

*Argall* having got her in his Custody, detain'd her, and carry'd her to *James-Town*, intending to oblige her Father King *Powhatan* to come to what Terms he pleas'd, for the Deliverance of his Daughter: Tho the King lov'd her tenderly, yet he would not do any thing for her sake which he thought was not for his own and his Nations Interest; nor would he be prevail'd upon to conclude a firm Treaty of Peace, tho Sir *Thomas Dale* went himself to treat with him about it, being then Marshal under Sir *Thomas Gates*, till he heard his Daughter, who turn'd Christian, and was christened *Rebecca*, was marry'd to Mr. *John Rolfe*, an English Gentle

*Pocahonts* seiz'd by Capt. *Argall*.

*She marrys* Gentleman, her Uncle giving her in Marriage in the  
*Mr. Rolfe.* Church.

1613.

*Powhatan* approv'd of the Marriage, took it for a sincere Token of Friendship, and was so pleas'd with it, that he concluded a League with the English in the Year 1613. Intermarriage was propos'd at that time, as a sure means of continuing the Peace with the Indians: And how far it would have answer'd that end, the Reader may judge; but the English were not fond of taking the Indian Women to their Beds as their Wives. Whether it was on account of their being Pagans or Barbarians we cannot decide; or whether that Nicety was not very unseasonable in the Infancy of the Settlement.

By *Powhatan's* Alliance with the English, and *Mr. Rolfe's* marrying an Indian Princess, a great Nation were made Friends to the Colony: And thus they conceiv'd hopes that they had secur'd themselves from the Insults of the Savages: But we shall see in a Page or two they flatter'd themselves in their Security, when they were never nearer Destruction. Tho' *Sir Thomas Gates* was on the spot, yet *Sir Thomas Dale* had a great share in the Government; and *Capt. Argall* reduc'd the *Chicohomony* Indians.

*Capt. Geo.*  
*Yardly*  
*Dep. Go-*  
*vernour.*  
1616.

These two Gentlemen were very industrious in the Service of the Colony; and the former, *Sir Thomas Dale*, upon *Sir Thomas Gates's* return to *England*, in the Year 1614. presid'd over it two Years; during which time it flourish'd; and he then going for *England*, left *Capt. George Yardly* Deputy Governour; took *Mr. Rolfe* and his Wife *Pocahonta* with him, and arriv'd at *Plimouth* the 12th of *June*.

*Pocohon-*  
*ta arrives*  
*in Eng-*  
*land.*

*Capt. Smith* hearing the Lady who had been so kind to him was arriv'd in *England*, and being engag'd at that time in a Voyage to *New-England*, which hinder'd his waiting on her himself, petition'd *Queen Anne*, Consort to *King James*, on her behalf, setting forth the Civilities he had receiv'd from her, and the Obligations she had laid upon the English, by the Services she had done them with her Father.

The *Queen* receiv'd his Petition graciously; and before *Capt. Smith* embark'd for *New-England*, *Mr. Rolfe* came with his Wife from *Plimouth* to *London*. The Smoak of the City offending her, he took Lodgings

ings for her at *Brentford*, and thither Capt. *Smith* went with several Friends to wait on her.

*Pocahonta* was told all along that Capt. *Smith* was dead, to excuse his not coming to *Virginia* again, from which he had been diverted, by settling a Colony in *New-England*. Wherefore when this Lady saw him, thinking the English had injur'd her in telling her a Falsity, which she had ill deserv'd from them, she was so angry, she wou'd not deign to speak to him; but at last, with much Perswasion and Attendance, was reconcil'd, and talk'd freely to him: She then put him in mind of the Obligations she had laid upon him; reproach'd him with forgetting her, with an Air so lively, and Words so sensible, that one might have seen Nature abhors nothing more than Ingratitude; a Vice which even the very Savages detest.

*Her Treatment at Court and Behaviour.*

She was carry'd to Court by the Lady *Delaware*, and entertain'd by Ladies of the first Quality, towards whom she behav'd her self with so much Grace and Majesty, that she confirm'd the bright Character Capt. *Smith* had given of her. The whole Court were charm'd with the Decency and Grandeur of her Deportment so much, that the poor Gentleman her Husband, was threaten'd to be call'd to an account for marrying a Princess Royal without the King's Consent.

Tho in that King *James* shew'd a very notable piece of *King-Craft*; for there was no likelihood that Mr. *Rolfe* by marrying *Pocahonta*, could any way endanger the Peace of his Dominions, or that his Alliance with the King of *Wiccomoco* could concern the King of *Great-Britain*: Indeed we are told that upon a fair and full Representation of the Matter, the King was pleas'd to be satisfy'd.

The Lady *Pocahonta* having been entertain'd with all manner of Respect in *England*, was taken ill at *Gravesend*, where she lay in order to embark for *Virginia*: She dy'd there with all the Signs of a sincere Christian, and true Penitent.

*She dies in England.*

She had one Son by Mr. *Rolfe*, whose Posterity are at this day in good Repute in *Virginia*.

Capt. *Yardly*, whom Sir *Thomas Dale* had left Governour, let the Buildings and Forts run to Decay, being

being so eager in planting Tobacco, that he neglected the Security of the Settlements, and would not spare Hands enough to keep the Fortifications in repair: He also omitted sowing Corn. And thus the Colony fell into their usual Distress, were reduc'd to great Want, and expos'd to the Mercy of the Indians.

1617.  
Sir Sam.  
Argall  
Governor.

In the following Year Sir *Samuel Argall* came over Governour; who was griev'd to see the Number of the People lessen'd, and every thing running to ruin.

The Indians also, by mixing with the English, had learnt the use of Fire-Arms; and the Planters out of Laziness employ'd them to hunt and kill Wild-Fowl for them.

Sir *Samuel Argall* did what he could to regulate these Disorders; but the Mischief had taken so deep root, that he could not hinder its Growth.

Capt. *Yardly* return'd to *England*, and Sir *Samuel Argall* govern'd the Colony in Peace till the next Year.

1618.

1618. when the Lord *Delaware*, who all this time seems to have been Chief Governour, and those that succeeded him only his Deputies, came near the Coast with 200 choice Men, fresh recruits of Provisions, and all manner of Necessaries.

My Lord still sail'd the old way by the *Canary* and *Caribbee* Islands. The Length of the Voyage had an ill Effect on his People, of whom 30 dy'd; and the Lord *Delaware* himself did not live to reach *Virginia*; so that Sir *Samuel* continu'd in the Government.

Lord De-  
laware  
dies on the  
Coast.

*Powhatan* dying in *April*, left his Kingdom to his second Brother *Itopatin*, who renew'd the League with the English: But this Prince was soon outed of his Dominions by *Oppecanough* his younger Brother, who reign'd over *Chickahomony*, made himself Master of all the Nations around him and his Empire at last became formidable to the English.

Sir *Sam. Argall* finding his Colony was in Peace, and that they thriv'd a-pace under his Government, began to look about him a little, and resolv'd to undertake an Expedition on the Coasts, to make Discoveries, and dislodge the French, who had settled in *Acadia*.

In his way he drove out some *Hollanders*, who had seated themselves on *Hudsons* River; he then attack'd a Settlement of French to the Northward of *Cape Cod*; and afterwards drove Monsieur *Bien-court* from *Port-Royal* in *Canada*, where the French had sow'd and reap'd, built Barns, Mills, and other Conveniences:

Sir Sam. Argall's Expeditions against the French and Dutch.

Those of them that were for returning to *France* he permitted to embark; which some of them did, and others went up the River of *Canada*, to make a new Settlement there.

With the Plunder of these two Forts Sir *Samuel* return'd to *Virginia*: And how he could justify his attacking the Subjects of a Prince who was at Peace with his Master King *James*, does not appear in the Histories which mention this Event; only we are told, that some Months after it there arriv'd a small Vessel from *England*, which did not stay for any thing, but as soon as Governour *Argall* was on board, it set sail, and carry'd him home. The occasion of his being recall'd is not know; and therefore 'tis imputed to his attacking the French.

He is recall'd. Capt. Nath. Powell Dept. Governour. Sir Geo. Yardly Governour.

He left Capt. *Nathaniel Powell* Deputy; who the same Year resign'd his Office to Sir *George Yardly*, whom King *James* had Knighted, and the Company made Governour.

I here arriv'd with Sir *George*, and some Months after him, 1300 Men in 21 Ships, the Earl of *Southampton*, one of the Company at *London*, being zealous to furnish them with Supplies of Men, Cattle and other Provisions. These seated themselves in all the Plantations that had been deserted, and planted new ones. And now the Colony grew so numerous, that to have the Consent of the whole in the Passing of any Laws or Orders for the Publick Good, Representatives were appointed to be chosen for every Precinct, whom the People were to Elect in their several Plantations.

These Representatives, being the first Assembly that sat in *Virginia*, met at *James-Town* in *May*, 1620. The Governour and Council at first sat with them, as the High Commissioner, Lords and Commons, sit together in the Parliament in *Scotland*; here the Affairs of the Settlement were debated. We shall see

The first Assembly. 1620.

in

in the following Chapters how this Method of their Session came to be alter'd.

In *August* a Dutch Ship put in there with Negroes, and the Merchant sold 20, which were the first Slaves that were brought thither from *Guinea*. This Year also the Boundaries of *James-City* were mark'd out, and Land was laid out in several Places, to the Company, to the Governour, the College, the Churches, and particular Persons: New Settlements were made in *James* and *York* Rivers: Very great Supplies continually came over: A Salt-work was set up at *Cape Charles*, an Iron Work at *Falling Creek*; and *Sir George Yardly* seem'd to make amends for his former Male-Administration; yet he still suffer'd the People to grow secure, and neglected providing for their Defence. He was succeeded in the Government by *Sir Francis Wyat*, a young Man, who arriv'd in *October*, 1621. and this Year more Men settled there, who falling to Planting, they made so much Tobacco, that the Market was over-stock'd, and the Commodity yeilded little or nothing. The King pitying their Loss by it, commanded that no Planter shou'd the next year plant above 100 *l.* of Tobacco a Man, advising them to turn their spare time to provide Corn and Stock, and make Potash or other Manufactures. In *November* *Capt. Newport* arriv'd with 50 Men on his own Account, and settl'd a Plantation at the Place, which from him is call'd *Newport's News*. Settlements were made as far as *Patowmeck* River, where the Indians never molested the English. On the contrary, they were always friendly and serviceable to them.

The General Assembly appointed inferiour Courts, call'd County-Courts, to be held for the more convenient Distribution of Justice in Causes of less moment: The rest were try'd before the Governour and Council, who were the supream Court of Judicature in the Country. The Prosperity and Increase of the Colony render'd the English careles of their Safety. They convers'd frequently and openly with the Indians, admitted them to eat, drink, and sleep with them, and wou'd often do the same at their Cabbins; by this Means the Savages became acquainted with their Strength, and learnt the use of Guns. They



They knew their Places of Residence and Resort, and their Fear of them by degrees wearing off, prepar'd 'em for any bold Enterprize against them on the first occasion; And 'twas not long before their Emperor *Oppecanough* took an Affront for the Murder of one of his Captains, a Man very eminent in his Nation for his Valour. This Fellow had robb'd one *Manning*, and kill'd him; for which he was about to have been apprehended and carry'd before a Justice of Peace, when he came next time into the English Boundaries; but making some Resistance he was shot dead.

*Oppecanough*, on News of the Death of his Captain, resolv'd to be reveng'd, and he and his Indians contriv'd a general Massacre of the English, which was to be executed on *Friday* the 22d of *March*, 1622. and most of the Nations of the Indians were engag'd in the Conspiracy, which was reveal'd to Mr. *Pace* by a converted Indian, or the Massacre in all probability had been general.

1622.  
The English massacred by the Indians.

The Discovery he made being but 4 or 5 Hours before the intended Execution of it, the remoter Plantations cou'd not take the allarm, and the English that dwelt nearest to the Savages, were barbarously butcher'd, Men, Women and Children, by them, to the Number of 334 Persons. Mr. *Pace* fled to *James-Town*, and so did all to whom he cou'd give notice of the Conspiracy. Others stood on their Defence, and made a retreating Fight to their Forts. The Plantations were deserted, and the Planters who liv'd at a Distance Commanded to set their Houses, Barns, Store-houses, &c. on Fire, to repair to the Forts, and defend themselves against the Common Enemy. Most of those that were kill'd, fell by their own Weapons, Instruments, and Working Tools. Those who were at the Works at the Iron Mines near *Falling Creek*, were all murder'd, except a Boy and a Girl who hid themselves. This Iron Work cou'd never after be restor'd, nor the Lead Mines, which the Superintendant had just then discover'd, be found out. The Project of Glass-houses at *James-Town* was ruin'd by the Massacre, which put Improvements out of Peoples Heads: from this time they were so enrag'd at the Natives, that they never gave over warring with them till they had

had almost utterly extirpated the Nations that were concern'd in the Massacre. They dealt the same measure to them that they had receiv'd from 'em; And the Savages, fearing the English after they were collected into one Body, fled to the Woods. The Governour invited them to return to their own Habitations, and plant their Corn, which on promise of Peace they did; and when they were as secure as the English had been, the latter fell upon them, cut great numbers of 'em to pieces, and destroy'd their Corn and Habitations. They attack'd and entirely destroy'd *Powhatan, Oppecanough's* Royal Seat, where in imitation of the English he had built him a House, and was so pleas'd with the Contrivance of a Lock and Key to fasten the Door, that 'tis said his Imperial Majesty spent most part of his Time in locking and unlocking it, wondring how such a slight Turn of his Hand, should have such an effect on the Door and Postern. The English continu'd to assault the Indians where-ever they found them, they deserted those Parts where they then inhabited, and the Colony receiving fresh Supplies from *England*, and Arms and Ammunition out of the Tower by the King's Command, extended themselves every way, and planted over all the Country, as 'tis now peopled and cultivated.

Some time after this Massacre, several Gentlemen procur'd Grants of Land in *England* from the Company, and others came over on their private Accounts to make Settlements; among the former was one Capt. *Martin*, who was nam'd to be of the Council. This Man rais'd so many Differences among them, that new Distractions follow'd, which the Indians observing, took heart, and once more fell upon the English on the Borders, destroying them, without pitying either Age, Sex, or Condition.

These and other Calamities being chiefly imputed to the Mismanagement of the Proprietors, whose Losses had so discourag'd most of their best Members, that they sold their Shares, King *Charles I.* on his Accession to the Throne, dissolv'd the Company, and took the Colony into his own immediate Direction. He appointed the Governour and Council himself, order'd all Patents and Process to issue in his own Name, and reserv'd

*King Charles I. dissolves the Company.*

reserv'd a Quit-rent of 2 s. for every hundred Acres.

We have been the larger in our Account of the Discovery and Settlement of *Virginia*, because that part of the History of the Colony is slightly touch'd by most of the Writers who have treated of it, and we have from all of 'em taken so many Particulars, as will together give the Reader a clear Idea of the Infancy, Growth and Increase of this Settlement, from Capt. *Amidas* and Capt. *Barlow's* Discovery of the Country, to the Government of Sir *John Harvey* who was the first Governour of *Virginia* after the Dissolution of the *The present* Company. The King order'd the future Form of its *Constituti-* Constitution to be by a Governour, a Council of *on sessled.* twelve Gentlemen, and the Assembly consisting as has been said, of Representatives deputed by the several Towns and Counties in the Colony. He granted large Tracts of Land to Gentlemen and others in *England*, and to some of them added Authority independent of the Government, giving each Gentleman the same Power in his Province as the Proprietors of *Virginia* had formerly. The greatest of these Grants was that of the whole Territory of *Maryland*, which was giv'n by the King to *George Calvert*, Lord *Baltimore*.

The *Virginians* pretend that this Division of their Country into separate Provinces, created separate Interests, and that the General Advantage of the whole, has often suffer'd by their Opposition to the Regulations which have been made for the Common Good. They tell us, that when the Government of *Virginia* has thought fit to prohibit the Exportation of bad Tobacco to help the Market in *England*, the Planters of *Maryland* have pour'd in as much Trash as they cou'd make, to take the Advantage of that Market. Whether the People of *Maryland* have not the same or the like Complaints to make against the *Virginians*, is to be doubted, and that the Industry and good Management of that Colony have set an Example ev'n to her Mother-Plantation, which it had been better with her if she had follow'd. We must leave this Dispute to be decided by the Gentlemen concern'd in it, and continue our History of *Virginia*, during the Administration of Sir *John Harvey*, who was a great Promoter of the large Grants that were made of Land in his Province, and often went so far, that he procur'd the very

Sir John  
Harvey,  
Governor.

very Settlements which had been made before to be included. In a word, he was a very bad Governour, severe in his Extortions and Exactions, in Fines and Forfeitures, proud and turbulent in his Councils, and so unjust and arbitrary, that the Gentlemen of the Colony not being able to endure his Tyranny, seiz'd him, and sent him Prisoner to *London*, in the Year 1639. They deputed two of their Members to accompany him, and exhibit their Grievances to King *Charles I.* who was so far from redressing them, that he immediately order'd Sir *John Harvey* to return to his Government. But the Cry of the Plantation was so loud, that it was to be fear'd it might reach the Parliament: To prevent which Sir *John* was soon recall'd, and Sir *William Berkley* order'd to succeed him.

1639.  
Seiz'd and  
sent to  
England.

Sir Wil-  
liam Berk-  
ley, Go-  
vernour.

*In Sir John Harvey's Time*, says *Bullock* in his Discourse of Virginia, *what perplex'd Condition were both he and the Gentlemen of the Country in, when upon his Complaint they were sent for from Virginia, to answer here in England at the Council Board; and again upon their Complaint he and his Friends must come to London to answer at the same place, and this iterated, besides continual Heavings and Showings between two Parties, &c.*

The Differences between the Governour and the Colony occasion'd so much Confusion, that the Indians who watch'd all Opportunities to fall on the English, surpriz'd them again, and cut off 500 Men, Women, and Children.

Another  
Massacre.

*Oppeccanough* highly resented the Incroachments that had been made on his Dominions by the late Grants, and had contriv'd another General Massacre, but the English were scatter'd up and down in so many separate Plantations, that 'twas impossible for him to destroy them at once, without an entire Conquest, to which he cou'd not pretend. However, he order'd the Savages in all Quarters to Massacre the Borderers, and himself and his Indians were the most active of all in destroying those that had settled on *York-River*, by the Natives call'd *Pamaunkee*, where he himself kept his rude Court, and had fix'd the Seat of his Empire. This Prince is by *Mr. Smith* said to be *Powhatan's* Brother. He was of a large Stature, a noble Presence, and understood the Arts of Government as well as 'tis possible for a Man to do, who was entirely unacquainted with

with Letters. The Indians by Tradition report, that he was not related to their King *Powhatan*, but came from a far Country which lay South-West of theirs. And by their Description of it must be near *Mexico*, or the Mines of *St. Barbe*. This Action of *Oppecanough* provok'd the English so much, that they never wou'd give the Savages Peace, but continu'd to make War upon them till they took their Emperor, and led him into Captivity; for Sir *William Berkley* hearing he was at some distance from the place of his usual Residence, march'd against him with a Party of Horse, surpriz'd, and took him Prisoner in the Western Parts of *Henrico* County. Sir *William* intended to send him to the King, but a Souldier in revenge of the many Miseries the Colony had endur'd by his Incurfions, shot him in the back, of which Wound he dy'd. Before his death he carry'd himself with a Magnanimity truly Royal. He was very old, worn out with age, and the Hardships of War. His Eye-lids were so heavy, he cou'd not see without the help of his Servants to lift them up. When he was a Prisoner, hearing a Noise about him, he caus'd them to be lifted up, and perceiving 'twas the noise of a Rabble that were then come to see him, he reflected with Indignation on the ungenerous Treatment of the English, in making a Sight of him, and exposing him to the insolence of the Multitude; and calling for the Governour Sir *William Berkley*, he said, *Had it been my Fortune to have taken you, I wou'd not basely have expos'd you as a Show to the People.*

On the Death of this Emperor, the Nations whom he had subjected, became afraid of the Power of the English. There remain'd no Prince of an equal Genius to keep so many several Kingdoms united. They set up Sovereigns of their own, and their strength being weaken'd by this Division, the English were no more afraid of any Disturbance by them; unless it were those who lay nearest to them, and consequently were more liable to be surpriz'd by them, but Sir *William Berkley* made Peace with all of 'em, and the Savages knowing they cou'd get nothing by War, kept it a long time unviolated.

The manner of *Oppecanough's* Death is variously related by the Writers that have made any mention

Bullock.

of it; some say he was kill'd in the Action when Sir *William Berkley* came to surprize him. Others, that he was taken and committed to Prison, where he dy'd. The most authentick account of it is what we have taken from the *Author of the History of Virginia*: 'Tis certain, that with him the Power of the Indians was entirely destroy'd. The Colony was in a fair way of improving this great Advantage, and there were no less than 15000 Men, besides Women and Children, on the Place. When News came of the Troubles in *England*, which naturally affected all the Colonies: Besides, that the Relations and Friends of the Inhabitants were invol'd in them; they depended on that Kingdom for Supplies and Protection, and a constant Market to take off the Commodities their Plantations produc'd. *Virginia* for a while was more concern'd in them, than any of the other Settlements. For Sir *William Berkley* stood out against the usurp'd Powers in *England*, after the Murder of King *Charles* the First; and by his Loyalty hinder'd the Commerce of the Planters there with their Friends and Correspondents at home. Their Supplies of Provisions were cut off: Their Tobacco lay on their Hands; and the *Virginians* were oblig'd to subsist by themselves, which they were now in a Condition to do, for the Planters had great Stocks, 30000 Head of Cattle, an infinite number of Hogs; Beef and Pork were 16 d. a Stone. Wheat and Barley very cheap, but few Beasts of Burden for there were no more than 200 Horses and Mares and 70 Asses at this time. However, as much as they abounded in Provisions, they cou'd not long have supported themselves without assistance from *England*, nor have been able to have kept up their Stocks for want of other Necessaries, for their Maintenance. Such as working Instruments and Tools, Hows, Axes &c.

Ibid.

The Parliament of *England* who were very careful to secure the Plantations, sent a Squadron of Men of War to the West Indies, under the Command of Sir *George Ascue*, with Instructions to reduce *Barbadoes*, the *Caribbee* Islands, and the Northern Colonies to their Obedience. We shall see in the History of *Barbadoes*, what Sir *George* did at that Island, from whence

he detach'd Capt. *Dennis*, with a small Squadron of Ships to Land some Forces, and drive Sir *William Berkley* out of *Virginia*. Sir *William* still continu'd his unshaken Principles of Loyalty. He hir'd some Dutch Ships that were then in his Harbours, and made a brave Resistance. The Virginians being animated by his Example, Capt. *Dennis* attack'd them to no Purpose; and finding he shou'd lose a great many Men, and perhaps not succeed at last in his Enterprize by Force, he had recourse to Policy. He gave out that he had two very rich Cargoes of Goods belonging to two of the *Council* aboard one of his Ships, and if they did not Surrender themselves to him, and engage the rest to do so too; he wou'd detain the Merchandize. The *Council* were too well inclin'd to comply with the Wickedness of the Times. 'Twas only the Governour who was willing to hazard all, rather than submit to those Powers, to whom three Potent Kingdoms had already submitted. He wou'd hearken to no Terms till the two Counsellors, whose Hearts were bent on the safety of their Goods, engag'd the Majority of their Brethren to agree to a Surrender; and Sir *William* was not so very resolute, as to pretend to oppose both an Enemy without, and a Faction within his Government; so he was forc'd to lay down his Arms, and retire to his Plantation. We cannot omit correcting a Mistake of the Historian we have often mention'd in this History, who says Capt. *Dennis* was sent by *Oliver*. He has run into the vulgar Error of those, who call all the Governments from the King's Death to *Cromwell's*, *Oliver's*; Whereas *Cromwell* did not turn out the Rump, till two or three years after Sir *George Ay- scue's* Expedition.

He was himself in *Scotland* then, and had nothing to do with the Admiralty of *England*, further than as his Councils influenc'd the Affairs of the Commonwealth. When he was actually in Possession of the sole Administration, he busy'd himself about the Plantations, as much as any other part of the English Dominions, and *Virginia* fell under his Cognizance as well as the rest.

We read in an old Historian, that Major General *Pointz*, who was made Governour of the *Leeward Islands*

Capt. Dennis reduces Virginia to the Obedience of the Parliament.

*Ilands* by the Parliament, sail'd from *St. Christopher's* to *Virginia*, before *Sir George Ayscue* sent *Dennis*, who it seems by that Author found the Business done to his Hand, and that Country the only Retreat for Cavaliers, was forc'd to submit on Terms of Indempnity.

Col. Diggs  
Governor.

Mr. Bennet  
Governor.

Mr. Matthews  
Governor.

Col. Diggs was first made Governour of *Virginia* by the Parliament, during whose Government nothing remarkable happen'd. He was succeeded by Mr. Bennet, and he by Mr. Matthews. The two last Governours only were put in by *Oliver*. Tho the same Historian says, That Diggs, Bennet and Matthews, were all Governours during the small time of *Cromwell's* Protectorate. If so, there must have been some other Governour between *Sir William Berkley*, and Col. Diggs: If not the changing of Governours was not so extraordinary as he pretends. Before the end of our History, we shall more than once find three Governours in seven years; for so long it was from *Sir William Berkley's* submission, to *Oliver's* Death; and this was the less rare, because Mr. Matthews dy'd in his Government.

The Trade of *Virginia* flourish'd in those Days, notwithstanding the Act which past in one of *Cromwell's* Parliaments, to break off that Colonies correspondence with other Nations, and to prohibit their Exporting or Importing any Commodities whatever, but what shou'd be loaden aboard English Ships, navigated by English Seamen: Which Act, commonly call'd, *The Act of Navigation*, was justify'd after the Restoration, by another Act of Parliament to the same purpose, but with several Restrictions and Prohibitions, by Bonds, Securities, &c. *Sir William Berkley* having shewn a great Concern always for the good of the Colony, was mightily belov'd by the People. On the Death of Mr. Matthews, when they were without a Governour, they immediately cast their Eyes upon him, and by an obliging Violence compell'd him to assume the Government; which however he wou'd not consent to, unless they all promis'd to join with him in venturing their Lives and Fortune for the King, who then was in Exile, but not at that time in *France*, as our Historian affirms.



This was indeed a very bold Action, for as yet there had no News arriv'd of *Oliver's* Death, and the Anarchy in *England* that succeeded.

The Virginians accepting of the Terms he propos'd, he accepted of the Government, and, we are told, forthwith Proclaimed *Charles II.* King of *England, Scotland, France, Ireland, and Virginia.* It happen'd well for him and his Colony, that King *Charles* was not long after restor'd to the Throne of his Ancestors; yet we don't find that the King gave Sir *William Berkley* any greater Reward than continuing him in his Commission, and making him one of the Proprietors of the Province of *Carolina*, when he erected it into a Principality about the Year 1663.

Sir *William* going for *England* to Congratulate his Majesty on his Restoration, left Col. *Francis Morrison* his Deputy. Col Francis Morrison, Deputy.

When he came to Court, he was graciously receiv'd by the King, who in Honour of his Loyal *Virginians*, is said to have worn a Robe at his Coronation, made of the Silk that was sent from thence. Col. *Morrison* in the mean time behav'd himself to the General Satisfaction of the Plantation. He order'd the Laws to be revis'd and collect'd into a Body, to be lain before the Assembly at their next Session. He took the same care of the Church, as he did of the State. He regulated the Parishes, settled the Ministers Allowances, got a Revenue for the Support of the Government, and other Laws for the Encouragement of the Linen and Woollen Manufactories, the breeding of Silk-worms, Tanning and Salt-works. While the Deputy-Governour was so busy'd for the Service of the Colony, Sir *William Berkley* was in *England*, taking his Instructions from the King, for his future Conduct. His Majesty order'd him to promote Husbandry, Manufactures, Silk and Vineyards, that all Ships Trading to *Virginia*, shou'd go to *James-Town*, and be enter'd at the Custom-House there before they broke Bulk; which Order was giv'n with an Intent that by it the People might be tempted to come thither and dwell there, for the convenience of Trade; and had it been obey'd, it might have encreas'd the number of Buildings in that City, which is now much less than it was four-

1660.

His Behaviour.

score years ago, every Body coveting to live at his Plantation, and settle where he thinks he shall have the best Crops and Conveniencies of Shipping. This is the Reason that there are so few Towns in *Virginia*, and those that are there, so very small. Sir *William* being fully instructed by the King, how he shou'd proceed on his Return to his Government, set sail from *England* to *Virginia*, where he arriv'd in the Year 1662. and immediately put the People upon improving their Plantations, and advancing Manufactures. He summon'd an Assembly, and got an Act pass'd for building of *James-Town*. Each County was to build so many Houses, and some actually built their Quota, which notwithstanding the Act, were converted into Taverns and Eating-houses, and the Town was very little the bigger for 'em.

1662.  
Sir *William*  
Berkeley,  
Governor.

By Sir *William*'s Behaviour on the Revolutions in *England*, one may perceive he was no Friend to the Puritans. Before the Civil War, he procur'd severe Laws to be made against them, and now he had an Act pass'd, laying great Restraints upon them, which not only drove many People out of *Virginia* to *Maryland* and other Colonies, but kept others from coming thither.

Clamours  
in *Virginia*.

Tho the Order for all Ships to enter at *James-Town* was dispens'd with, yet the rigorous Circumscription of Trade, by the Act of Navigation, the Persecution of Dissenters, and the low Prices of Tobacco, rais'd great Clamours among the *Virginians*, fomented by some of *Cromwell*'s Soldiers, who had been banish'd thither.

Berkeley's  
Conspiracy.

At last the Mutiny grew to such a Head, that several Planters and others enter'd into a Conspiracy against the Government: The Servants were the Chief Promoters of it; with a Design to kill their Masters, and seize their Plantations: Among these one *Berkeleyhead*, a Servant to Mr. *Smith* of *Purton* in *Gloster-County*, was one, and he repenting, discover'd it. Upon which notice was sent to the Governour at *Greenspring*, his Seat so call'd, who understanding that the Conspirators were to rendezvous at *Poplar Spring* near *Purton*, sent a Party of Militia-Horse to surprize them as they came. Accordingly some were taken, others made their Escape, and informing their

Fellows

Fellows of the Discovery of the Plot, prevented such as were on the Road, from coming to the Place appointed. Four of the Conspirators were hang'd; *Berkinhead* had his Freedom, and 200 *l.* Sterling bestow'd on him for a Reward; an Anniversary Day of Thanksgiving was appointed on the 13<sup>th</sup> of *Sept.* the day on which the Plot was to have been put in execution. The King hearing of it, sent Orders to build a Fort at *James-Town*, to curb the Mutineers, and serve for a Retreat to the Governour on the like Occasion; which Orders were never obey'd. The *Virginians* being loath to be at the Charge, when the Danger was over; they only rais'd a Battery of some small Pieces of Cannon. A very poor Defence, if ever they shou'd be forc'd to make use of it.

In *England* another Act of Parliament pass'd, which was thought to be a Hardship upon this Colony. It Prohibited their having any Foreign Goods but what were first landed in *England*, and thence exported to them. This reduc'd the Price of Tobacco still lower, and rais'd that of all European Goods. They in return prohibited, by an Act of their Assembly, the Planting of Tobacco for one Year, in order to keep up the Demand for it; but this Act had not the desir'd effect; because the Province of *Maryland* refus'd to consent to it, and stock'd the Market sufficiently to keep down the Price. They attempt-ed again to have the Planting of Tobacco stinted, and the Agents of *Carolina* and *Maryland*, who were then at *James-Town*, consented to it. But the Governour of *Maryland* evaded it, and Proclaimed the Act void. Thus the poor Planters drudg'd on to their Loss, their Tobacco yielded little or nothing, and all sorts of Goods that were imported from *Europe*, bore very high Prizes, which was enough to raise Discontents and Murmurs, and produce the Disturbances that soon after happen'd.

Tho the *Virginians* had all the Reason in the World to expect a Compliance from the People of *Maryland*, yet they condescended to send Agents to *St. Mary's*, the Capital of the Provinces, as it were to Petition for their Consent. In which they were unsuccessful also; the Governour telling 'em, *He wou'd not call an Assembly on purpose.*

About this time there were Attempts made to prevent Ships unlading any where at the Master's Pleasure, that no Forreign Goods might be imported, which had not been landed in *England*.

It had been found impracticable to oblige all Ships to enter at *James-Town*, and afterwards disperse themselves up and down in the several Rivers whither they were bound; and were us'd to unload their Cargoes, and load again, even at the very Doors of the Merchants to whom they were consign'd; which gave them many Opportunities of bringing in prohibited Goods; wherefore his Majesty order'd that Forts should be built in the several Rivers; that all Ships should ride under those Forts; and those Places only be the Ports of Trade.

Had these Orders been obey'd, it would necessarily have caus'd People to have resorted to such Places; Houses would have been built, and Towns rais'd by degrees, without the Force of an Act; which has little Influence on the Wills of People, and in Free Governments, where Mens Properties are concern'd, the Laws are always tender of using too much Violence, unless the immediate Safety of the Commonwealth requires it.

The Plague and Fire happening at *London* when these Forts were about to be built, put a stop to the Undertaking, and it never was prosecuted afterwards; for want of which, the Dutch often insulted the Coasts in the Wars between *England* and *Holland*, and took the Ships out of the Harbours.

To defend them against any Invasion from the Enemy, a few Batteries were rais'd, which contributed little to their Security.

*Sir William Berkley*, to remedy the Evil of the low Price of Tobacco, earnestly recommended, and heartily encourag'd the Silk and Linnen-Manufactures, Pot-Ash and Hemp: He set an Example himself at his own Plantation; and it had been well for the Colony if they had industriously follow'd it.

The Indians all this while continu'd quiet; indeed they durst not offend the English, who were now grown so powerful, that they could send an Army of 6 or 7000 Men into the Field, and leave twice as many at home to look after their Plantations.

He sent out Capt. *Batt* with 14 English, and 14 Indians, to make Discoveries. This little Company went from *Appamatox* in *Charles-County*, and in seven days time reach'd the Foot of the Mountains, which they cross'd with great Difficulty in three days more; and then descended into fruitful Vallies, where they found an incredible Quantity of Deer, Elks, Buffaloes and Turkies, so tame, that they would suffer them almost to reach them. They also found Grapes as big as small Plums.

*Adventurers.*

*Discoveries.*

Farther forward they came to a Rivulet, which descended backwards. They travell'd down that Stream several days, and coming to some Cabbins, they could perceive that Indians had lately been there, and as they suppos'd fled away at Capt. *Batt* and his Company's approach.

The Savages he had with him could not be perswaded to pass some Marshes that were beyond those Cabbins. They said there liv'd a Nation a little farther that made Salt, and sold it to their Neighbours; that they suffer'd no body to return who had been amongst them: And notwithstanding Capt. *Batt* us'd all the Arguments he could think of to perswade them to go forward, the cowardly Indians would not stir a step farther; so the Company were forc'd to return.

On the Report Capt. *Batt* made to the Governour of his Travels and Adventures, Sir *William Berkley* resolv'd to go in Person: He had made Preparations for it, nam'd the Man who was to have been his Deputy Governour, got the Assembly to pass an Act in favour of the Enterprize; and just as things were ready for his Departure, Col. *Bacon's* Rebellion broke out, which ruin'd the Design.

*Col. Bacon's Rebellion.*

In the Year 1670. 4 or 5 Years before Capt. *Batt's* Enterprize, Col. *Collet* with 9 English Horse, and 5 Indians, march'd up in the Country; and so did Major *Harris* with 20 English Horse, and 5 Indians; but to as little Advantage as *Batt's*: After whom, Sir *William* gave a Commission to a German Surgeon to discover the South-West Parts of *Virginia*.

He went along the Foot of the Mountains as far as the Lake *Sherre*, and discover'd them to be passable in two places. This Man reported, that while he was in an Indian Town near the Mountains, there came

came 4 Savages on an Embassy to the King of that Town, from a King who liv'd beyond the Mountains.

He brought back an Emerald, and some Spanish Money which he had of the Indians bordering on the Lake there; and this rais'd Conjectures, that the Spaniards are seated near the back of those Mountains.

The Rebellion we are going to speak of, being one of the most extraordinary Events that ever happen'd in the English Plantations, we shall be larger in our Account of it, which we have taken from publick and private Authorities.

The Author of it, Col. *Nathaniel Bacon, Jun.* was a Gentleman who had been liberally bred in *England*, having study'd some time at the *Temple*: He was young, bold, active, handsome, and eloquent: His Merit advanc'd him to the degree of a Counsellor; and his good Qualities got him the Love and Respect of the People, who were at that time very much disaffected with the Government, and ready to take Fire; which *Bacon* perceiving, blew up the Coals of Dissention among them so much, that at last it burst out into a Flame.

Before we come to the Fact, it will be proper to let the Reader into the Causes of the Peoples Murmurs and Resentments; of which these four were the chief:

*The Causes of it.*

1. *The low Price of Tobacco in England; and the high Prices of all Goods exported thence to Virginia.*
2. *The Grants made by King Charles, of several Parts of their Country to Noblemen in England; in some of which several of their Plantations were included.*
3. *The Burdens laid upon them by the Parliament in England; and Taxes by the Assembly in Virginia.*
4. *The Disturbances given them by the Indians.*

Of all these Grievances, that of the Grants was the most intolerable: Their Property being given away from them, after they had been at great Trouble, Hazard and Charge, to make Settlements.

The Assembly taking the bad Condition of many of the Planters, by the vexatious Suits, and the Expence they were forc'd to be at about their Titles to their

Plantations.

Plantations, into Consideration; deputed Mr. *Ludwell* Secretary of *Virginia*, and Col. *Park* to go to *England*, to represent the Matter to the King, and petition for Redress.

A new Tax was levy'd, to defray the Charge of their Voyage; and this was the more burthenfome, because the *Agents* did not succeed in their Negotiation.

After a Year's Patience in waiting for News from them, they had Advice, that there were little hopes of Redress. Upon which they grew outrageous; and their Rage ended in Rebellion. King *Charles* hearing of it, would not hearken to their Agents Remonstrances; and those of them who had Money, were forc'd to compound with the Grantees for 3 or 400 *l.* a Man.

The Indians ever since their last Massacre, had kept very quiet till lately: And now they began to be troublesome at the Head of the Bay of *Chesapeak*, and on their own Frontiers. Those at the Head of the Bay us'd to trade with the Dutch in *Monadas*, since call'd *New-York*. *The Indians stir.*

When the Indians travell'd thither, they past, going and coming, by the Frontiers of *Virginia*, and traded with the *Virginians*; who had the first of their Market, and the Choice of their Furs. While the Dutch stay'd at *Monadas* this Traffick went on very peaceably; but as soon as the English, who had possess'd themselves of *New-York* and the Trade, understood the Advantage their Countrymen in *Virginia* made of it, they treacherously set the Savages against them; and succeeded so well, that instead of calling on them as Friends, they never came, but to murder or rob them.

The Indians on their own Frontiers were provok'd by the Loss of their Trade, which decay'd daily; and by Sir *William Berkley's* Attempts for Discoveries, which they apprehended was intended to destroy them; and therefore, whenever they had an Opportunity, they never fail'd to shew their Hatred and Cruelty to the English; who being grown peevish by their Losses and Grievances, were glad of an Occasion of venting their Fury on the Indians; and on the Cry of Murders committed by them, most of the poorer  
fort

fort demanded to be led against them, resolving utterly to extirpate all the Nations of the Savages. They gather'd together in riotous and tumultuous Bands, running from one Plantation to another, without a Head, crying out against the Barbarity of the Natives, the Murder of their Countrymen, and engaging more and more every day to undertake an Expedition for Revenge.

*Sir Wil. Berkley opposes Bacon's Designs.*

The Governour, who was jealous of his Prerogative, would not suffer them to judge when 'twas fit to make War; and the more they were for it, the more obstinate he was not to allow them to take Arms: However, they continu'd their Meetings, and Col. *Bacon* fell in with them, approv'd of their Zeal for the Service of their Country, aggravated the Calamities they endur'd by the Indians, and complain'd of the Want of a Regulation in Trade.

*Bacon chosen General by the People.*

The Multitude were transported with Joy that they had got a Man of his Quality and Merit among them; and immediately chose him their General: Which Post he accepted; and by his Eloquence and obliging Carriage so charm'd them, that they were all to a Man entirely at his Devotion.

He knew the Danger of the Step he had taken, and yet his Ambition, or his Interest, (for 'twas thought his Design was to engross the whole Indian Trade to himself) still spur'd him on to open Rebellion. He muster'd his Men, exercis'd them, and prepar'd them for Action, the Pretence being a War with the Indians, which was at that time a very plausible one: To reconcile his Ambition with his Duty, he sent to the Governour for a Commission; and order'd the Messenger to represent the Mischiefs the Savages did, so deplorably, that *Sir William* might think himself oblig'd by the Necessity of their Affairs, to make him General.

The Council had such an Esteem of Col. *Bacon's* Merit, that the Governour did not think it safe to deny his Request flatly; so he answer'd the Messenger, *He would consult the Council, and send him word what Resolution they came to about it.* But *Bacon* had not Patience to stay for the Result of their formal Debates. He sent again and again to *Sir William*, to issue out a Commission, and dispatch it away to him, that he might



might lead the Voluntiers against the Indians; saying, *They had already chosen him for their General; and he and they resolv'd to begin the War, whether the Governour sent him the Commission, or not.*

'Twas out of Caution that he desir'd it, to justifie his taking Arms; and finding Sir *William* prevaricated with him, he with forty of his Men in his own Sloop, went to *James-Town* himself, to get what he wanted: He took his Seat at the Council-Board, like a Man, who, far from having committed a Fault, deserv'd Thanks for his Zeal for the Publick Good, and against the common Enemy.

He laid before the Council the *miserable State of the Borderers; how they were plunder'd and murder'd by the Savages; and how ready the Voluntiers were to drive them from the Borders, and prevent such Calamities for the future; if they had a Warrant to do so.*

The Governour instead of granting *Bacon* a Commission, commanded him to disperse; and for speaking too freely before the Council, suspended him: By which he exasperated a Man, who had it in his Power to be reveng'd, when he himself had not Strength sufficient to oppose him.

*Bacon* broke up from the Council-Table in a heat; and went out, with an Intention to retire to his Men. Sir *William* fill'd a long Boat, and made after him; sending away some Horse to stop him when he landed at *Sandy-Point*, the Place he design'd to go ashore at.

His Orders were obey'd here; and *Bacon* forc'd to return to *James-Town*. The Governour instead of chastizing his Insolence, receiv'd him very gratioussly; and by fair Words, endeavour'd to dissuade him from his intended Enterprize: But *Bacon* was resolute, and persisted in his Demand of a Commission, knowing Sir *William* durst not do him any hurt; when there were near 1000 Men in Arms, who would severely have reveng'd whatever Punishment had been inflicted upon him: Besides, while they were disputing the Matter in Council, fresh News came of Murders and Robberies committed by the Indians; which seem'd to warrant Col. *Bacon's* Design and Demand.

However the Governour, who was as jealous of his Prerogative, as he was zealous for the Welfare of the Colony, would not grant him the Commission, because it look'd as if it was extorted from him, and that there was a Power in *Virginia* superior to his own.

Comes to  
James-  
Town  
with his  
Army.

*Bacon* seeing he could get nothing by fair Means, made his Escape out of *James-Town*, and posted away to the Voluntiers; of whom he led 6 or 700 to the Town, and drew them up in Battalia before the State-House, where the Assembly were sitting; so that he had now the Governour, Council, and Assembly of *Virginia* in his Power; and may be said to be Master of the Colony.

Forces the  
Governor  
to give him  
a Commis-  
sion.

The Assembly, besides that many of them wish'd well to *Bacon's* Enterprize, were afraid of offending him; so they drew up a Commission themselves, and presented it, with an Address to Sir *William Berkley*; desiring him to sign it.

By this Commission, he was constituted General of all the Forces in *Virginia*; and Sir *William*, much against his Inclination, sign'd it.

As soon as *Bacon* had it, he march'd towards the Frontiers, and was chearfully follow'd by his Men; and no doubt, had not Sir *William Berkley* done what he could to hinder his Proceedings, these Forces, under such a General, would have conquer'd all the Nations of the Indians to the Mountains.

'Tis true, the *Virginians* did not want Room, yet the Savages were so false and cruel to them of late, that it seems to have been their Interest to have got rid of such troublesome Neighbours; and so the People of *Virginia* generally thought at that time.

He is pro-  
claim'd a  
Rebel.

When *Bacon* had modestly withdrawn his Troops, to leave the Assembly free, the Governour prevail'd with them to consent that his Commission should be revok'd, which was done: Then Sir *William* proclaim'd him a Rebel; commanded his Followers to deliver him up, and disperse, on pain of being treated like Traitors: He also issu'd out Orders for raising the Militia; and made Preparations for a Civil War.

The People were generally exasperated at this double Dealing with Col. *Bacon*; and his Soldiers unanimously resolv'd to live and die with him. Instead of marching against the Indians, as they design'd, they deman-

demanded to be led back to *James-Town*; and in their March they fell upon the Lands and Houses of such as sided with *Sir William*.

The Governour fled to *Accomack*, on the other side of the Bay, hoping the Inhabitants of that County, which was at a distance from those Parts where *Bacon* had the greatest Interest, would espouse his Quarrel; having still no better Disposition to Peace, than before he had proclaim'd Col. *Bacon* a Rebel.

A little Moderation in him would have remedy'd these Disorders, which put the King and Colony to  $\text{r00000 l.}$  Expence to compose them; and would have endanger'd the Ruin of the Country, had not *Bacon's* Death prevented it; for upon the Governour's leaving *James-Town*, and abdicating the Government, Col. *Bacon* assembled the Gentlemen of the Country at *Middle-Plantation*; himself and four others of the Council signing the Writ of Summons; where they publish'd a Declaration of the occasion of their meeting, and an Association to stand by *Bacon* against all Opposers, till the King was fully inform'd of the Matter, by Persons deputed by General *Bacon*.

They declar'd, among other things, that *Sir William Berkley* had fomented and stir'd up the People to a Civil War, and withdrawn himself from his Government, to the great Astonishment and Unsettlement of the Country. That the Army rais'd by *Bacon* was for the publick Good; and that the Country justify'd him in all his Proceedings.

In the mean time *Sir William* was busy in getting his Friends together, to make head against the Rebels, whose Reasons wou'd have had little weight with King *Charles*, while they argu'd with their Swords in their Hands. The Governour was still obstinately bent on reducing *Bacon* by Force; and in order to it, several Sloops were provided to transport the Men he had rais'd over the Bay. Some of his Parties met with some of *Bacon's*, and Rencounters happen'd; in which some Men were kill'd, and some taken.

Thus every thing tended to a Civil War, which must have had very terrible Effects, for *Bacon's* Men were resolute, and enrag'd at the Hardships they endur'd; and *Sir William Berkley's*, animated by the Loyalty of their Leader, were as furious and implacable

*The Governour flies from him.*

*The Gentlemen join with him.*

*And publish a Declaration against the Governour.*

cable as the Generals, whom they call'd and treated as Rebels.

*Bacon* was much Superiour in Numbers; but the Governour depending on Supplies from *England*, assur'd himself that He shou'd at last be too strong for him, and all his Adherents.

The King when he was inform'd of this Rebellion, was so far from hearkning to the Pretences of *Bacon's* Assembly, that he order'd a Squadron of Men of War to be fitted out, and a Regiment of Soldiers to embark aboard it for *Virginia*. This Squadron was commanded by Sir *John Berry*, and set Sail about *Christmas*, in the year 1676. The Hopes of these Succours confirm'd the Governour in his Severity, and all Terms of Accomodation were offer'd to no purpose. Such was the dreadful Prospect of Affairs in *Virginia*, when happily for the Peace of the Colony *Col. Bacon* dy'd at Dr. *Green's* House in *Glouster-County*. He was privately bury'd, and the Place kept very secret, to prevent his Enemies insulting his Body, as would have been done, cou'd the Corps have been found; for strict Enquiry was made after it, *With a Design to expose his Bones to Publick Infamy*.

Col. Bacon  
dies.

Sir Wil-  
liam  
Berkley  
returns.

The Death of the General broke all the Measures of the Malecontents; *Col. Ingram*, his Lieutenant General, and *Col. Walklate*, his Major General, laid down their Arms on promise of Pardon. The rest follow'd their Example, and Sir *William Berkley* return'd to *James-Town*, after *Bacon* and his Assembly had been about six Months in Possession of the Government of all the Countries on that side of the Bay, and had influenc'd the Affairs on the other side. Peace being restor'd, the Governour had leisure to punish the Criminals; but having promis'd them all Pardons, on their Submission, cou'd not do it without breaking his word. *Col. Johnson*, and *Col. Walklate* were turn'd out of all their Places, and incapacitated of bearing Offices in the Colony for the future. As for his Proceeding with the rest, he cou'd not come to any Resolution, till he had Orders from *England*, which he did not receive; for that Affair was left to Commissioners, that were sent on purpose by King *Charles*, to inquire into it; and the Lord *Colepepper* who succeeded him in the Government, was intrusted with the Power of punishing

punishing or pardoning those who had a hand in the Disorders committed in the late Rebellion, which were very fatal to the Country.

*James-Town*, the Capital of the Colony, was burnt to the Ground by Capt. *Richard Lawrence*, an Officer under *Bacon*, who, when his Men refus'd to set fire to the Houses, did it with his own Hands: and thus this Unfortunate City, which never deserv'd that Name, suffer'd so much, that she has not since recover'd ev'n the Condition she was then in.

All Sorts of Improvements were neglected, Stock ran to ruin, the Indians taking an Advantage of these Confusions, fell upon the Borders, and butcher'd the Inhabitants without Mercy. They destroy'd the Plantations on the Frontiers so much, that the *Virginians* have hardly to this day been able to plant them and stock them, much less to extend their Bounds: Tho the Savages are brought so low that their Liberty is precarious, and they are little better than Slaves to the English. *Bacon* was dead, and the Country in Peace before Sir *John Berry* arriv'd with his Squadron and the Regiment he had aboard, which landed in *February* following. The Souldiers

were kept in pay, tho there was no Employment for them; and soon after Sir *William Berkley* went

for *England*, leaving *Herbert Jeffreys*, Esq; his Deputy Governour. Sir *William* fell sick on his Arrival in *England*, and his Sicknes confin'd him to his Chamber till he dy'd. The King who had all the Reason in the World to be pleas'd with him, enquir'd often after his Health, and forbad him to hazard it, by making

too much haste to Court. Sir *William* never saw his Majesty. However he had the satisfaction to hear the King had done him the Honour to declare, He highly approv'd of his Conduct in *Virginia*.

He had been Governour of that Colony from the Year 1640, to 1678. when he dy'd. In all thirty eight years, if we take in the Time of the Usurpation, when his Commission was virtually in force, tho not actually.

He was doubtless a Great Friend to it by encouraging Manufactures and Building. And whatever Inconveniencies he was drawn into by the Warmth of his Loyalty, or Zeal for the Church, ought to be excus'd

1677.

Herbert  
Jeffreys,  
Esq; De-  
puty Go-  
vernour.

Sir Willi-  
am Berk-  
ley dies in  
England.

His Character.

for the Honour and Honesty of the Man's Intentions. Those who liv'd on the Spot, have a great Respect for his Memory, and they who are the best Judges of his Merit, always speak of him as a wise and a just Governour.

Mr. *Jeffreys's* first Care after Sir *William Berkley's* Departure, was to make Peace with the Indians: To that purpose he held an Assembly at *Middle Plantation*, where *Bacon's* Convention met, and Overtures of Peace were agreed on and concluded in *May, 1677*. On the *29th* of that Month, the Kings of the several Nations were invited to come and sign the Peace, and Partake in the Rejoicings of that Day, which the Governour celebrated with more than usual Solemnity, in Commemoration of his Majesty's Birth and happy Restoration.

A Solemn Peace with the Indians.

The Indian Kings and Queens came to the Place appointed, and were kindly receiv'd by the Commissioners and Council; And Silence being Proclaim'd, the Articles of the Peace were Publickly read, and each of them expounded by Interpreters. After which the Queen of *Pamunke* was desir'd to come within the Bar of the Court to Sign the Treaty in behalf of her self, and several Nations that were united under her Subjection. She did it cheerfully, and deliver'd the Instrument to the Governour of which he gave her back the Counter-part; and on the Exchanging those Instruments the Field-pieces were discharg'd.

The Queen, and the other Indian Princes were nobly entertain'd by the English, and the next day return'd to their Kingdoms. This is the last formal Peace that was made with the Savages. And now they are sunk so low, that if they shou'd dare to give the English any Disturbance, a Troop of Militia-Horse wou'd cut 'em all to Pieces. They do the *Virginians* more good than harm by their Trade and Services, and are suffer'd to enjoy the vain Name of Kingdoms, tho' *Kentish Town* is an Empire, compar'd to the biggest of them, as will appear in another Chapter. The Governour and Assembly had giv'n the Law to them in this Treaty which, tho' they thought hard measure, they were oblig'd to comply with.

Mr

Mr. *Jeffreys* dy'd the following Year, and Sir *Henry* 1678.  
*Chickely* was appointed Deputy-Governour in his Place. Sir Henry

He did nothing Extraordinary, or worthy to be Chickely  
remembered, except procuring an Act of the Assembly, Deputy  
for building Magazines at the Heads of the four Governor.  
great Rivers, where Men in constant Pay were order'd to keep Guard, and Stores of Arms, and Ammunition were laid up, to the great Terror of the Savages. The same Assembly observing that Tobacco was frequently imported from *Carolina* and *Maryland*, pass an Act against it, to streighten those Colonies for want of Shipping.

In the Year 1679. the Lord *Colepepper*, whom the 1679.  
King had made Governour of *Virginia*, arriv'd there, The Lord  
and brought with him several Acts drawn up in Colepepper  
*England*, to be pass into Laws. Go.

He summon'd an Assembly, and the Members understanding he had a Power to call such to an Account, as had been concern'd in *Bacon's* Rebellion, to keep him in a good Humour, pass several Acts, wherein the Authority and Interest of the Governour were enlarg'd, and he in return-gave his Consent to some that were grateful to the Country. vernor.

The Lord *Colepepper* obtain'd a Salary of 2000 *l.* a year of the King, which before was but 1000 *l.* He on account of his Quality, got an Allowance of 150 *l.* a year for House-Rent, and turn'd the usual Presents made him by Masters of Ships, of Wine or Provisions, into a certain Sum of Money, settling the Rate at 30 *s.* for each Ship above one hundred Tun, and 20 *s.* for each below that Burden, which Duty has since been levy'd as strictly as if it had been given by an Act of the Assembly. Besides these Advantages, his Lordship had one in view, that wou'd have turn'd very well to account, had it taken effect. The Assembly taking into Consideration their Loss by lowering their Coin, which had occasion'd the Country's being almost drain'd of it by Exportion to Places where it pass for more than it did in *Virginia*, order'd a Bill to be brought in for raising it.

The Governour interposing in the matter, told them, it was the King's Prerogative to alter the Value of the Coin, and the Prerogative being intrusted with him, he wou'd do it by Proclamation. The Assembly

fembly durst not oppose such an Argument. Those were not times to dispute the Prerogative Royal; so the Governour's Reasons were allow'd, and the Act dropt.

His Lordship having gain'd his Point, privately bought up all the light Pieces of Eight he could get at 5 s. the Piece; and then put forth a Proclamation to raise the Value of them to 6 Shillings: He soon after produc'd an Order to pay and disband the Regiment that had been sent over by Sir *John Berry*; and accordingly he paid them off with those Pieces at 6 s. a piece; and they were forc'd to take them at that rate.

This Lord however found very great Inconveniencie by his raising the Coin, as well on account of his own Salary, his Duty on Ships, as of the King's Taxes, which were paid in Pieces of Eight, at 6 s. a piece: The loss was like to be more than his Gain, by injuring the poor Soldiers. He affected a Despotick way of governing, and by his Proclamation repeal'd several Laws. The *Virginians* began to be afraid that the Acts of their Assembly would stand in force no longer than the Governour should think fit; and that his *Will and Pleasure* would be set over them instead of Laws and Ordinances.

This occasion'd fresh Murmurs; and had not *Bacon's* Rebellion been so lately suppress'd, it might have ended in Mutiny. The Assembly at their next Session, to put a stop to the like Evils, pass'd a particular Act to provide against the ill Conveniences of them.

The Lord *Colepepper* did not stay quite a Year in *Virginia*, before he embark'd for *England*: He left Sir *Henry Chickely* his Deputy Governour, the Country well settled, and the Crop so good, that the Planters made too much Tobacco, by which the Market was glutted, and the Price fell yet lower: And this produc'd a new Riot; for some of the Inhabitants, to raise the Price, agreed with their Neighbours, not only to destroy their own Tobacco, but all the Plants round the Country, where-ever they found them, while they were yet in their Beds.

Accordingly they cut up their own first; and then did, so in other Plantations, whether the Owners consented, or not.

They destroy'd a great deal of sweet-scented Tobacco, and threaten'd to cut up all; but they had not

A Riot about Tobacco.



not Courage enough to go through with their Design. The Offenders were seiz'd, imprison'd, try'd, and were condemn'd to be Hang'd: Their Plant-cutting being adjudg'd to be Felony and Sedition; and was declar'd to be so by an Act of the next Assembly.

The Lord *Colepepper* returning in the following year, began to think of trumping up his Title to the *Northern Neck*, a large Territory, containing several Counties. 1680.

These Counties had the Privilege of sending Representatives to the Assembly, as well as the other: And the Assembly being the Supream Court to which all others were to appeal, he was afraid his Propriety would never be allow'd by them; wherefore he contriv'd to get the Appeals out of their hands; and to that end, rais'd such Divisions between the Representatives and Council, that the former pretending to the sole Power of Appeals, were encourag'd in their Pretences secretly by the Governour, till he had Instructions from the King; to whom having represented the Quarrel to the disadvantage of the Representatives, his Majesty order'd that all Appeals should be made to the Governour and Council: And now this Noble Lord thought he might put in his Claim to the *Northern Neck*, by a Grant from the Crown. There were several others concern'd in the Patent; and these he bought off: After which, he prevail'd with his Cousin Mr. *Spencer*, Secretary of *Virginia*, who liv'd in the *Northern Neck*, to side with the Patent; which he did till he dy'd: For his Lordship, notwithstanding he had broken the old Constitution of the Assembly, thought fit to proceed by fair Means, and engage as many of the Inhabitants as he cou'd to own his Propriety; as he did Col. *Philip Ludwell*, when he was in *England*, in the Year 1690.

The Lord  
Coelpepper gets  
the Northern  
Neck.

This Gentleman undertook to manage his Matters for him; but could make nothing of it.

Col. *George Brent*, and Col. *William Fitzhugh*, who also were Inhabitants of the *Neck*, engag'd, as Col. *Ludwell* had done, to serve him as their Proprietor; but had no better Success than Col. *Ludwell*.

The People of the *Neck* address'd the Assembly, and they to the King; which had no effect, because

they had no Agent in *England* to sollicite the Affair : So the Inhabitants being tir'd with expecting Relief in vain, and weary'd by vexatious Suits with the Proprietor's Agents, thought it their Interest to compound with him, and pay him Quit-Rent. The first that did it was Col. *Richard Lee*, one of the Council ; whose Example was follow'd by the rest : And Col. *Robert Carter*, another of the Council, and one of the greatest Freeholders of the *Northern Neck*, is at this time the Proprietor's Agent.

We have been the longer on this Propriety, because it was the Occasion of altering the Constitution of the Government ; and besides is a very large Parcel of the Colony.

In other things his Lordship's Administration was very commendable ; he regulated several Abuses that had crept into the Practice of the Courts, and prevented the Chicanry, so much complain'd of in *England*, which was beginning to corrupt the Law, and lessen'd the Expence the Clerks had contriv'd to put their Clients to. He demolish'd the Forts built by Sir *Henry Chickely*, they being a great Charge, and of little use to the Country : In their stead, he procur'd an Act to be pass'd, for some Troops of Horse to range on the Borders by turns, till there was no more fear of the Indians.

1683. In the year 1683, he return'd to *England*, and would go thither no more : upon which *Francis Lord Howard of Effingham* was sent over Governour. The Lord *Colepepper* had declar'd his Kinsman Mr. *Spencer* President of the Council ; tho there were other Members who with more reason pretended to that Honour, being Elder than he ; and the oldest Counsellour us'd always to be President ; as the President in the Absence of the Governour, or Deputy Governour, always supplies his Place.

1684. Mr. *Spencer's* Presidency was attended with nothing remarkable. And the next Year, 1684. the Lord *Howard* arriv'd, with the same Resolution to get Money as his Predecessor had done : He condescended to share the Fees with his Clerks ; oblig'd all Lawyers and Schoolmasters to take out Licenses to teach and plead ; for which they paid according to their Abilities : He extorted excessive Fees for sealing Probats

of Wills, and Letters of Administration, without considering the Value of the Estates of the Deceas'd: He threw Men into Prison, and kept them there without Trials: He repeal'd Laws by Proclamation, as much as in him lay; for the Judges did not mind those Proclamations, but allow'd the Laws to be in as full force as ever, one excepted; and that was the Law for paying Quit-Rent; by which the Planters were permitted to pay Quit-Rent in Tobacco at 2 *d.* a Pound Tobacco falling afterwards, that Law was repeal'd by Proclamation, and the Payment demanded in Money or Tobacco at a Penny a Pound.

To which Order the *Virginians* submitted, no Man daring in that Case to stand Trial with the Governour, especially because the Quit-Rent was reserv'd in Money by the Words of his Patent.

This Lord, by many other Exactions, so exasperated the Colony, that they sent Col. *Ludwell* over to *England*, to make their Complaints to the King. Mr. *Ludwell* did all that could be expected from a wise and a faithful Agent; but did not prevail to have his Lordship remov'd.

We are oblig'd for Connection of things, sometimes to make bold with Chronology; and the Convenience the Reader will find in it, will, we hope, more than excuse the Freedom we take.

In the Year 1685. that severe Duty, which has so long loaded Tobacco, and been the occasion of selling many thousand Hogsheads, at 12 *d.* a Hogshead, rather than pay the Custom and Charges, was impos'd on this Commodity, three Months after King *James's* coming to the Crown: It was obtain'd when the Parliament were in a warm fit of Loyalty, just on the Duke of *Monmouth's* Landing.

1685.  
*The Impost  
on Tobacco,*

The Bill had been read before, but 'tis thought would not have pass'd so easily, if the Duke of *Monmouth* had not landed opportunely, and quicken'd it by his Rebellion.

This heavy Imposition has been a great Discouragement to the Industry of the Plantation, and is the source of all the Miseries the Planters since suffer'd, having kept them poor, and depriv'd them of the Means to support themselves in the long War that follow'd upon the Revolution.

The Lord *Howard* summon'd an Assembly; who laid the first Tax impos'd upon Liquors imported from the other Plantations. The Pretence was for rebuilding the State-house; which had lain in Ashes ever since Capt. *Lawrence* burnt *James-Town*.

His Lordship also erected a Court of Chancery; and took away that Jurisdiction from the General Court: He assum'd the Office of Chancellour; and the Counsellours were his Masters. He would not hold this Court in the State-house, because the General Court us'd to sit there: And therefore in opposition to them, he heard Causes in a Dining-room in a private House.

He exacted exorbitant Fees in his New Court; and made it turn very much to account. This Novelty was laid aside on his Lordship's going for *England*; and the General Court again resum'd their Antient Jurisdiction; which was as old as the Colony.

As the Lord *Howard* had shown an extraordinary Joy on King *James's* Accession to the Throne; an Account of which was publish'd in the Gazette: So he as joyfully proclaim'd King *William* on the Revolution; and soon after went for *England*, leaving *Nathaniel Bacon* Esquire, Father of Col. *Bacon*, President: During whose Administration the Project of a College first began: A Scheme of it was drawn up by the Projectors, and presented to the President and Council; who approving of it, the Matter was prepar'd to be laid before the Assembly.

Nath. Bacon Esq;  
President.  
A College  
set on foot.

The President had not time to call one himself; for 'twas not long before *Francis Nicholson* Esq; arriv'd, with the Character of the Lord *Howard's* Lieutenant. This Gentleman on his Arrival, study'd to grow Popular, by all the winning Arts which Persons in Power make use of, to engage the People: He made himself familiar with them; was solicitous about improving Trade, and encouraging Manufactures: He instituted Publick Games; and allotted Prizes to such as excell'd in Riding, Running, Shooting, Wrestling, and Back-sword. He enter'd heartily into the Project of the College:

Fran. Nicholson Esq; Lieut. Governor.

That the Project might not stand still for want of Encouragement from the Assembly, which was not then sitting, a private Subscription was propos'd, and

and agreed to by the Governour, and two thousand five hundred Pounds subscrib'd; Mr. *Nicholson* and the Council setting the other Gentlemen of the Colony a good Example. The *London* Merchants also contributed generously towards it: And in the next Year, when the Lieutenant Governour summon'd an Assembly, the Matter was mov'd to them; who zealously engag'd in it, drew up an Address to their Majesties King *William* and Queen *Mary*, to grant a Charter for it; and sent the Reverend Mr. *James Blair* into *England*, to present it, and sollicite the Affair.

The Assembly pass'd an Act for the Encouragement of the Linnen Manufactures, the Leather Trade, &c. and another for Cohabitation: Yet all the Laws for it avail'd nothing; no Town was built by them; nor even *James-Town* rebuilt to the State 'twas in before 'twas burnt in the Rebellion.

Mr. *Nicholson* pay'd an extraordinary Respect to these and all other Acts of the Assembly, governing himself always strictly by them in the General Court.

The Lord *Howard* was dismiss'd from being Principal Governour in the Year 1692. and his Place supply'd by Sir *Edmund Andros*; who had been Governour of *New-England*. 1692.  
Sir Edm.  
Andros  
Governor.

Sir *Edmund* arriv'd in *February*; and began his Government with calling an Assembly. These Representatives were so manag'd by the Governour, that they suspended the Law for Cohabitation, which the Merchants of *London* were against; and found it for their Ease and Advantage to have the Trade alike open in all parts of the Capital Rivers; and the Masters of their Ships could not endure to think of lying under a Fort, or at Key, when they could come up to the Door of a Planter or Factor; live merrily and plentifully at his House, and unload and load at pleasure.

In *England*, Mr. *Neal*, the famous Projector, had procur'd a Patent to be Post-Master-General of those Parts of *America*. This Assembly took the Patent into Consideration, pass'd an Act in favour of it; but by reason of the distance of one House from another, 'twas found to be impracticable.

Low-  
thorp's  
*Phil. Transf.*  
Vol. 2. P.  
104.

In the following Year there happen'd a most violent Storm in this Province, which stop't the Course of the antient Channels, and made some where never were any : By which means, between the Bounds of *Virginia* and *Newcastle* in *Pensylvania*, are many navigable Rivers for Sloops and small Vessels.

*Sir Edmund Andros* was very fond of introducing the Statutes and Laws of *England*; and even such as related to particular Customs in that Kingdom; which was like to have brought all things into Confusion in the Courts of Justice: For the Acts of the Assembly being despis'd, those Laws that were the best Title most of the Planters had to their Estates, were forc'd to give way to Customs and Usages adapted to the Tenures in *England*: By which the *Virginians* were alarm'd, as if they were all at once threaten'd to be outed of their Holds.

No body knew what was Law; and a great Man was so free, as to declare frequently, *They had none of them any Right to their Lands*: Tho what he meant by it was a Mystery he either cou'd not or wou'd not unfold.

*Sir Edmund* brought over the Charter for the College; and *Dr. Thomas Bray* went thither to be President of it; carrying with him a Library, well chosen for the Uses it was to be put to.

Several Professors also were preparing to go over; but all that was done and given towards it came to nothing: The People were very ready to subscribe, but not so ready to pay in their Money: However, Contributions were sent from *England*; which were promoted by the Example of their Majesties King *William* and Queen *Mary*, of Glorious Memory; who by their own Royal Bounty, invited others to assist so charitable an Undertaking: And there was Money enough rais'd to build the College; of which the Foundation was laid soon after *Sir Edmoud Andros's* Arrival.

This Gentleman set up several Manufactures, and Fulling-Mills; and was earnest with the Planters to propagate Cotton: He regulated the Management of the Secretary's Office; which had been mightily neglected since *Bacon's* Rebellion. He commanded all the Publick Papers and Records to be sorted, and kept

an exact Order; and when the *State-house* was burnt, he was careful to have them preserv'd; and all that could be sav'd, to be again sort'd and register'd: He put the Clerks into a Method of dispatching Business; and by these and other commendable Acts, went a great way in gaining the Esteem of the People.

He was endeavouring to find out easy Means to rebuild the *State-house*, which might not be burdensome to the People; and in all likelihood would have effected it, had his stay been longer.

In the Year 1697. Admiral *Nevil's* Squadron, which had been at the *Havana* looking after Monsieur *Poin-ri*, and the French Squadron, touch'd in their return home at *Virginia*: The Admiral, Commodore *Mees*, Capt. *Lycot*, Capt. *Holms*, Capt. *Bellwood*, Capt. *Dyer*, Capt. *Studd y*, Capt. *Foster*, all the Dutch Captains out of 6 but one, and most of their Men, were dead of an Infectious Disease; which the Remainder of their Crew brought to *Virginia* with them: And the Infection spread in *James-Town*, and the Country on that River carrying off several of the Inhabitants: The Plantation continu'd sickly a long time after it.

In November, 1698. Colonel *Nicholson*, who went from *Virginia* to *Maryland*, return'd to *Vir-* 1689.  
Col. Ni-  
cholson  
Governor.  
*ginia*, with the Character of Governour; He remov'd the Seat of his Government from *James-Town* to *Middle-Plantation*; where he began to build a City in Honour of the King; mark'd out the Streets in the Form of a *W*. and call'd the Town *Williamsburgh*.

He procur'd a stately Fabrick to be built there, over against the College; and gave it the Name of the *Capitol*. Some Persons, who were not endow'd with any publick Principle, were against this Expence: The Impositions with which they were loaded in *England* and *Virginia*, keeping them always low. And now a Tax of 15 s. upon each Christian Servant; and 20 s. for each Negro, was laid upon them. Besides, this Year was very sickly, and the Crop so short, that the Ships return'd home with not above one third part of their Loading; but the next was healthy and plentiful.

1700.

About the Year 1700. a Pirate came into *Lynhaven-Bay*, near the Mouth of *James-River*, and took out some Merchant-Ships that were fall'n down there, in order to sail for *England*. It happen'd that a small Vessel came into the Bay, and saw the Pirate engag'd with one of the Merchant-men. This Vessel slipt by the Pirate, and got into the River; where the *Shoram*, a Fifth Rate Man of War, Capt. *Passenger* Commander, lay, being newly arriv'd from *England*.

There was another Man of War, a Sixth Rate, Capt. *Aldred* Commander, in *Elizabeth-River*; but that was on the *Careen*, sitting out for a homeward Voyage.

The Master of the small Vessel posted to *Kiquotan*, where the Governour happen'd to be at that time, to send away his Dispatches for *England*; and Capt. *Passenger* was also gone thither to wait upon him, and pay his Respects to him on his Arrival.

When the Captain heard of the Pirate's being in the Bay, he was for hastening to his Ship as fast as he could, in hopes to come up with him. The Governour desir'd him to stay a little, and he wou'd accompany him; so he and Capt. *Passenger* put to Sea; and getting between the Capes and the River, forc'd the Pirate to come to an Engagement.

The Governour takes a Privateer.

The Fight was sharp and bloody; but at last the Pirate struck, and surrender'd at Discretion; the Captain of the Privateer and his Crew being to be left to the King's Mercy.

It was represented by the Agents of the Colony of *New-York* to King *William*, that *Virginia* being secur'd from the Indians and French by *New-York*, as by a Barrier, the *Virginians* ought to contribute towards building the Fort there.

The King referr'd the Matter to the Assembly of *Virginia*; and the Governour thinking it a reasonable Proposal, very zealously espous'd it. The Assembly however drew up a Remonstrance against it, to this purpose; *That neither the Forts then in Being, nor any other that might be built in the Province of New-York, could in the least avail to the Defence and Security of Virginia; for that either the French or the Indians might invade that Colony, and not come within 100 Miles of any such Fort.*

This



This Remonstrance put a stop to the Affair in the Assembly: Whereupon the Governour contributed the 900 l. himself, the Sum that was demanded of the *Virginians*; This was so generous an Action, that it seems to bear some Resemblance with that Roman Spirit, which the Heroes of all Ages since have been proud to imitate; and the Glory of it, was, what all the Governour's Enemies admir'd and envy'd.

Col. *Quarry* of *Virginia*, then in *England*, declar'd in a Memorial, deliver'd to the Council of Trade after Queen *Anne's* Accession to the Throne; That as soon as Governour *Nicholson* found the Assembly of *Virginia* wou'd not see their own Interest, nor comply with her Majesty's Orders, he went immediately to *New-York*; and, out of his great Zeal to the Queen's Service, and the Security of her Province, he gave his own Bills for 900 l. to answer the Quota of *Virginia*; wholly depending on her Majesty's Favour, to reimburse him out of the Revenues of that Province.

And as Col. *Nicholson* was generous in promoting the Security of the Province of *New-York*, so was he to encourage such as fought for the Defence of that of *New-England* in the time of the Indian War: When two *New-England* Women having surpriz'd and kill'd 10 or 12 Indians; and had a Gift from the Assembly there, he sent them also a very noble Present.

In the Year 1701. the Governour hearing the French Privateers were busy on the Coasts, laid an Embargo on all Ships, to prevent their going out, and falling into their hands. The same Year some Camels were brought thither in some *Guinea* Ships; Those Beasts would carry 1200 Weight: But we have not heard how they thriv'd there; and suppose the *Virginians* succeeded with them no better than the *Barbadians*; who were soon forc'd to lay down that sort of Carriage.

On the 5th of *October*, 1703. there happen'd a very violent Hurricane at *Virginia*; which was the more remarkable, because that Country is not subject to such Accidents. In this Tempest several Ships were driven ashore in their Harbours; and others damag'd in their Masts and Rigging, and much Mischiefe done by it in the Plantations.

1704.

In the following Year Col. *Nicholson* return'd to *England*, having in his Government deserv'd a better Character of the Province of *Virginia*, than the late Author of the History of that Country is pleas'd to bestow upon him. The Reception he met with at Court, is a sufficient Demonstration that her Majesty approv'd of his Conduct; and all the World must condemn that Historian, otherwise Judicious and Eloquent, for suffering a private Pique to prevail over the Justice and Gratitude which was due to the Merit of the Governour.

George  
Earl of  
Orkney  
Governor.  
Benjamin  
Notte  
Esq; Dep.  
Governor.

He was succeeded by *George* Earl of *Orkney*, Lieutenant General of Her Majesty's Armies; whose Deputy is *Benjamin Notte* Esq; During their Authority nothing extraordinary has happen'd in *Virginia*; which Colony is now in a safe and flourishing Condition, having no just reason to complain of any thing but those Taxes, which the Preservation of their Religion and Liberty at this time makes necessary.

## C H A P. II.

*Containing a Geographical Description of Virginia; Of the Towns, Ports, Rivers, Forts, &c.*

**I**N the former Chapter we have shewn how several Provinces, that at first went all under the Name of *Virginia*, were divided from it, by Patents granted to other Proprietors; who gave them other Names, as *New-England*, *New-York*, *Maryland*, &c. to the North; and *Carolina* to the South: All which were a part of the Country that was by Queen *Elizabeth* call'd *Virginia*.

In process of Time that Name was lost to all, except the Tract of Land lying along the Bay of *Chesapeake*; in which are included *Virginia* and *Maryland*; and both in common Discourse, are still call'd *Virginia*: But the Province that's properly so call'd, is bounded on the North by the great River *Patowmack*; which parts it from *Maryland*; and on the South, by

by *Carolina*: On the East it has the *Virginian Sea*; and on the West and North-West, those Wilderesses that have so often been in vain attempted to be Discover'd; and are suppos'd to stretch themselves to the *Californian Sea*. Bounds.

The Bounds of this Country are not well settled; and in the Year 1703. the Assembly had it under Consideration to fix them: But by common Computation, 'tis reckon'd to reach 200 Miles North from *Point Comfort* at the Mouth of *Chesapeac Bay*, and two hundred Miles South, including all the Land, West and North-West, from the Western or *Virginian*, to the *Californian Sea*, with the Islands on both Seas within 100 Miles of the Continent.

Both this Province and that of *Maryland* are situated on the Great Bay of *Chesapeac*; whose Mouth is *Chesapeac Bay*. *Cape Henry* on the South, and *Cape Charles* on the North. The Water in the Channel is for the most part 9 Fathom deep; but in some places not above 7.

The Bay is eighteen Miles broad; and lies in 37 Degrees North Latitude. It runs about 100 Leagues up in the Country; and is seven Miles over, 60 Leagues within Land. This is what our Modern Sailors call the Capes of *Virginia*.

It receives into it abundance of Navigable Rivers; which, like those in the North of *England*, flowing into the *Humber*, all loose themselves in this Bay; so big, that 'tis said all the Shipping in *Europe* can ride there. In it are several little Islands; some of which are planted.

*Virginia* is divided into 25 Counties; in which are 49 Parishes; 34 with Incumbents on them, and 15 vacant. The latter are distinguish'd by the Letter *V*.

We shall begin with those that lie on *James-River*, the most Southern in the Province: 'Twas, as has been said, call'd *Powhatan* by the Indians. Here the English first settled, and built two Forts for their Defence: but these are since demolish'd. It runs 140 Miles up in the Country; and is near a Mile broad as high as *James-City*. The first County on the South side of it, is *Norfolk County*; which borders on *Carolina*.

In

In this Shire stands the Parish of *Elizabeth*; it contains 112019 Acres, and is water'd by *Elizabeth-River*, which rises in it, and runs into *James-River*, between *East-Bay* and *West-Bay*. The next is,

*Princess-Ann-County* on the Coast: In which are 58305 Acres of Land, and the Parish of *Lynhaven V.*, below *Cape Henry*. The next is,

*Nansemond-County*: In which are 131172 Acres of Land, and three Parishes; *Upper Parish*, *Lower Parish*, and *Chuckatuck*, all vacant. The River *Nansemond* rises in this Shire, and falls into *James-River*, above *Bennet's Creek*. The next is,

*Isle-of-White-County*: In which are 142796 Acres of Land, and two Parishes, *Warwick-Squeek* and *Newport*. Here's also a Spring that vents almost as great a Source of Water as *Holy-Well* in *Wales*. The next is,

*Surry-County*: In which are 111050 Acres of Land, and two Parishes, *Southwark V.* and *Lyons-Creek*. The next is,

*Henrico-County*, the uppermost on the South-side of *James-River*; it contains 148787 Acres of Land, and two Parishes, *Henrico* and *Bristol*. The next over against it on the North-side of the River are,

*Prince George* and *Charles-City*, Counties: In which are 161239 Acres of Land, and three Parishes; *Martin Brandon*, *Wyanoke*, *Westover*. The Parishes in the three last Counties are all supply'd with Ministers. In the County of *Henrico*, there was a Town call'd *Henricopolis*, which is fall'n to decay. Twenty Miles above the Falls, is the *Monacan* Town, where the French Refuges have settled; and next below *Charles-County* on the North-side of the River is,

*James-County*: In which are 108362 Acres of Land, and five Parishes, of which one lies on the other side of the River, as does part of the County. The Parishes are *Wallingford* and *Wilmington*, *James-City*, *Merchants Hundred V.* on the South-side of the River, and *Bruton*. This is reckon'd the chief County, because,

*James-City* stands in it, in a *Peninsula* on the North-side of *James-River*, about 40 Miles from the Mouth of it. There are several Brick Houses in it; and Taverns and Eating Houses, for the Convenience of

of Voyagers and Travellers: But the Buildings are not many nor contiguous, not above 60 or 70 Houses in all. In this Town there were formerly two or three Forts, and many fair Streets; but they have been ruin'd by Fire and Revolutions in the Government, or rather in the Disposition of the Governours. The Removal of the Courts of Justice to *Williamstadt*, by Col. *Nicholson*; His residing and holding the Sessions of Assembly and General Court there, and the building the College there, help'd to keep *James-Town* in the mean Condition he found it; and the Humour of the *Virginians* to live upon Plantations, seem'd to forbid that City to hope for an Increase of Houses and Inhabitants. Not far from *James-City* Sir *William Berkley* built a handsome House for his Residence, call'd *Greenspring*, where is a Spring so cold, that 'tis dangerous to drink of it in the Summer time. In the same County stands,

*Williamsburgh*; Which before the late Governour remov'd thither, was call'd *Middle Plantation*; 'tis about 7 Miles from *James-City* within Land. In this Town are 20 or 30 Houses, and the Publick Assemblies and Courts are held there; yet neither these Advantages, nor that of the College and Academy founded there, cou'd procure it a better Figure than that of a Country Village. Here is a small Fort or rather Battery mounted with 10 or 12 Guns, which were brought thither from *James-City* by order of Col. *Nicholson*, who caus'd a State-house or Capital to be erected, and several Streets to be laid out in the Form of a *W*; but we do not hear that a *V*, or one Angle of it is yet finish'd, or ever likely to be so: For 'tis probable that whenever the Government, or the People shall think of building a City, they will return to their Old Capital, *James-City*. The next County to this is,

*York-County*. It lies between the two Rivers, *James-River*, and *York-River*, and contains 60767 Acres of Land, and three Parishes; *Hampton, V*, *York*, and *New-Pokoson*. The latter stands at the Mouth of *York-River*. The next County to it

<sup>s,</sup> *Warwick-County*: In which are 38444 Acres of Land, and 2 Parishes, *DenbyV*, and *Mulberry-Island V*.  
T
The

## The History of Virginia.

The River *Pokoson* rises in it, and runs into the Bay of *Chesapeac* near the Mouth of *York-River*. The next to this is,

*Elizabeth-City* and County, the least in *Virginia*, containing but 29000 Acres of Land, and one Parish. *Elizabeth-City*, which tho never very great, is less than when 'twas first built: It had then several good Houses of Brick and Stone, and a Fort was rais'd there in the Dutch-War; all which are Ruins already, there being a sort of Fatality which attends the Towns in *Virginia*, so that they are like never to come to any thing, unless the very nature of the Inhabitants is quite alter'd; for they have now nothing so little in their thoughts, as the building of Towns. The Parish-Church of *Elizabeth-City* is supply'd with a Minister. Crossing the Neck of Land to *Pokoson*, we come to the Mouth of *York-River*, which the Indians call'd *Pamunky*, a Name the upper Branch of this River in King *William's* County still retains.

This River is navigable 60 Miles with Great Ships, and with Ketches and Sloops 30 more. It runs the same Course with *James-River* for an 100 Miles, and so near it, that in some Places 'tis not above 5 Miles over Land from one to the other; which Land between them being so well accomodated for Navigation, and so near two such great Rivers, is best inhabited; and here the Richest Planters are seated. After the last Indian Massacre, 'twas propos'd to draw a Pale from one River to the other, and wholly clearing the Country of Savages, to live secure between the two Rivers, where they had the Conveniency of Ships coming within a few Miles of every House; we must go up higher into the Country, and following the Course of the River through *Elizabeth*, *Warwick* and *York-Counties*, before-mention'd, we come to,

*New Kent*; Containing 171314 Acres of Land. This is one of the largest and most populous Counties in *Virginia*. 'Tis water'd by the Southern Branch of the River *York*, and has two Parishes in it, *Blissland* and *St. Peter's*. The Western Bounds of this County, and the next, are certain Hills, out of which issue forth a Glittering Sand, like the Filings of Brass, which Sand was, as is shewn in the History, mistaken.

ken, for Gold by the first Planters. The next County to this nearer the Falls is,

*King William-County*: In which are 84324 Acres, and one Parish, *St. John's*: *Pamunky-River* runs thro' it; 'tis the Southern Branch of *York-River*. On the South of this lies,

*King and Queens-County*: Containing 131716 Acres of Land, and two Parishes, *Straton-Major*, and *St. Stephens*. *Chicohomony-River* rises in it, and falls into *James-River*, near *Bromfield's* Plantation. From this County, returning thro' *King William-County*, and *New-Kent*, down the North-shore of *York-River*, we come to,

*Gloucester-County*; the best Peopl'd of any in the Country. It has 142450 Acres of Land in it, and 4 Parish Churches, *Perse*, *Abington*, *Ware* and *Kingston*. 'Tis parted from,

*Middlesex-County*, by the River *Prankitank*, which is navigable twenty or thirty Miles up, containing 49500 Acres, and one Parish, *Christ-Church*. The County of *Middlesex* lies on the South Shoar of *Rappahanock-River*, which is very broad, deep, and navigable 40 Miles within Land, where 'tis remarkable that the Heads of *York-River* and *Rappahanock-River*, issue out of low marshy Ground, and not of Hills and Mountains, as other Rivers do. Above *Middlesex*, towards the Falls, is *Rappahanock*; or,

*Essex-County*: Containing 140920 Acres of Land. In this County and *Middlesex* lies the Great Swamp, or Bog, call'd the *Dragon-swamp*, 'tis near 60 Miles long, and is over-run with Bryars, Thorns, and wild Beasts, which herd there, because the Place being almost inaccessible, the Inhabitants can't come at them, at least not so easily as in the Woods and Savana's. In this County stands three Parishes, *South Farnham*, *Sittingburn V*, *St. Mary's*. The South-side of it is water'd by *Mattapony*, the Western Branch of *York-River*, which is Navigable. Above it are the Counties of,

*Richmond* and *Stafford*: A Survey of which I have not seen; they are new Counties, and are not in the old Surveys, going all by the Name of *Rappahanock*. In these are three Parishes, *North-Farnham* in *Richmond*, and *St. Pauls V*, and *Overworton* in *Stafford-County*. The next below it, between *Rappahanock*, and *Patowmack*, is,

*Westmoreland-County*, which is very large; but our Author has not communicated the Number of Acres. It has two Parishes in it, *Copeley* and *Washington*. Below it lies the County of,

*Lancaster*, On the North-Shore of *Rappahanock-River*; 'tis water'd by the River *Cartomain*, or *Corotoman*, which runs into *Rappahanock-River*, about 3 Leagues from the Mouth of it. There are two Parishes in this County, *Christ-Church* and *St. Mary's White-Chappel*. The next to this and the last in the Province on the South Shoar of *Patowmack*, is,

*Northumberland-County*: In which are two Parish Churches, *Fairfeld* and *Bowtracy V*, and *Wiccomoco*. There is a River of the same Name *Wiccomoco*, which Rises in this County, and runs into the Bay at the Mouth of *Patowmack-River*, which is the Northern Bounds of *Virginia*, and divides it from *Maryland*. The Neck of Land from *Wiccomoco* to the Bay is what goes by the Name of the *Northern Neck*, which we often mention'd in the first Chapter. We must now cross over the Bay: and all along the Shoar from *Cape Charles*, at the Mouth of the Bay, to the River *Pocemoke*, which divides it from *Maryland* on the Eastern Bounds, the Province of *Virginia* still continues, and there are two Counties in it:

*Accomack*; Which retains its Indian Name. This is the largest County in *Virginia*, and contains 200923 Acres of Land. 'Tis not so Populous as those on the other side of the Bay, and has but one Parish in it that of *Accomack*, which is without a Minister. The River *Chiffonessex* rises in this County, as do several others of less Note. The other County is,

*Northampton*: A narrow County that runs along in a Neck between the *Virginian-Sea*, and the Bay of *Chesapeac*. *Cape Charles*, in the most Southernly part of it, is opposite to *Cape Henry*, and those two Points of Land are what is commonly call'd *The Capes of Virginia*. This County contains 99384 Acres of Land, and one Parish Church, that of *Hungers*, which is also without a Minister. Thus we have visited the whole Province, and have taken notice of the most remarkable things; but as there are no Towns, nor Mines, nor other Places worthy the Reader's Curiosity; so our Relation wants that Variety



of Objects which renders such Descriptions delightful. The *Apelchean* Mountains are in the Western Bounds of *Virginia*, and are stor'd with Minerals, if we may believe some Travellers who have spoken of them, but we don't find that they have been of any other Advantage to the *Virginians*, than to furnish them with Earth, for the Experiments of their Virtuoso's at the College. The whole Country is water'd with Rivers, the most noted of which we have treated of; the Falls of each of those Rivers, are but 15 or 20 Miles distant from one another; and besides them, there are *North-River*, *Eastermost-River*, *Pungoteque*, *Apumatuc*, *Poyanketank*, and others, that are Navigable many Miles, and well stor'd with Fish. The Tides are scarce discernable when the Winds hold at N. W. but at other times they flow as they do in *England*, only they seem not so large, which is thought to be occasion'd by the Tides diffusing it self into so many Rivers. The Original Springs that make all these Rivers, rise at the Foot of the *Appallean* or *Apelchean* Lowth: Mountains; but the Cataracts or Falls are 60 or 70 *Phil.* Miles distant from those Hills. The Shoars are for *Transf. p.* the most Part Sandy. What Stones are there, are al- 567, 568. most all of 'em hard and transparent. Some will cut Glafs like Diamonds, and are equal to 'em in Lustre. The Clifts of these Rivers are full of great Veins of Iron Mine, and generally all the Highlands under the Mould are a meer Rock of Iron: The Charge of raising an Iron-Work is so great, that no Body in *Virginia* dares ventures on the Expence, or the Planters are so intent on Planting Tobacco, that they neglect all other Improvements.

There was another Town built in *James-County*, call'd *Dales Gift*; but 'twas ruin'd by the Incurfions of the Indians, Fire, and other Accidents. The Country lying between *York-River*, and *James-River*, is the best inhabited. The Banks of the former are full of Plantations; and the best Tobacco growing here, the Trade of the Colony tends most that way. We have elsewhere observ'd in what Counties the Indian Nations still remain. Their Towns are very small, and their Houses or Huts such mean Dwellings, that they are rather like the Cabbins of the Slaves in the Sugar-Islands, than the Habitations of free People.

The abundance of Rivers occasion abundance of Mills in this Country; some of their Springs send forth such a glut of Water, that in less than half a Mile below the Fountain-Head, they afford a Stream sufficient to supply a Grist-mill. All these Rivers are full of Creeks, in which the Planters employ an infinite number of Sloops and small Boats, to convey their Tobacco and Merchandize from and to the Ships that lie in the greater Rivers, or in the the less. We have said little of the greatest River of them all, *Patomack*, because 'twill as properly come under the Article of *Maryland*, being the Boundary of that Province, on the Western-side of *Virginia*. It cannot be expected that in so little a Map as that is which is annex'd to this History, so full a Description can be made of *Virginia*, as in the large one; but this is the newest Survey: And the Country is divided into the Counties that are the present Divisions of it, there being at this time 6 new ones; Prince *George*, Princess *Anne*, King *William*, King and *Queen*, *Richmond* and *Stafford*. In the former Surveys there were but 19 Counties: In this all of them are included, together with as many Plantations as wou'd stand in so much room; and the same Care has been taken in the Maps of the other Countries.

---

## C H A P. III.

*Of the Inhabitants ; and first of the Indians :  
Their Government , Religion, Manners,  
and Customs : Of the English, Masters,  
Servants , and Slaves : Their Numbers,  
Strength and Way of Living.*

WHEN the English first discover'd *Virginia*, the Indians were divided into several Nations, as, the *Kecongthans*, the *Weanocks*, the *Arrahattocks*, the *Apnemetoeks*, the *Nansemunds*, the *Chesapeacs*, the *Pasabahoges*, who possess'd the Ground where *James-City* now stands. These Tribes or Divisions inhabited the Country lying on the River *Powhatan*, or *James-River*. On the River *Pamunke* there dwelt the Nations of the *Youngtanunds*, and the *Mattapaments*. On *Rappahanock*, or *Toppahanuck-River*, the *Manahoacs*, the *Moraughtacunds*, and the *Cuttatawomens*. The Country on which the English landed, when *Capt. Barlow* and *Capt. Amidas* discover'd it, was call'd *Wingandacoa*, and the King of it *Wingina*. It lies Southward of the Bay of *Chesapeac*, near the Frontiers of *Florida*. Sometimes the King of one of these Nations made War on the rest, and conquer'd three or four of them ; the Dominion of which generally after his Death, fell back to the natural Princes of those Countries. All these Nations are now entirely ruin'd, occasion'd partly by their Feuds among themselves, and partly by their Wars with the English, who are Masters of all the Countries which they formerly Possess'd : The English for their Convenience, or out of Humanity, suffer'd them to enjoy their Lives, and Liberties, and frequently enter'd into Leagues with them, which the faithless Savages kept no longer than they were forc'd to it. Those who dwell upon the Borders of the Province, which only retains the Name of *Virginia* at this day, were the most treacherous

and cruel to the English of all the Indian Nations. The People of *Wingandacoa* were affable and courteous to the first Adventurers, while *Grangammeo*, *Wingina's* Elder Brother reign'd. His Wife also did many good Offices to the English, who afterwards attempted to settle on the Island of *Roenoke*: But after *Grangammeo's* Death, *Wingina*, who perhaps lik'd them better for Dealers than for Neighbours, behav'd himself very treacherously towards them; And when a Party of 'em was going towards the Kingdom of the *Mangoacs*, in quest of Copper Mines, he stir'd up several Tribes against them, and particularly *Temoatan*, Prince of the *Moratoes*, whose Father *Ensenore* prevented his falling upon them; and *Menatonon* King of one of those Tribes, courted their Friendship by Presents of Pearl, as did *Okisco* King of the *Weopomeocs*, who submitted to become Tributary to the Queen of *England*. *Wingina* finding all his Contrivances to destroy them were disappointed, thought it his Interest to affect a Friendship for them, as the other Kings did; but this Friendship lasted no longer than till he had an Opportunity to shew his Treachery, and when he thought he had 'em at an Advantage, he fell upon them, who putting his wild Army to flight, took him Prisoner, and cut off his Head. The English being forc'd to abandon those Settlements, Capt. *Smith* founded the present one, as we have elsewhere related, in the Dominions of *Powhatan*, King of *Wicomoco*, who warr'd with the English all his Life-time, except a few Intervals of Peace, and the same did his Successor *Oppecanough*, the last Prince of any Fame of the Savages. They fell to decay after his Death, and tho they committed several Murders on the Borders; 'twas rather like the Sallies of Robbers from their lurking Holes, than the Incurfions of a warlike Nation. They are now brought so low, that the English are not in the least fear of them, having it in their Power to extirpate them whenever they please; but they serve them in Hunting and Fowling, and other Services; which is the chiefest, if not the only Cause of their Preservation. One may judge by *Oppecanough's* Greatness, who we are told cou'd bring 20000 Men into the Field, that had all the Indian Tribes been united, it wou'd have been impossible to have made

a Settlement with such small Numbers as the English brought over, or from time to time sent to *Virginia*. Of all the Nations that were then in being; at which time two or three thousand Bow-men liv'd in a Town together, the few that remain are scatter'd up and down on the Frontiers of the English Plantations; and tho they live in Towns, or what some call Cities, we may perceive by the following Account of them, they are reduc'd so low; that the Hand of Providence appears visibly in their Destruction.

They are much more afraid of the Indians who inhabit higher up in the Country, than of the English; to whom they pay Tribute of three Indian Arrows, and 20 Beavers Skins, each Town, for Protection.

On the North-side of the Bay,

In *Accomac* are 8 Towns, viz.

- Matomkin*, Lately almost depopulated by the Small-Pox.
- Gingoteque*, What is left of this Place is now part of the Kingdom of a Prince, who reigns over a Nation of *Maryland-Indians*.
- Kiquotan*, Almost ruin'd.
- Matchepungo*, Some few Families remain there.
- Occahanock*, There a few Families are also yet in being.
- Pungoteque*, Govern'd by a Queen; a small Nation.
- Oanancock*, Has but 4 or 5 Families.
- Chiconessex*, Not many more.
- Nanduye*, Govern'd by an Empress, to whom all the Nations on the Coasts are Tributary.
- Gangascoe*, In the County of *Northampton*, bordering on *Accomac*, as numerous as all the other Nations put together

On the South-side of the Bay are,

- Wyanoke*, In Prince *George* County, almost come to nothing. The Remains of this Tribe are gone to live with other Indians.

- Appamatiox*, In *Charles-City*. These live on *Col. Byrd's Lands*; about 7 Families: They were formerly a great Nation.
- Nottaweyes*, In *Surrey*. This King can raise 100 Bow-men; the most thriving People of all the *Virginian-Indians*.
- Menkeering*, By *Nansamund*: Has about 30 Bow-men.
- Nansamund*, About 30 Bow-men; and increase of late.
- Pamunkeye*, In King *William County*, has 40 Bow-men; they decrease.
- Chickahomony*, Has 16 Bow-men; they increase, and were a powerful People when the English first landed here.
- Rappahanock*, In *Essex*; has but a few Families; and they live scatter'd on the English Seats.
- Port-Tobago*, In *Richmond*, 5 Bow-men.
- Wiccomoco*, Of which Nation there are now but three Men living, who retain the Name of their Kingdom, and the particular Customs of their Ancestors. Of this People, *Powhatan* was at first King, and conquer'd several others after them. If these three Men have a King, he must be of the same Rank with *Trincolo* in the Tempest, the Nation being much of the same size. These Men are very proud of their Original, and live by themselves, separate from either the other Indians or the English.

Were all these Nations or Tribes united, they could not raise 500 fighting Men: A poor Army, compar'd to the *Virginian Militia*; which, as we shall make appear in this Chapter, consists of near 10000 Men.

Those miserable Wretches still follow the Religion and Customs of their Ancestors; and are not become either more pious or more polite by the Company of the English.

As to their Religion, they have all of 'em some dark Notion of God; and some of them brighter ones, if my Author may be believ'd, who had this Confession from the Mouth of an Indian, *That they believ'd God was universally beneficent: That his Dwelling was in Heaven above; and the Influences of his Goodness reach'd to the Earth beneath: That he was incomprehensible in his Excellence; and enjoy'd all possible Felicity; That his Duration was eternal; his Perfection boundless; and, That he possesses everlasting Indolence and Ease.* So far the Savage talk'd as rationally of the Being of a God, as a Christian Divine or Philosopher could have done: But when he came to justify their Worshiping of the Devil, whom they call *Okee*, his Notions were very Heterodox: He said, *'Tis true God is the Giver of all good Things, but they flow naturally and promiscuously from him; that they are shower'd down upon all Men indifferently, without Distinction: That God does not trouble himself with the impertinent Affairs of Men; nor is concern'd at what they do, but leaves them to make the most of their free Will, and to secure as many as they can of the good Things that flow from him: That therefore it was to no purpose either to fear or worship him: But on the contrary, if they did not pacify the evil Spirit, he would ruin their Health, Peace, and Plenty, he being always visiting them in the Air, Thunder, Storms, &c.*

As to the Idol which they all worship, and is kept in a Temple, call'd *Quiocasán*; He seem'd to have a very indifferent Opinion of its Divinity, and cry'd out upon the Juggling of the Priests--- This Man does not talk like a common Savage; and therefore we may suppose he had study'd the Matter more than his Countrymen; who for the generality pay a great deal of Devotion to the Idol, and worship him as their chief Deity.

Their Priests and Conjurers are highly reverenc'd by them: They are given extreamly to Panwawing or Conjuring: And one of them very lately conjur'd a Shower of Rain for Col. *Byrd's* Plantation in a time of Drought, for two Bottles of Rum. We are not apt to give Credit to such supernatural Events; and had we not found this in an Author who was on the Spot, we should have reject'd it as a Fable.

Their

Their Priests promise fine Women Eternal Spring, and every Pleasure in Perfection in the other World, which charm'd them in this ; and threaten them with Lakes of Fire and Torments, by a Fairy in the Shape of an old Woman. They are often bloody in their Sacrifices ; and offer up young Children to the Devil. They have a superstitious Ceremony among them, which they call *Huskanawing*, and is perform'd thus ; They shut up ten or twelve young Men, the most deserving among them, about 20 Years of Age, in a strong Inclosure, made on purpose, like a Sugar Loaf, and every way open like a Lattice, for the Air to pass through. They are kept there for several Months ; and are allow'd to have no Sustenance, but the Infusion or Decoction of poisonous intoxicating Roots ; which turns their Brain, and they run stark mad.

By this 'tis pretended they lose the Remembrance of all former things, even of their Parents, Treasure, Language, as if they had drunk of the Water of Oblivion, dipt out of the Lake *Lethe*.

When they have been in this Condition as long as their Custom directs, they lessen this intoxicating Portion ; and by degrees the young Men recover the Use of their Senses : But before they are quite well, they are shewn in their Towns ; and the Youth who have been *huskanaw'd*, are afraid to discover the least sign of their remembering any thing of their past Lives ; for in such case they must be *huskanaw'd* again ; and they are disciplin'd so severely the second time, that it generally kills them.

After the young Men have past this Trial, they are *Coucaroufes*, or Men of Quality in their Nations : and the Indians say they do it, to *take away from Youth all childish Impressions, and that strong Partiality to Persons and Things, which is contracted before Reason comes to take place.*

The Indian Priests, to command the Respect of the People, make themselves look as ugly and as terrible as they can. The Conjurers always share with them in their Deceit, and the Gain by it : The Indians consult both of them before they go on any Enterprize. There are no Priestesses or Witches among them. They erect Altars on every remarkable Occasion ;  
and



and have Temples built like their common Cabins, in which their Idol stands, and the Corpse of their Kings and Rulers are preserv'd.

They have no sort of Literature among them ; and their way of communicating things from one to another, is by Hieroglyphicks. They make their Accounts by Units, Tens, Hundreds, &c. as the English do ; but they reckon their Years by Cohonks or Winters ; and divide every Year into five Seasons: The budding time, the earing of the Corn, the Summer, the Harvest, the Winter.

The Months they count by Moons. They divide the Day into three parts ; The Rise, Power, and lowering of the Sun: And keep their Accounts by Knots on a String, or Notches on a Stick. Of which Capt. Smith relates a pleasant Story ; That when the Princess *Pocahonta* came for *England*, a *Coucarouse*, or Lord of her own Nation attended her ; his Name was *Uttamaccomack*: And King *Powhatan*, *Pocahonta's* Father, commanded him when he arriv'd in *England*, to tell the People, and give him an Account of their Number. *Uttamaccomack*, when he came ashore, got a Stick, intending to count them by Notches ; but he soon found that his Arithmetick wou'd be to no purpose ; and threw away his Stick. At his Return, the King ask'd him, *How many People there were?* and he reply'd, *Count the Stars in the Sky, the Leaves upon the Trees, and the Sand on the Sea-shore, and you will know how many ; for such is the Number of the People in England.*

They esteem the Marriage-Vow as the most sacred of all Engagements ; and abhor Divorces: Adultery is the most unpardonable of Crimes amongst them.

Their Maidens are very Chaste ; and if any one of them happens to have a Child before Marriage, her Fortune is Spoilt. This Account contradicts others that describe them to be common Prostitutes ; but the Indians and the Virginians disown the Scandal, which some Authors lay to their Charge: They are very spritely and good-humour'd, and the Women generally handsome. Their manner of handling Infants is very rough ; As soon as the Child is born, they plunge it over Head and Ears in cold Water, and then bind it naked to a Board, making a hole  
in

in it in the proper place for Evacuation. Between the Child and the Board, they put some Cotton-Wool or Fur, and let it lie in this Posture, till the Bones begin to harden, the Joints to knit, and the Limbs to grow strong. Then they loosen it from the Board, and let it crawl about where it pleases. From this Custom 'tis said the Indians derive the Cleanness and Exactness of their Limbs, which are the most perfect for these Qualities in the World. Some of 'em are of a Gygantick Stature, live to a greater Age, and are stronger than others; there being never a Dwarfse, crooked, bandy-legg'd, or ill-shapen Indian to be seen. Some Nations of 'em are very tall and large-limb'd, and others are short and small: Their Complexion is a Chestnut brown and Tawny. They paint themselves with a Pocone-root, which stains them of a reddish Colour. They are clear when they are Young. Greasing and Sunning makes their Skin turn hard and black. Their Hair for the most part is cole-black; so are their Eyes: They wear their Hair cut after several whimsical Modes; the Persons of Note always keeping a long Lock behind. The Women wear it very long, hanging at their Backs, or twisted up with Beads, and all the better Sort adorn their Heads with a kind of Coronet; the Men have no Beards, and to prevent their having any, use certain Devices which they will not communicate to the English.

Their Cloaths are a Mantle girt close in the middle, and underneath a Piece of Cloth ty'd round the Waste, and reaching down to the middle of the Thigh. The common Sort only tie a piece of Cloth or Skin round their Middle. As for their Food they boil, broil, or roast all the Meat they eat: *Homony* is their standing Dish, and consists of Indian Corn soak'd, broken in a Mortar, and then boil'd in Water over a gentle Fire for 10 or 12 Hours together. They draw and pluck their Fowl, skin and paunch their Quadrupedes; but dress their Fish with their Scales on, without gutting: They leave the Scales, Entrails and Bones, till they eat the Fish, when they throw the Offals away. Their Food is chiefly Bevors, Turtle, several Species of Snakes: Broth made of Deers Humbles, Pease, Beans, &c. They have no set Meals,

Meals, they eat when they are hungry; and drink nothing but Water. Their Bread is made of Indian Corn, Wild Oats, or the Seed of the Sun Flower: They eat it alone, and not with Meat.

They travel always on Foot, with a Gun or Bow. They live upon the Game they kill; and lie under a Tree, upon a little high Grass. The English prohibit them to keep Corn, Sheep, or Hogs, lest they should steal their Neighbours.

When they come to Rivers, they presently patch up a Canoo of Birch Bark, cross over in it; and leave it on the River's Bank, if they think they shall not want it, otherwise they carry it along with them.

Their way of receiving Strangers is by the Pipe or *Calumet* of Peace: Of the latter *Pero Hemepin* has given a large account in his Voyages; and the Pipe is as follows; They fill a Pipe of Tobacco, larger and bigger than any common Pipe, light it, and then the chief of them takes a Whiff, gives it to the Stranger, and if he smoaks of it, 'tis Peace; if not, War: If Peace, the Pipe is handed all round the Company.

The Diseases of the Indians are very few, and easy to be cur'd: They for the most part arise from excessive Heats and Colds, which they get off by Sweating. As for Aches, and settled Pains in the Joints or Limbs, they use Causticks and Scarifying. Their Priests are their Physicians; and from their Childhood are taught the Nature and Use of Simples; in which their Knowledge is excellent; but they will not communicate it, pretending 'tis a Gift of God; and by the Mystery they make it the more valuable.

Their Riches consist in Furrs, Peak, Roenoke, and Pearl. Their Peak and Roenoke are made of Shells; the Peak like an English Buglas; the Roenoke is a piece of Cockle, drill'd through like a Bead. Before the English came among them, this Peak and Roenoke were all their Treasure, but now they set a value on their Furr and Pearl, and are greedy of scraping Quantities together. The Pearl is good; and formerly was not so rare as 'tis at this time.

They had no Iron Tools before the English brought 'em over: Their Knives were sharpen'd Reeds or Shells; their Axes sharp Stones: They rub'd Fire, by turning

turning the End of a hard piece upon the side of one that is soft and dry, which at last wou'd burn. They fell'd great Trees by burning them down at the Root having ways of keeping the Fire from ascending. They hollow'd them with gentle Fires, scrap'd the Trunk clean; and this made their Canoo's, of which some were 30 Foot long. They are very good Handicrafts Men; and what they do is generally neat and convenient.

In the first Chapter we have said enough to shew that the Government of the Indians was Monarchical: Their Kingdoms descended to the next Heir Male or Female; and they were very exact in preserving the Succession in the right Line. If, as it often happen'd, one great Prince subjected the other those Conquests commonly were lost at his Death, and the Nations return'd again to the Obedience of their natural Princes. They have no written Laws; neither can they have any, having no Letters. Their Lands are in common, and their *Werowances* or Judges are all Lord Chancellours, deciding Causes, and inflicting Punishments, according as they think fit. These *Werowances*, and the *Coucarouses*, are their Terms to distinguish their Men of Quality: The former are their War Captains, and the latter such as have pass'd the Trial of *Huskanawing*. Their Priest and Conjurers have great Authority among them. They have Servants whom they call *Black Boys*; and are very exact in requiring the Respect that is due to their several Qualities.---- And thus much of the Indians, who from a State of Nature and Innocence, in which the English found them, are now infected with the European Vices of Drunkenness, Avarice and Fraud, having learn'd nothing of the new Comers, but what has serv'd to render their Ignorance the more detestable.

We must now treat of the English Inhabitants, their Rise, Numbers, Distinction, and way of Living. We have seen in the beginning of this Treatise, from what small beginnings the English Colony rose to the State it is in at present: And it cannot be imagin'd, that the first Adventurers there were Men of Quality and Fortune, whatever the Proprietors in *England* were: Men of Estate wou'd not leave their Native Country

of which the English are of all Men most fond to seek an Habitation in an unknown Wilderness: And what deter'd such from going thither at first, will always deter them. 'Tis true, as the Colony encreas'd, and became settled, Men of good Families, and small Fortunes, remov'd to *Virginia*, thriv'd and grew great by their Industry and Success: And thus many Gentlemen of *Virginia* may boast as good Descents as those in *England*: But there's no need as yet of an Heralld-Office to be set up at *James-Town*; and the Colony are in the right to make slight of such empty Honours, in comparison of the substantial Profit which is got by Planting and Traffick. Wherefore the honest Merchant, and industrious Planter, are the Men of Honour in *Virginia*; and it would not be the worse for *England*, if Industry and Honour were nearer a-kin than some vain Persons make them.

'Twas a long time before *Virginia* saw a Race of English born on the spot; which was occasion'd by the small number of Women that came over; the first Planters being so hard put to it, that they made no scruple to buy a Wife, and to accept of any Woman that could give a tolerable Account of her Virtue. Women were not so scarce afterwards; when the Colony was come to a sort of Perfection, whole Families transported themselves thither from *England*, to mend their Fortunes, and others to enjoy that Liberty of Conscience which was deny'd them at home, in the Reign of *Charles I.* and his Son *Charles II.* Besides which, several Royalists remov'd thither during the Rump and *Oliver's* Usurpations.

By this means the Colony has so encreas'd in Numbers, that there are now by the nicest Computation near 70000 Men, Women, and Children in *Virginia*, including the French Refugees, the Inhabitants of the *Northern Neck*, and the Negro Servants, who are but a few, in comparison to the Sugar-Plantations. Of these the Men are more numerous in proportion than the Women, occasion'd by greater Numbers of them going over thither; tho' of late years, it has been customary for young Women, who are fall'n into Disgrace in *England*, or are ill us'd by their Parents, to transport themselves thither; and, as they say, *Try their Fortunes*, which have often been

very favourable. The People of *Virginia* are, as in *England*, distinguish'd by the Names of Masters and Servants. The Distinctions of the Masters are by their Offices or Birth; and of the Servants, by such as are for Life, and such as are for a Term of Years: tho' Negroes and their Posterity are all Servants for Life; the white Men and Women for as many Years as they bind themselves: And if they don't bind themselves by particular Indentures, the Laws of the Country oblige them to serve till they are four and twenty Years of Age, if they are under Nineteen when they commence their Service: if above, the term is set to five Years; and then they are as much entitul'd to the Liberties and Privileges of the Place, as any of the Inhabitants or Natives are. Their Masters, when their Times are out, are oblig'd to give each Servant 15 Bushels of Corn, and two new Suits of Cloaths, Linnen and Woollen; besides each of them may take Possession of 50 Acres of unpatented Ground, if he can find any; which is a Privilege that makes a Noise, and is tempting to the poor Creature, who go over, but is not worth the naming, for a Crown will purchase it at any time.

The Laws of *Virginia* take great Care for the good Usage of Servants, as to Necessaries, Diet and Cloaths. And the Labour of the Country, which consists chiefly in Tilling, Manuring the Ground, Sowing and Planting Tobacco is so easy, that as hard Work as 'tis represented to be, the Day-Labourers in *England* are much the greater Slaves, if hard Work, and hard Living, are Signs of Slavery.

The Servants and Slaves are never list'd in the Militia of the Country; but every Freeman from Sixteen to Sixty Years of Age, is enroll'd, and oblig'd to muster once a Year. Their Number is in all 9522, of which 2363 are Light-Horse, and 7159 Foot and Dragoons, according to the following Schedule, taken in the Year 1703. By which the Reader will have a clear View of the Strength of *Virginia*; without including the *Northern Neck*, or the French Refugees at the *Monachan-Town*, which may encrease the Number of Souls to near 70000.

Counties Names.	Number of Souls.	Males.	Females and Children.	Militia.	Horse.	Foot & Dragoons.
Henrico,	2413	915	1498	345	98	247
Prince George and Charles-City,	4045	1406	2639	625	203	422
Surrey,	2230	880	1350	350	62	288
Isle of Wight,	2714	841	1873	514	140	374
Nansamund,	2530	1018	1512	591	142	449
Norfolk,	2279	717	1572	380	48	332
Princess Anne,	2037	686	1351	284	69	215
James-City,	2990	1297	1693	401	123	278
York,	2357	1208	1149	390	68	322
Warwick,	1377	482	895	201	49	152
Elizabeth-City,	1188	469	719	196	54	142
New-Kent,	3374	1325	2049	420	120	300
King William,	1834	803	1031	698	189	509
King and Queen,	2842	1244	1598			
Glocester,	5834	2628	3206	594	121	473
Middlesex,	1632	776	856	199	56	143
Essex,	2400	1090	1310	438	139	299
Richmond,	2622	1392	1230	504	122	382
Stafford,	2033	863	1170	345	84	261
Westmoreland,	2736	1131	1605	451	133	318
Lancaster,	2155	941	1214	271	42	229
Northumberland,	2099	1168	931	522	130	392
Accomack,	2804	1041	1763	456	101	355
Northampton,	2081	712	1369	347	70	277

60606 | 25023 | 35583 | 9522 | 2363 | 7159

Besides the English Inhabitants, there are now several hundred of French Refugees Families, who were sent over thither by King William. These Refugees had a very rich Territory assign'd them, twenty Miles above the Falls of James-River, on the South-side of the River, formerly the Habitation of a Warlike Nation of the Indians, call'd the *Monachans*; and the Town where the French Protestants settled, is call'd the *Monachan Town*.

The Assembly has granted them great Privileges, and been bountiful in their Charity to them, for their Encouragement. They are also very much oblig'd to the Generosity and Protection of Col. *Byrd*, whose Friendship has been serviceable to them on many Occasions. They are an industrious People; have made excellent Wine there, even of the Wild Grapes; and are upon several Improvements, which will be very much to their own Advantage, and that of the Colony.

'Tis computed that the Number of Souls which either came over at first, or since, or have been born in the Country, amounts to near twelve hundred French. And the *Northern-Neck* being larger than the largest of the other Counties, and almost as populous, may contain about six thousand: So that the whole Number of Souls in the Province of *Virginia*, exclusive of *Maryland*, is about 70000.

As to the Customs and Manners of the *Virginians*, they are the same with the English; and one may as well go about to describe the Manners and Customs of any one particular County of *England* separate from the rest.

Their Diet is somewhat different; so is their Cloathing, as also their Sports and Pastimes, and Diseases; occasion'd by the difference of the Climates: Besides Beef, Mutton, and Veal, which the *Virginians* have in plenty, tho' not so good in its kind as we have in *England*, they have Pork, Bacon, and all sorts of Tame and Wild Fowl, better than any of the several Kinds that are in *England*.

Pork is sold from 1 *d.* to 3 *d.* a Pound; a large Pullet for 6 *d.* a Capon for 8 *d.* Chickens 3 *s.* a Dozen; Deer 8 *s.* a Head. The Bread which the better sort of People use, is generally made of Wheat: The poorer eat Pone, made of *Oppone*, or Indian Meal. Their Kitchin-Gardens supplies them with all sorts of Roots, Sallats, and Pot-herbs. Their Drink is according to their Circumstances; the Gentlemen brew small Beer with English Malt: Strong Beer they have from *England*; as also French Wine and Brandy, with which they make *Punch*; or with Rum, from the *Caribbee* Islands, or Spirits of their own distilling, from Apples, Peaches, &c. *Madera* Wine is the most com-  
mor



mon and the most noble of all their strong Drinks. The Poor brew their Beer with Mellasses and Bran; or Indian Corn dry'd in a Stove. They have several other sorts of Potables, which are very wholesom and pleasant. They burn Wood every where, tho there is Pit-Coal in many places; but Wood being so plenty, that they may have it for cutting, no body has thought it worth while to dig for Coal.

Their Cloaths are brought from *England* for Persons of Distinction, and are as much in the Mode as Art and Cost can make them: They are generally of the lightest Stuffs or Silks, both for Men and Women. The Men for Coolness, as in other parts of the *West-Indies*, wear in the Heat of the Summer Fustian and Linnen Jackets; and the Women Linnen or Muslin Gowns. They have almost all their Necessaries, as to Dress, from *England*. Their Buildings are as in *England*, of Brick, Timber and Stone, the out-side of their Houses being cover'd with Lime made of Oyster Shells, much more durable than English Lime.

Their Sports are Deer-hunting, Hare-hunting; but different from the English Chase: They learnt of the Indians to come up to the Deer under the blind of a stalking Horse, as the Savages did under that of a talking Head: They teach a Horse to walk gently by the Huntsman's Side, to cover him from the Sight of the Deer; and so they have an Opportunity to kill him. They have other ways of Deer-hunting; but this being the most remarkable, I have cholen to mention it in this place.

Their Hares they hunt with Mungrils or Swift-Dogs: The Hares generally hole in a hollow Tree, and then they are smoak'd out by the Hunters. They also have other sorts of Hunting, as Vermine-hunting, and Horse-hunting; the latter is much delighted in by young People, who pursue wild Horses with Dogs, and sometimes without them. These wild Horses are such as are foal'd in the Woods in the Hill Country; and no body knowing whom they belong to, every one is free to catch and keep as many as he pleases: Tho they are of the English Breed, they are as shy as any Savage Creatute; but this sort of Cattle seldom is fit for use.

They have several other Sports, as taking wild Turkeys and Wolves in Snares, Fishing, Fowling, and Catching of Beavers; which is an excellent Pastime. 'Tis said that these last Creatures live in a sort of Monarchy like Bees, and are very kind and obedient to their Sovereign.

The Diseases most incident to the Place are Colds caught by the irregular Conduct of People at their first Arrival; Gripes and Fluxes, occasion'd by the same means, the English eating too greedily the pleasant Fruits of the Country; Cachexes or *Yaws*, which is a violent Scurvy, the *Seasoning* here, as in other parts of *America*, is a Fever or Ague, which the Change of the Climate and Diet generally throws new Comers into; The Bark is in *Virginia* a Sovereign Remedy to this Disease.

The *Virginians* have but few Doctors among them, and they reckon it among their Blessings, fancying the Number of their Diseases would encrease with that of their Physicians. The few they have study and make use of Simples most, with which their Woods are plentifully furnish'd.

We will conclude this Account of the Inhabitants of *Virginia*, with a short Character of them. They are a prudent, careful, generous, hospitable People, their Houses being open to all Travellers, whom they entertain as heartily as Relations or Friends; and that sordid Wretch who offends against this laudible Custom of his Country, is the Object of every one's Contempt.

As for the Convenience of Society, the Gentlemen's Houses are at not much greater Distance from one another, than they are in *England*. The Planters are almost all sociable; and as every thing towards making their Friends welcome is cheaper than in *England*, so the Entertainments there are larger, the Reception more sincere, and the Mirth of the Company more hearty than in most of our Gentlemen's Houses; among whom Hospitality is so far out of Fashion, that a Man who pretends to it is reckon'd a Sot or a Bubble; and the costly and pernicious Vices that were introduc'd in the place of it in the last Century, has banish'd it from that Country where it formerly flourish'd, to the eternal Praise

Praise of our Ancestors, and the Shame of their Posterity.

---

C H A P. IV.

*Of the Government of Virginia ; Of the Laws, Courts of Judicature, Publick Offices, and Revenues.*

THE Government of *Virginia* was at first by a President, and a Council of twelve. Mr. *John White* was the first President; and when the Presidency was abrogated, there was a Commission granted by the Company or Proprietors in *England* to Sir *Thomas Gates*, Sir *George Summers*, and Capt. *Newport*, to be joint Governours. We don't find that the Governours and their Council had any more Power than the President and his Council; but the Name gave more Authority to their Acts in the Imagination of some Persons.

When *K. Charles I.* dissolv'd the Company, he continu'd the Form of the Government by a Governour and Council for the Executive Power, and plac'd the Legislative in the Assembly. The Assembly had been appointed before, and met several times during the Governments under the Company. The chief Court next to the Assembly is the *General Court*, held by the Governour and Council, who are Judges of it, and take Cognizance of all Causes Criminal, Penal, Ecclesiastical and Civil. There is no Appeal from this Court, unless the Matter in dispute amounts in value to above three hundred Pounds, and then Appeals lie to the Queen and Council in *England*. In Criminal Cases there never was any Appeal, but the Governour can pardon Persons for any Crime whatsoever, except Murder, and reprove ev'n for that till her Majesty's Pleasure be known therein. Indeed the Governour's Power in this and the other Plantations is very great: He is subject only to the Queen's Commands, and represents her Person in his Government; he assents to or dissents from the Acts of Assembly, as he thinks

fit, and by his Assent passes 'em into Laws. He Calls, Prorogues and Dissolves the Assembly: He Calls and Presides in the Council: He makes Justices of the Peace; all Officers of the Militia under the Degree of a Lieutenant General: Puts out Proclamations: Is the Keeper of the Seal of the Colony, and disposes of the Queen's Lands according to the Charter and Laws of the Country: all Payments out of the Treasury are order'd by him, or in his Name: He is Vice-Admiral by Virtue of a Commission from the Admiralty, and has a Salary of 2000 *l.* a Year; formerly 'twas but 1000 *l.* and about 500 *l.* Perquisites; 200 *l.* a Year was added by the Assembly in favour of Sir *William Berkley*; and the Lord *Colepepper* got it encreas'd to 2000 *l.* a Year, and 150 *l.* a Year House-rent, which, with the Perquisites, make it worth near 3000 *l.* a Year to the Governour, and more if he oppresses the People, as too many Governours have done. When the Governour and Deputy Governour are absent, the Administration falls to the President of the Council for the time being, who has a Sallary of 500 *l.* a Year only, added to what is given him as a Counsellor, which is a very small Allowance. The Queen nominates the Counsellors by Letter or Instruction, which says no more, but that they be sworn of the Council. The Governour can fill up the vacant Places of such as die, or are remov'd without staying for Orders from *England*. These Counsellors have an equal Vote with the Governour at the Council-Table in many things, and are a Check upon him, if he offers to exceed the Bounds of his Commission, in calling Assemblies, disposing of the Publick Revenue, placing and displacing Officers, Votes and Orders of Council, publishing Proclamations, making Grants, and passing all Patents. They are the Upper House in the Assembly, and claim a negative Voice to all Laws.

Their Sallary in all is 350 *l.* a Year, which is divided amongst them, according to their Attendance on General Courts and Assemblies. The Lower House of the Assembly consists of the Representatives of the Counties, two for each, and one for *James-City*; in all 51. The College also has Power by their Charter, to send a Member to the Assembly.

The

The Assembly-Men are chosen by the Freeholders, by Virtue of a Writ directed to the Sheriff, which is read in every Church and Chappel in the County, and the Day of Election then appointed. The Privileges of these Assembly-Men are the same with the Members of Parliament in *England*, and the Power much the same with that of the House of Commons, only they are very much influenc'd by the Pleasure of the Governour; and after their Acts have regularly pass'd the Lower House and Upper House, and have had the Governour's Assent, they must send to *England* to be confirm'd by the Queen; but till she has declar'd her Negative, they are in full Force. These Assemblies meet once or twice a Year, as occasion requires. Besides the Governour and Council, the Publick Officers are,

*The Auditor of the Revenue, Dudley Diggs, Esq;* whose Salary is  $7\frac{1}{2}$  per Cent. of all the Publick Money.

*The Secretary and President of the Council, Edmund Jennings, Esq;* whose Fees and Perquisites amount to above 400 l. a Year.

*The Treasurer, William Byrd, Esq;* whose Salary is 6 l. per Cent. of all Money that passeth through his Hands.

*Collector of the Customs, Col. Gawen Corbin.*

These are General Officers and Servants of the Colony. There are other little Officers; as Clerks of Courts, Sheriffs, and Surveyors, &c. The Sheriffs Place of each County is very profitable by an Allowance of 10 per Cent. out of all his Receipts and other Advantages. The Revenues of *Virginia*, arise,

1. By the Queen's Quit-rents 2 s. } for every 100 Acres.	} 1200 l. a Year.
2. By the Act for the Support of the Government, 2 s. for every Hogshead of Tobacco export- ed; 15 d. a Tun for every Ship; 6 d. Poll for every Passenger; Fines and Forfeitures, Waifs and Strays, Escheats of Land, and Personal Estate for want of a lawful Heir.	
3. By the Act reserv'd to be dis- pos'd of by the Assembly, 4 d. a Gallon on Wine, Rum and Brandy; 1 d. a Gallon on Beer, Cyder and other Liquors, 15 s. for each Servant not be- ing a Native of <i>England</i> and <i>Wales</i> , and 28 s. for each Slave or Negroe.	} 1200
4. The College-Revenue, a Du- ty on Skins and Furs.	} 100
5. The Duty of 1 d. a pound on all Tobacco exported to the other Plantations, and not car- ry'd directly to <i>England</i> , King <i>William</i> gave it to the Col- lege.	} 200
<hr/> 5700 <hr/>	

The General Court, of which we have made some mention, is also call'd the Quarter Court, as being held every Quarter of a Year. There are inferior Courts, which are kept every Month in each County, and are call'd the County-Courts, or Monthly Courts, where Matters that are not of the highest Moment, such as do not relate to Life or Member, or exceed a certain limited Value, are try'd. From these Courts there lies an Appeal to the Quarterly Courts: In which no Action can be originally brought under the value of Ten Pounds Sterling. The Sheriffs, Justices of the Peace, and other Officers,

cers, are Judges of these County-Courts. In which every Man may plead his own Cause, or his Friends do it for him, the *Virginians* understanding their Interest too well to incourage Lawyers; believing that as Diseases wou'd be brought in by Doctors, so Lawyers wou'd create Suits; a Mischief we in *England* all complain of, but despair of seeing remedy'd. The Justices of the Peace also hold Courts yearly in each County to look after Orphans, and take care of them and their Estates, to provide for those Children that are Fatherless, and have no Body to provide for them. The Laws of *Virginia* are the Acts of Parliament and Statutes of *England*, which affect all her Majesty's Dominions in general; the Statutes and Acts of the Assembly, which relate only to the Affairs of this Colony, in particular Orders of the Queen and Council in *England*, which in many things have the Force of Laws in the Plantations; the Usages of the Country, or the Civil Law, by which all Cases in the Admiralty are adjudg'd. But there being an excellent Collection of the Laws of this and all the other Plantations already publish'd, I refer the Reader to it for a larger and clearer account of them.

---

## C H A P. V.

### *Of the Church, and Church-Affairs, and the College in Virginia.*

**W**HEN the Nobility, Gentry, Merchants, and others, first got a Grant of this Country, and resolv'd to make a Settlement upon it, they receiv'd large Contributions to carry it on from several Devout Persons, who were for propagating the Gospel among the Indians, building Schools, Churches, and settling Ministers for their Conversion and Instruction. To this end a great Lottery was set up in *London*, the Profits of which were for the benefit of the Colony; and what instigated many charitable People to put Money into it, were Hopes that a good part of it wou'd be laid out

out on the use for which it was by them intended. This Lottery was drawn in *St. Paul's Church*; but we do not find that the Money was employ'd as those Religious Persons wou'd have had it, or that there have been many Converts made by the English in this Country. The Religion of the *Virginians* is the same as in the rest of her Majesty's Dominions: The Body of the People are Members of the Church of *England*. There are some few Dissenters, and might have been more, had they not been persecuted by *Sir William Berkley*. Whether the *Virginians* glory in it or not, or honour the Memory of this Governour the more for it, we can't tell; but *Puritans* were certainly always discountenanc'd by him. In the Year 1641. *Mr. Bennet* went to *Boston* in *New-England* to desire in the Name of some other Gentlemen, that two or three Ministers might be sent them. *Mr. Phillips*, *Mr. Thompson*, and *Mr. Knowles*, a late Dissenting Minister in *London*, came thither, where they were kindly entertain'd by private Persons, but the Governour and his Council, forbade them to Preach, and order'd, *That such as wou'd not conform to the Ceremonies of the Church of England shou'd depart the Country.*

There are forty nine Parish-Churches in the Province, of which thirty four are supply'd with Ministers, and 15 vacant. It were to be wish'd that care was taken to supply them with such Divines as might, by their Example as well as by their Preaching, invite People to a Religious Life; the Indian Darkeness being not more gloomy and horrid than what some of the Meaner Sort of *Virginians* live in, and their Parsons for the most part don't take much Pains to lead 'em into the Light of the Gospel. In each Parish there is a Church built either with Timber, Brick or Stone, and decently adorn'd with all things proper for the Celebration of Divine Service. In large Parishes there's a Chappel of Ease, and sometimes two for the Convenience of the Parishioners. The Minister of the Parish preaches in them alternately, and each of 'em has a Reader to read Prayers in his Absence. The Minister's Maintenance is settled at 16000 *l.* Tobacco each, yearly, besides Perquisites, as 40 *s.* for a Funeral Sermon, 20 *s.* for a Marriage.



The Parish-Affairs are govern'd by a Vestry of twelve Gentlemen chosen out of the Inhabitants; these are call'd the Patrons of the Church, and on the Death of one of them the Survivors elect another in his place. They have the Presentation of Ministers, and the sole Power of all Parish-Assessments: No Man can be of the Vestry, but what subscribes an Instrument to be conformable to the Church of *England*; two of these are the Church-Wardens, whose Business it is to see the Orders of the Vestry obey'd, to collect the Parish and the Parsons Tobacco, to keep the Parish Accounts, and to present all Profaneness and Immorality. The Power of Induction upon the Presentation of Ministers, is lodg'd in the Governour's hands by Law. There are only two Presbyterian, and three Quakers Meetings in this Colony. The Bishop of *London*, who is the Ordinary of this and all the other Plantations, appoints a Commissary here, whose Business is to make Visitations of Churches, and have the Inspection of the Clergy, for which he's allow'd 100*l.* per *Annun*, and by the strict hand that the Clergy and Governour have held over Dissenters, they have been kept low in *Virginia*, and never encreas'd there: The Assemblies having done what their Governours would have 'em, to discourage them.

In the Year 1642. Sir *W. Berkley* then Governour, they pass an Act to prevent Dissenting Ministers preaching and propagating their Doctrines. They admitted none to preach in their Churches, but such as were ordain'd by some Bishop of the Church of *England*: And in 1663. Sir *William Berkley* being still Governour, great Restraints were laid upon them by a mistaken Zeal, to prevent their getting ground. Of what ill Consequence this has been to the Colony, I leave to those moderate *Virginians* to determine, who think they ought not to sacrifice the true Interest of their Country to the Revenge or Pride of a Party. In the first Chapter of this Treatise, we have hinted the Project of a College, which afterwards was built at Middle-Plantation, now call'd *Williamsburgh*, mostly at the Charge of their late Majesties King *William* and Queen *Mary*, who gave 2000*l.* towards it, and 20000 Acres of Land, the Duty of 1*d.* a pound on all Tobacco exported from *Virginia* and *Maryland* to the Plantations,

tions, and the Surveyor-Generals Place, which was then vacant. He also granted them the Privilege of sending a Member to the Assembly. The Assembly afterwards added a Duty on Skins and Furs. The whole Profit amounts now to above 400 *l.* a Year and the Revenue encreases yearly. The Foundation was to consist of

A President.

Six Masters, or Professors; the Chief Master was to have 100 *l.* a Year.

100 Scholars, Graduates or Non-graduates.

They were enabled to purchase and hold to the value of 2000 *l.* a Year, and were to be govern'd and visited by certain Gentlemen nam'd in the Charter who were to be call'd the Governours and Visitors and upon the Death of any one of them, were empower'd to choose another in his Place. One of these was to be Rector, and their number in all to be 18. They were to name the President, Masters, and other Officers of the College, and had Power to make Statutes and Ordinances. The Building, when perfect, was to consist of a Quadrangle, and two sides of it were carry'd up. The Kitchen, Brew-house and Bake-house were finish'd.

The Professors were to read on all the liberal Sciences, on Agriculture, Architecture, Art Military, Navigation, Gardning, Trade, and Manufactures, once a Week from *Easter* to *Michaelmas*, and twice a Week from *Michaelmas* to *Easter*. They began upon Experiments of Plants, Minerals, and were assisted by the French in the *Monachan* Town; their own Lead, Iron and Copper Mines in the *Appallean* Mountains were under their Consideration, when the Fire put an end to their College and Studies. There were such Expectations of the Revenue, which wou'd be rais'd by all Tobacco exported to the other Colonies, that they talk'd of adding four itinerant Professors to the Resident, each to have 120 *l.* a Year, and these were to travel into *Europe*, *Asia*, *Africa*, and the other Parts of *America*, to make Inquisitions in natural and experimental Phylosophy for the use of this Univerfity: They were to take an Oath to write  
nothing

nothing that they cou'd not prove to be true. The College was to bear their Charges, but they had no occasion to be at such Expence.

The first President of the College was Dr. *Thomas Bray*, who procur'd considerable Contributions in *England*, towards collecting a Library. They proceeded so far, that they had a Commencement there in the Year 1700. at which there was a great Concourse of People : several Planters came thither in their Coaches, and several in Sloops from *New-York*, *Pensilvania* and *Maryland*. It being a new thing in *America* to hear Graduates perform their Academical Exercises. The Indians themselves had the Curiosity to come to *Williamsburgh* on this occasion, and the whole Country rejoic'd as if they had some relish of Learning. About this time the Clergy here translated the Practice of Piety into the Indian Language, and the College intended to send for a Printer from *England*. Since that a dreadful Fire seiz'd this Building before it was quite finish'd, and consum'd it to Ashes, under which the Project seems to lie bury'd, and the Colony must be in a better Condition than now 'tis, before they can think of reviving it.

---

## C H A P. VI.

*Of the Climate, the Soil, and its Productions, as Trees, Seeds, Plants, Roots, Fruits, and Flowers.*

WE may imagine by the Situation of the Country, that the Climate is Healthy, and indeed it generally agrees well with English Constitutions. 'Tis full of Rivers, and consequently the Soil very fruitful. The Sickness that the English who go thither complain of, is occasion'd by Folly, Intemperance, or Carelesness; and a sober prudent Man will not only find every thing that preserves and confirms Health, but also all things that are charming by the Beauty of the Prospect, and the Delight, the Fragrancy of the Fields and Gardens, the Brightness of the Skye, and Serenity of the Air affects the Ravish'd Senses. The greatest Disturbance the People meet with there, are terrible Claps of Thunder, which however do very little Harm, the excessive Heats of the Summer, against which the Inhabitants are defended by the cool Shades of the Woods and Groves, and stinging Insects, as Frogs, Snakes, Muscketa's, Chinches, Seed-takes and Red-worms. The Rattle-Snake is most talk'd of, and his Bite without a present Application, is infallibly Death; but the Remedies are so well known, that there's ne're a Servant, and scarce a Slave who cannot cure it immediately, by applying the Rattle-snake's Heart to it, which restores the Patient in two or three hours. Besides, 'tis very rare here, that these or any of the other poisonous Snakes are to be seen. The Musketa's are troublesome, like Gnats in Marshy Ground in *England*, but are only found in the Fenny places there. They are stronger, and continue longer than the Gnats in *England*. As to the other Insects, there are ways to get rid of them, and the trouble they put the People to is not worth naming. The Winter in all *Virginia* does not continue above three or four Months, *December, January, February, and March*, of which thirty or forty

forty days only are very bad Weather. The Frosts are severe, but attended with a clear Skye, and don't last long. The Rains are frequent and refreshing, and the Heats of the Summer, which are most violent in *June*, *July*, and *August*, are much mitigated by them, and the fresh Breezes that are common in this Country contribute much to render the Heat tolerable to new Comers, and hardly sensible to the Inhabitants.

The Soil in general is a rich fat Mould 3 foot deep, and under it a Loam, of which they make a fine Brick; but according as the Situation is moist or dry, the Soil varies. 'Tis distinguish'd into 3 Sorts, *High*, *Low*, and *Marshy*, all which having Sand mix'd with 'em, makes their Land warmer than *Old England*. The Highlands are most Sandy: However they bear good Crops of Tobacco, only the Soil does not hold in Strength so long as the Low-Lands, which are very rich, being a blackish Mould about a Foot deep, and this Soil will hold its Strength 7 or 8 Crops, without manuring. Their Marsh-Lands bear Sedges and Rushes like ours, and are unimprov'd. Their Land in general is as good as in *England*. That at the Mouth of the Rivers is moist and fat, and produces Rice, Hemp, and Indian Corn. There are Veins of cold, hungry, Sandy Soil, where Huckleberries, Cranberries, and Chinkapins generally grow. Also Oaks, Poplars, Pines, Cedar, Cypress and Sweet-Gumms, Hockly, Sweet-Myrtle, and the Live Oak are found here in great Quantities. The Land higher up the Rivers is a various Soil, and stor'd with Chestnuts, Chinkapins, Oaks, Walnut, Hickories, Dogwood, Elder, Hasel, Locust, Sassafras, Elm, Ash, Beech, and Poplar. The Land at the Heads of the Rivers, and its Productions, are also various. Here are Trees of an incredible Bigness, and Plenty of Pasture-ground, Physick-Earth, Dyers-Wares, Coal, Quarries of Stone, Iron and Lead Mines; Col. *Bird* being at this time searching for one, which was formerly work'd, but destroy'd at the Massacre, as is related in the first Chapter; and Mr. *Wittaker*, Minister of *Henrico*, before the Dissolution of the Company, wrote home, That not far from the Fall, there was found some Silver Ore. Thus we see *Virginia* abounds in every thing that is for the Pleasure or Pro-

fit of the Inhabitants. We shall now describe some of the chief Productions of the Soil, and speak first of the Timber-Trees, of which the most useful are Oak, Cedar, Cypress, Firs; two sorts of Elm, Walnut and Ash. The Oaks are commonly of so prodigious Bigness, that they will measure two Foot square at 60 Foot high. The first Ships that went to *Virginia* were us'd to Load with Cedar and Clapboard, but some richer Commodities have been exported. There is not much of this Timber sent abroad, tho' the Country was then full of Woods; they were so clear from Bushes, Bryars and Underwood, that a Man might have been seen above a Mile and a half, among them; and the Trees stood at that distance, that a Cart or Coach might have been driven between the thickest of the Trees, they having no Boughs to a great Height, yet they were so tufted, that they afford a very comfortable Shade in Summer. Yet tho' the Grapes are juicy and plenty, all that have attempted to fall into the Wine-Trade, to raise Vineyards, and make Wine, have never been able to bring their Designs to perfection. The Reasons are, because the Fir and Pine-tree, with which the Country abounds, are noxious to the Vine; and the Experiments that have been made were in the Low-lands, subject to the Pine, and near the Malignant Influence of the Salt Water. This ruin'd Monsieur *Jamart* a French Merchants Vineyard on *James-River*, near *Archer's Hope-Creek*; and Sir *William Berkley's* had the same Inconveniences, and the same Fate. Several *French Vignerons* were sent over in 1621. the Year before the Massacre, and wrote over very promising Letters of the Country and the Vineyard they were raising; but that Bloody Treason of the Savages, put at end to them and their Undertaking, which the French Refugees at the *Momacan Town* talk of reviving. There are Plenty of Shrubs as well as of Timber, and besides the Berry, we have before-mention'd, there is a Brier growing something like the Sarsaparilla. The Berry is as big as a Pea round, and of a bright crimson Colour. Besides the Sassafras Tree, whose Root was formerly one of the best Commodities that came from hence, here are several sorts of Gums and Drugs, and most of the Shrubs that grow

grow in *England*, or other parts of *Europe*. The whole Country is interspers'd with an incredible variety of Plants and Flowers, there being scarce any kind of either, which does not thrive wonderfully in *Virginia*, and the Fruits are equally plentiful and pleasant.

Of Stone-Fruits, they have here Plums, and Persimmons or *Putchamimes*. Here are three sorts of Cherries, which are as plentiful as they are in *Kent*, and larger than the English. The one grows in Bunches like Grapes; the other is black without, and red within. The third is the Indian Cherry, and grows up higher than the others do. Here is such Plenty of Peaches, that they give 'em to their Hogs; some of 'em call'd Malachotoons, are as big as a Lemon, and resembles it a little. Quinces they have in abundance; as also Pumpions and Muskmelons. The Plums that grow here are the black, and the Murrey Plum. The English sorts of Plums do not ripen so kindly as they do in *England*. Their Wild-Plum is like our *White-Plum*. The Persimmons or *Putchamimes* are of several Sizes, from the Bigness of a *Damesin*, to that of a *Bergamot Pear*; when 'tis eaten ripe, 'tis as delicious as an *Apricock*; but if green, is dangerous, and causes Gripes and Convulsions. Their Taste and Colour resemble those of a Cherry, all those Fruits grow wild, and without cultivating, as most of those do that we have already treated of. Apples and Pears are so plentiful, that 50 Butts of Perry, and as many of Cyder have been made out of two Orchards, few of which have less than 11 or 1200 Trees. The *Bergamot* and *Warden* are the most common. There's great store of Quinces in *Virginia*, of which the People us'd to make *Quince-Drink*. Their *Messamines* are a kind of Grapes; the *Cheinquamine's* a kind of Fruit, resembling a *Chestnut*; the *Rawcamen*, like a *Gooseberry*; the *Macoquez*, a kind of Apple; *Mattaquesumaucks*, a Fruit like an *Indian Fig*; *Matococks* a kind of *Strawberry*; *Oconghtanamins*, like a *Caper*. Figs grow as well there as in *Spain*; but *Oranges* and *Lemons* do not thrive. Besides the Common Acorns, the *Virginians* find another sort with which the Natives us'd to make a sweet Oil to anoint their Joints;

and another sort of Acron better than the Ordinary, the Indians dry'd and kept for their Winter Food, when Corn was scarce: Of Roots, they have the Puccoon and Musquaspenn, the Juice of which is of a pleasant Colour, and the Indians made use of it to paint their Bodies and Warlike Arms. The Tockawaeigh, a very wholsome and favory Root. Shumack, Chapacour, and the famous Snake-root, so much admir'd in *England* for being a Cordial, and an Antidote in all Pestilential Diseases. There is no kind of Garden-root, but what they have in perfection; Sallad-Herbs, and Pot-herbs grow there spontaneously, as do Purslain, Sorrel, &c. Their Flowers are as fine as any in the World; such as the Crown-Imperial, the Cardinal-Flower, the Moccasin-Flower, the Tulip-bearing-Lawrel, the Tulip-Tree, the Locust like the Jessamine, the Perfuming-Crab-Tree, and the Assentamin, a kind of Pink. They have plenty of Musmelons, Water-Melons, Pumpions, Cushaws Macocks and Gourds. Their Cushaws are a kind of Pumpions of a blewish-green colour, streak'd with white. Their Macocks are a less sort of Pumpions. There are several kinds of them: The Savages never eat the Gourds, planting them only for the Shells, which serve them instead of Flaggons and Cups. The Indians had Pease, Beans, and Potatoes, before the English came among them; but the Staff of their Food was their Corn; of which we have giv'n a large Description in the History of *New-England*.

Plantain of all sorts grow wild in the Woods; as also Yellow-Dock, and Burdock, Solomon's-Seal, Egrimony, Centery, Scabions, Groundsel, Dwarf-Elder, Yarrow, and White Maiden-hair; Asarum is gather'd on the Sides of the Hills, and Soldanalla on the Bay-side. Their Dillany grows a Foot and half high: The Water distill'd from it, the best Medicine for the Worms: The Turbil and Mechoacan, or Roots exactly like 'em, grow there.

Tobacco is the standing Commodity of the Country, and is so beneficial to the Planter, and so natural to the Soil, that all other Improvements give place to that. Indeed they could turn their Hands to nothing that would employ so many Slaves and Servants, and require so little Stock to manage it, or take up such a large



large Tract of Land; for the same Ground that is Planted every year with Tobacco, wou'd produce, if Corn was sown there, more than all the Plantations in *America* cou'd consume. This Plant is so common in *England*, that we need not describe it: It grows much like a Dock: And whereas in our Gardens it must be manag'd with as much care as the choicest Fruit or Flower, in *Virginia* they leave it expos'd to all the Injuries of the Weather, which is very favourable to it, and 'tis seldom that the Crop suffers by it. The Tobacco of this Plantation was not at first so good as 'tis now. That of *Brazil* had once the greatest Reputation all over *Europe*, but now *Virginia* and *Maryland* has the best Price in all Markets. 'Tis not known how the Indians cur'd theirs: They now have it all from the English. 'Tis said they us'd to let it run to Seed, only succouring the Leaves, to keep the Sprouts from growing upon and starving them. When it was ripe, they pull'd them off, cur'd them in the Sun, and laid them up for use. The *Virginia* Planters sow the Tobacco-Seeds in Beds, as the Gardeners in *England* do Colwort-Seeds; they leave them there a Month, taking care all that time to have them well weeded. When the Plants are about the breadth of ones hand, they are remov'd in the first rainy Weather, and transplanted into what they call *Tobacco-Hills*. In a Month's time the Plants will be a Foot high, and they top them, and then prune off all the bottom Leaves, leaving only 7 or 8 on the Stalk, that they may be the better fed by the Top, and these Leaves in 6 Weeks time will be in their full growth. The Planters prune off the Suckers, and clear 'em of the *Horn-Worm* twice a Week, which is call'd *Worming* and *Suckering*; and this Work lasts three Weeks or a Month; by which time the Leaf from green begins to turn to brownish, and to spot, and to thicken, which is a Sign of its ripening. As fast as the Plants ripen, you must cut 'em down, leave 'em in the Field for half a Day, then heap them up, let 'em lye and sweat a night, and the next day carry them to the Tobacco-House, where every Plant is hang'd one by another, at a convenient distance, for about a Month or 5 Weeks; at the end of which time they strike or take 'em down in moist Weather, when the Leaf gives, or else 'twill crum-

ble to dust; after which they are laid upon Sticks and cover'd up close in the *Tobacco-House* for a Week or a Fortnight to sweat, and then opening the Bulk in a wet day, the Servants strip them and sort them, the top-Leaves being the best, and the bottom the worst Tobacco. The last Work is to pack it in Hogheads, or bundle it up, which is also done in a wet Season; for in the curing Tobacco, wet Seasons are as necessary as dry, to make the Leaf plyant, which wou'd otherwise be brittle and break. They take a great deal of Pains with it now, and with all their Trouble can scarce make it turn to account. The English have carry'd over a thousand several sorts of the Productions of Nature, and have found all to succeed there: They have had such extraordinary Success with Apples and Pears, that there's never a Planter but has an Orchard, and makes large Quantities of Cyder and Perry, which is some of their common Drinks, and there is nothing in *England* belonging either to a Garden or Orchard, but what they have or may have there in as great or greater Perfection.

## C H A P. VII.

### *Of the Beasts, Birds, and Fish.*

**T**HE Beasts that are peculiar to this Country, are the Aronghena, somewhat like a Badger. The Assapanic, or flying Squirrel. The Mussacus, a kind of Water-Rat. The Utchunquois, a Wild-Cat. The Opassum, a certain Animal, whose Female has a Bag under her Belly, wherein she carries her young ones. The Woods are stock'd with Deer, the same in kind with ours in *England*, and larger and fatter for the most part. There are Racoons, Beavours, Otters, Foxes, Wild-Cats, Martins and Minks in the Freshes. The Indians are dextrous in catching them, and keep the Secret to themselves, that they may preserve the Furr Trade, which otherwise the English wou'd soon drive them out of. Lyons, Leopards,

pards, Elks, Bears and Wolves, especially the latter, are met with in *Virginia*, tho not so frequently as in some other Parts of *North America*, and the Wolves are not much bigger than English Foxes. This Country was not over-stock'd with any kind of Beasts, either wild or tame, when the English discover'd it, and the Cattle that are now to be found there, are all of English breeding: Horses are as plenty and as good as in *England*.

Having mention'd the Flying-Squirrel, we think the Reader will not be displeas'd with a Description of it: This Creature has a fleshy Substance, which it extends in its skipping from one Tree to another, like Wings; and by the help of these, he will fly or rather Skip 30 or 40 yards at a time, from Tree to Tree. The Opassum has a Head like a Hog, and a Tail like a Rat, 'tis about the bigness of a Cat; and the False Belly, in which the Female carries her Young, is thus describ'd by one that saw it. 'Tis like a loose Skin quite over the Belly, which never sticks to the Flesh, but may be look'd into at all times, after they have been concern'd in Procreation. In the hinder part of it is an Overture big enough for a small hand to pass, and thither the young ones, after they are full hair'd, and strong enough to run about, fly when any Danger appears; or when they go to rest or suck, and continue to do so till they have learn'd to live without their Dam. The strangest part of this Description, is, that the young ones are bred in this false Belly, without ever having been in the true one. They are form'd at the Teat, and grow there for several Weeks together, till they are in perfect Shape, and have Strength, Sight, and Hair: They then drop off, and rest in this False Belly, going in and out at pleasure: The Person from whom we took the Description, says, he has seen them thus fasten'd to the Teat, from the bigness of a Fly till they became as large as a Mouse. Neither is it any hurt to the old one to open the Bag, and look in upon her Young. Some Panthers, Bufaloes and wild Hogs, which yield equal Pleasure and Profit to the Hunter, are caught up in the Country near the Heads of the Rivers. The reason of there being few Sheep, is because the Country is not yet clear'd of Wolves; all other

other Beasts that are reckon'd wild, do no damage to the *Virginians*, flying from the Face of a Man whenever they see one; and the Planters, by Pasture-Fences, secure their Cattle and Hogs from them. There were no Rats nor Mice there, when the English first landed; but they soon multiply'd so from the English Shipping, that once there was like to have been a sort of *Rat-Plague* among the Planters. The Virginian Water-Rat, or *Mussascus*, smells like Musk. Pole-cats and Wefels are sometimes to be seen there, but the Plenty of Hares and Rabbits make amends for it.

There is no Country more remarkable for the variety of Birds in it than *Virginia*, where the Woods and Groves in the Spring, Summer, Autumn, and almost all the Year, are render'd as delightful by the Musick of their feather'd Quires, as by the Coolness of their Shades, or the Fragrancy of their Flowers. Among these the Rock-Birds are the most diverting: They love Society so well, that whenever they see Mankind, they will perch upon a Twig near the Person, and sing the sweetest Airs in the World. The next is the Humming-Bird, who revels among the Flowers, and licks off the Dew and Honey from their Leaves. 'Tis not half so large as an English Wren, and its Colour is a shining Mixture of Scarlet, Green and Gold. There are Black-birds with red Shoulders that come in prodigious Flights out of the Woods about the Fall of the Leaf; a sort of Nightingal, whose Feathers are very gay, of a Crimson and blew Colour; but it seldom or never sings. The Mock-Bird comes in about *March* and stays till *June*, and in bigness and colour is like a Thrush. The Herons there are very large, and the Partridges very small. There's great variety of Wild Fowl, as Swans, Geese, Brants, Sheldrakes, Ducks, Mallard, Teal, Blewings, Cranes, Curlews, Snipes, Woodcocks, Oxe-Eyes, Plover, Larks, Pheasants, Pigeons; and which is best of all 'em, wild Turkeys, much larger than our tame; they are in Season all the Year. The *Virginians* have several ingenious Devices to take them; among others a Trap wherein 16 or 17 have been caught at a time.

As for Fish there's such prodigious plenty of em, that 'tis hardly credible to an European. Some of the Stories that have been told of it, are certainly Romantick, and are rejected as fictitious, such as Shoals of Fish, swimming with their Heads above Water, and to be taken by Hand, loading a Canoo with Fish in the open Sea by one Indian, in half an hour; but 'tis certain that no Rivers in the World are better stor'd than theirs, and that the Virginian Sea-Coast abounds in Cod and Sturgeon, of which some are eight foot long. Indeed there's scarce any Fish, but what may be caught either in the Sea or the Rivers. And yet there is only one sort peculiar to this Country, which is the Stingrass. 'Tis good to eat, but has a long Tail with a very dangerous sting in it. There are other strange Fishes; but then they are also to be found in most parts of *North-America*; such as the Coney-Fish, Rock-Fish, Cat-Fish, and a Fish in the form of a Dragon, to which there's no Name as yet assign'd in our Language. The Toad-Fish, when 'tis taken out of the Water, swells till 'tis like to burst. Muscles and Oysters are very plentiful in *Virginia*, and so large, that some of 'em are as big as a Horse's Hoof. Pearl has been often found in the Shells. The Indians had large, but the English found only Seed-Pearl, of which good Quantities have been sent to *England*. In the Spring-time the Brooks and Fords are so full of Herrings, which come up to Spawn there, that 'tis almost impossible to ride through without treading on them. The Rivers are also at that time stock'd with Shads, Rock-Sturgeon, and Lampreys, which fasten themselves to the Shad. In the Salt Water at certain times of the Year, there are Shoals of other Fish; such as the *Old Wife*, something like an Herring, and the Sheeps-head, which *Virginians* esteem in the number of their Best. Black and red Drumms, Trouts, Taylors, Green-fish, Sun-fish, Bass, Chub, Place, Flounders, Whitings, Flat-backs, Maids, Wives, small Turtle, Crabs, Cockles, Shrimps, Needle-fish, Breme, Carp, Pike, Jack, Mulletts, Eels, and Perch. These are to be found in the Rivers and Brooks all the Summer long, and are eaten by the People. Those that follow are not eaten: The Whale, Porpus, Shark, Dog-fish,  
Garr,

Garr, Thornback, Saw-fish, Frog-fish, Land-Crabs, Fiddlers and Periwinkles. Many of these Fish will leap into Canoes and Boats, as the English or Indians cross a River; and there's such Quantities of them, that they often tire the Sportsmen with taking 'em: Whereas in *England*, they are generally tir'd for want of it. The manner of Fishing-Hawks preying upon Fish, is very diverting. The Sport is to be seen every Summer in the Mornings, and sometimes all day long. These Hawks are wonderful eager after their Game, when the Fish first come in the Spring. In the dead of the Winter 'tis suppos'd they fish further off at Sea, or remain among the uninhabited Islands upon the Sea-Coast. They have often been seen to catch the Fish out of the Water, and as they were flying away with their Quarry, the Bald Eagles have taken it from them again. The Fishing-Hawk will hover over the Water, and rest upon the Wing some Minutes together, and then from a vast height dart down directly into the Water, plunge into it for the space of half a Minute, and at last bring up a Fish with him, so big, that he can hardly carry it. When he is on the Wing he shakes himself so strongly, that the Water comes off of him like a Mist, and then he flies to the Woods with his Prey, unless the Bald-Eagle intercepts him, and takes it away from him. This Bird, as soon as he perceives the Fishing-Hawk, with his Game in his Mouth, pursues him, and strives to get above him in the Air, which if he can do, the Hawk lets his Fish drop, and the Eagle leaves him to take up his Prey, which he shoots after with such surprizing Swiftnes, that he catches it in the Air, before it falls to the Ground. These Fishing-Hawks, when the Seasons are extraordinarily plentiful, will catch a Fish, and loiter about with it in the Air, on purpose to have a Chace with the Eagle for it; and if the Eagle does not come, he'll make a daring Noise, as if it were to defy him. This Sport has frequently been seen by the English, and by the Description of it must certainly be extremely pleasant to the Spectators.

## C H A P. VIII.

*Of the Coins in Virginia : Of the Trade to and from England, and other Parts of Europe and America : The Prodigious Revenue that the Customs of Tobacco brings in : The Advantage that Trade has been to England, and the Disadvantages it lies under.*

**T**HO the common way of Traffick there is by Barter or Exchange of one Commodity for another, or of any for Tobacco; yet there is some Silver Coins, English and Spanish, and were much more, till the lowering of the Value tempted People to export the Coin to the other Plantations, where it went for more than it did in *Virginia*. The Chief of their Coins are either Gold of the Stamp of *Arabia*, or Silver and Gold of the Stamp of Spanish *America*, or English Money. There's very little of either kind to be seen in this Country for the Reasons above-mention'd: The Government, round about it, often raising the Value of the Coin, is the Cause that *Virginia* is drain'd of the little it has. And 'tis impossible to prevent this Inconvenience, unless all the Colonies on the Continent were oblig'd to have one and the same Standard for their Coin, which there have lately been some attempts made to effect, tho without the Success that was expected and desir'd. The Scarcity of Money is such in this Plantation, that Gentlemen can hardly get enough for Travelling Charges, or to pay Labourers and Tradesmens Wages. It occasions also the commencing many vexatious Suits for Debt, which by this means are contracted. The Value of the several Coins that are there, is as follows:

	l.	s.	d.
The Spanish Double Doublon, . . . . .	03	10	00
The Doublon, consequently, . . . . .	01	15	00
The Pistole, . . . . .	00	17	06
Arabian Chequins, . . . . .	00	10	00
Pieces of Eight (except of Peru) } weighing 16 penny Weight, }	00	05	00
French Crowns, . . . . .	00	05	00
Peru Pieces of Eight, and Dutch } Dollars, . . . . . }	00	04	00

And all English Coin as it goes in *England*.

The Trade of this Colony, as well as that of *Maryland*, consists almost entirely of Tobacco; for tho' the Country would produce several extraordinary Commodities fit for Trade; yet the Planters are so wholly bent on planting Tobacco, that they seem to have laid aside all thoughts of other Improvements. This Trade is brought to such Perfection, that the *Virginia* Tobacco, especially the sweet-scented, which grows on *York-River*, is reckon'd the best in the World, and is what is generally vended in *England* for a Home Consumption. The other sorts, call'd *Oranoac*, and that of *Maryland*, are hotter in the Mouth; but they turn to as good an Account, being in demand in *Holland*, *Denmark*, *Sweden*, and *Germany*. Of this Commodity 30000 Hothead have been exported yearly, which besides the other Advantages that the English reap by it, have clear'd 5 *l.* a Hothead in a Foreign Market, and encreas'd the General Stock of the Nation, 150000 *l.* a year. The whole Trade of Tobacco is indeed one of the most Profitable of all the English Commerce, it employs above 200 Sail of stout Ships every year; and brings in between 3 and 400000 *l.* to her Majesty's Treasury one year with another. Tho' this Calculation may seem too extravagant to such as know nothing of this Trade, and to some who make guessees of the Trade in general only, from their own in particular, yet it will appear to be Modest to all that have experience in the Matter. There are 200 Sail of Ships freighted with this Commodity *Communibus Annis*, from the whole Bay: In which we include the



the Province of *Maryland*; and, one with another, we can't reckon they carry less than 300 Hogsheads of Tobacco; in all 70000 Hogsheads; of which half we suppose to be sold and spent in *England*; and the Duty of those 35000 Hogsheads, at but 400 weight of Tobacco each, will come to 8 *l.* a Hogshead, and 280000 *l.* for the whole. The other half which is exported will not produce above a 5<sup>th</sup> part so much in the Exchequer, because all the Imposts are drawn back, and part of the Subsidy; yet allowing but 50000 *l.* for the Duty of the 35000 Hogsheads exported, the whole Amount of the Customs for the 70000 Hogsheads of Tobacco, will come to 330000 *l.* a year; and so much it certainly brings into the Exchequer in a time of Peace. For in this War-time our Trade is more uncertain; and a just Calculation of this Branch of it, in part, or in the whole, cannot now be made, tho' considering that the *Virginia* and *Maryland* Merchants have escap'd much better than those of *Barbadoes*, *Jamaica*, and the *Charibbee* Islands, our Estimate, with some abatement, according to the number of Ships lost, may stand good. Some who pretend to be very well acquainted with the *Virginia* Trade, have assur'd us, that 100000 Hogsheads have been Ship'd off from *Virginia* and *Maryland* in a Year, and 40000 of 'em spent in *England*: If so, we are rather too short in our Account than too long, both with reference to the Calculation of the Customs, and the Addition the Trade makes to the National Stock. But we have kept as close to Truth as we cou'd by our own Experience, and the best Information; and to render what we have said the more credible to the Reader, 'tis necessary he shou'd know how vastly this Trade is improv'd in all Parts of *England*, as well as in the Port of *London*. The Town of *Liverpool* has had 50 Sail of Ships unlade at her Key from thence in a Year, for several Years past, reckoning one year with another; many of the out-Ports have 8 or 10 Sail employ'd yearly in the *Virginia*-Trade, and the City of *Bristol* is said to pay above 60000 *l.* a year Duty for Tobacco her self, which will not appear improbable, if what we are very credibly inform'd by *Bristol*-Men is true, that one Ship belong-

ing

ing to that Port, call'd the *Bristol-Merchant*, has paid 8 or 10000 *l.* Custom, every year for these Twenty years last past. And very often 30 or 40 Sail of Ships have come into the *Severn* at a time, bound for *Bristol*; besides Runners and Stragglers. If the Out-ports together send 100 Sail to *Virginia* in a year, as we think we have sufficiently prov'd; *London* will more than make up the other 100. And what we have said of the Trade and the Customs, will seem very rational and certain.

Besides the vast Advantage that accrues to the National Stock, by the Exportation of *Tobacco* from *England* to all other Parts of *Europe*; we must consider, how beneficial this Trade is, by the prodigious Number of Hands it employs, and Families it maintains, in *England* and *Virginia*: No less than Seventy thousand *English* Souls in *Virginia*; and as many in *England*. There are vast Quantities of Manufactures exported from hence daily to this Colony; who have all their Necessaries for Cloathing, Labour, and Luxury; from *England*: And those Commodities that are sent hence lying most among Handicraft-Trades, are such as employ the most Hands, feed the most Mouths, and consequently are the most beneficial to the Publick; such as *Weavers*, *Shoomakers*, *Hatters*, *Ironmongers*, *Turners*, *Joiners*, *Taylors*, *Cutlers*, *Smiths*, *Bakers*, *Brewers*, *Ropemakers*, *Hosiers*, and indeed all the *Mechanicks* in *England*; their Manufactures being good Merchandise in *Virginia*, when the Ignorance or Avarice of some Merchants do not glut the Market. The Commodities sent thither, besides Linnen, Silks, *India* Goods, Wine, and other foreign Manufactures, are Cloth coarse and fine, *Serges*, *Stuffs*, *Bays*, *Hats*, and all sorts of *Haberdashers* Ware, *Houghs*, *Bills*, *Axes*, *Nails*, *Adzes*, and other *Iron-Ware*; *Cloaths* ready-made, *Knives*, *Bisket*, *Flower*, *Stockings*, *Shoos*, *Caps* for *Servants*; and in short, every thing that is made in *England*.

They formerly drove a considerable Trade with *Pipe-Staves* and *Hoops*, from *Virginia* to *Madera*, *Terceras*, *Fial*, and the other *Islands* call'd the *Azores*; but lately *New-England* and *New-York* have almost driv'n the *Virginians* out of that profitable Trade

Trade. They still keep part of the Trade to and from the Sugar-Islands, on account of the *York-River Tobacco*, which is most smoak'd among the better sort of People; tho' the *Oranoc* will serve the Negroes, and the worst of the White Servants, as well or better than the sweet-scented. The *Virginia-Merchants* and Planters export Tobacco, Cattle, and Provisions to *Barbadoes* and the *Leward Islands*; and in Exchange bring back Rum, Melasses, and Sugar. For notwithstanding they make good Brandy of their own, and might have Sugar from their Sugar-Tree, as has been prov'd by many Experiments; yet they are so lazy, that they will be at no pains to provide themselves with any thing which they can fetch elsewhere for Tobacco. There are several Trades which they might fall into, beside that of Tobacco, and which would be a Service to that Commodity, because the less of it was made, the greater Price it would bear. The Country is certainly capable of large Improvements, by the *Timber-Trade*, and its Appurtenances, as Pitch, Tar, and Rosin. They might also manufacture Flax, Hemp, Cotton, and even Silk; the three first Commodities thriving there as well as in any Country in the World, and the *Mulberry-Tree* feeding Silk-Worms formerly in abundance. *Edward Diggs Esq;* was at great Charge and Pains to promote the *Silk-Manufacture*, since it was given over by others; but wanting Encouragement, he also gave it over: Several of the late Governours have, for Reasons which they did not think fit to reveal, discourag'd all such as went about Manufactures; and the Planters have been oblig'd to stick to their old Drudgery, the Planting of Tobacco. *Silk-Grass* grows there spontaneously in many places, and may be cut several times in a year. The Fibres of this Plant are as fine as Flax, and much stronger than Hemp: A Piece of Grogram was made of it in *Queen Elizabeth's* Reign, and presented to her; and yet the *English* neglect it, and make no manner of Use of it; not so much as the *Indians* did, who made their Baskets, Fishing-Nets and Lines with it. The *Virginians* might also drive as good a Trade with Cattle and Provisions, Horses, Cows, Oxen, Beef, Pork,

Pork, &c. as the People of *New-England* and *Carolina* do to the Sugar-Islands: But all their Thought run upon Tobacco, and they make nothing of those Advantages, which would enrich an industrious People.

Indeed the Naval Stores that might be brought thence to *England*, for the Queen's and Merchant Service, are of such Consequence, that 'twould be well, if some Care was taken to oblige them to Manufacture 'em, and due Encouragement was given to do it. It seems a little unaccountable, why the *English*, whose Plantations are so well furnish'd with those Commodities, should be at the Charge of buying them in the *Baltick* with Ready Money, such as Pitch, Tar, Rosin, Turpentine, Plank, Timber, Masts, Yards, and Cordage. *New-England* and *Virginia* would plentifully supply all our Naval Wants, and we should not then be oblig'd to the People of the North, who do not always deal friendly or fairly by us. The *Virginians* are so far from thinking of improving these Manufactures, that they see others send thither to build Ships, they seldom or never do it themselves. They not only neglect making a Trade of Provisions, but even to provide a necessary Store against an accidental Scarcity, contenting themselves with a Supply of Food from Hand to Mouth; insomuch that if a scarce year should come, there would not be enough in the Country to subsist them three Months. The only Excuse that the *Virginians* can plead for their Laziness is, that their Industry was never encourag'd. Their Want of Towns hinders them from receiving many Advantages by the Fruitfulness of their Soil for the People who inhabited them would take those Commodities off their Hands, which every Planter in the Country is furnish'd with at home. But this Want of Cohabitation, they are incapable of making a beneficial Use of their Flax, Hemp, Cotton, Silk, Silk-Grass, and Wool; which might otherwise supply their Necessities from their Towns, and their Tobacco would enrich them, as we have shew'd elsewhere. The greatest of their Discouragements is the high Duties on their Commodities, the Custom being often ten times as much as

the Prime Cost. And if it wants in Goodness, there is no Abatement for it, no Consideration for Losses, for high Freights and Premio's of Insurance, for a small Crop, the Dearness of Hands, and other Accidents which may prove the Ruin of this Plantation: For when his Goods come to Market, after Custom and the Factor's Bill for Commission is paid, the Neet Proceed comes to little. The poor Planter is not only disappointed in the Value of his Goods, but his Bills that he drew come back protested, and he is forc'd to pay exorbitant Interest, to prevent being su'd, or forc'd to sign Judgments to the Merchant there; who, having got the least Hold of his Estate, feeds him insensibly with Money, till the whole follows at a mean Rate. If this Fate does not attend his Bills, he is forc'd to buy the Necessaries at home, at dear Rates, which he wrote for to *England*; and if he goes upon Trust, 'tis at such Prizes, that a Usurer blushes to extort, but Custom makes it look like lawful. If he sells his Tobacco in the Country, the Factors take Care to beat down the Price so low, that 'twill hardly pay for cultivating. How can all this be remedy'd, you say, in War Time? By securing their Trade, which would make Insurances unnecessary: And how can it be secur'd? That Question has been so often answer'd to such as have the Care of these things, 'tis needless for us to decide it here. This we may venture to say, that the sending a Ship or two to this or other Colonies, under Commanders who think themselves Admirals, and defy all Power but their own, will never answer the End. A Representation of which was made to those that have the Management of these Affairs, in which 'twas said, *They make it their Business to oppose Authority, and when there is any Faction in any Place, they are sure to join with them against the Governour; They will lie in a Harbour for a Week together, without once going out to cruise; by their ill Usage of their Men, they force them to run away from the Ship, and then they ruin the Merchants and Trade of the Place, by pressing away the Seamen from the Vessels.* Some Instances of the ill Practises of these Captains are mention'd. *One of them, when he was at Virginia, neither spar'd the Gentlemen of the Country, the Queen's Officers, nor the Governour*

himself, because they would not suffer him to marry a Gentleman's Daughter, when at the same time he had a Wife and Children at London. Upon which he attempted the Lives of the Gentlewoman's Father, several of her Relations, especially of a very worthy Gentleman, one Col. Cary, who courted the young Lady. The Governour was forc'd to secure the Peace: The Province being all in an uproar by this Man's extravagant Actions. The Council of Maryland complain'd of another, representing, He was fitter for Bedlam than to command a Ship. And another at New-York, When the Lord Cornbury order'd him to take several Vessels loaden with Provisions on her Majesty's Account, to Pennsylvania and Carolina, and convoy them to Jamaica, excus'd himself, saying, His Ship was laid up, and unrigg'd. They might have been ready before Christmas, but he would not go till the 25th of March, promising then to set Sail. However, he lay in the Harbour till the latter end of May; all which time her Majesty paid Demurrage, the Provisions lying on board, which was a great Damage. He refus'd to obey the Orders he receiv'd to touch at Carolina, and take those Vessels under his Convoy.

But should we go about to write a History of all the Complaints that have been made against such Officers as these, for their Miscarriages in America, one might add another Volume to these of the Plantations.

We have also seen a State of Virginia, drawn by an Inhabitant of North-America, and presented to the Lords of Trade in England. The People are very numerous, dispers'd thro' the whole Province. Their almost sole Business is planting and improving Tobacco, even to that degree, that most of them scarce allow themselves time to produce their necessary Provisions, and consequently take little Leisure to busy themselves about Matters of State. They have always been respectful and obedient to Government, &c. Again, On every River of this Province there are Men in Number from ten to thirty, who by Trade and Industry have got very compleat Estates. These Gentlemen take Care to supply the poorer sort with Goods and Necessaries, and are sure to keep them always in their Debt, and consequently dependant on them. Out of this Number are chosen

A State of  
Virginia.

osen her Majesty's Council, the Assembly, the Justices and Officers of the Government. Many of these Gentlemen have apply'd themselves of late Years to procure from their Governours good Laws, for the better Government and Improvement of the Country, &c. Again, they consider this Province is of far greater Advantage to her Majesty, than all the rest of the Provinces besides on the Main; and therefore falsely conclude, that they ought to have greater Privileges than the rest of her Majesty's Subjects. Further, The Assembly think themselves entitled to all the Rights and Privileges of the English Parliament, and begin to search into the Records of that Honourable House, for Precedents to govern themselves by. The Council imagine, they must stand upon equal Terms with the Right Honourable House of Lords. We think a great Part of what follows in this Representation might have been spar'd, we leave it as we found it.

The Society for propagating the Gospel, in the *Ac- Church*  
count they have publish'd of their Success in *Ame- Affairs.*  
*ca*, tell us, *Virginia* is divided into fifty Parishes, and about thirty Chapels. Here was also a noble College, erected for the Education of the *American* youth, in the Studies of *Divinity* and *Philosophy*. Maintenance for the Students has been settled, but by Disuse is impair'd in many Places. Several Parishes are not supply'd with Ministers, particularly *Princess Ann's* County. There was no Mathematical Professor in *William* and *Mary* College. The Society have paid to Mr. Tyliard 20 l. and to Mr. Wallace of *Elizabeth* City Parish 15 l. in Books.

Of the College above-mention'd, we have spoken already, but since that have met with a better Account of it. A stately Fabrick was rais'd, a Royal *Sec an*  
charter given, with ample Privileges and Immunities, *Account of*  
publick Fund was allotted for the Endowment of it, the Society  
and a President appointed with an honourable Sallery, for propa-  
c. and in Honour of the Founder it was call'd *William* gaining the  
and *Mary* College. But it could not be furnish'd with *Gospel,*  
professors and Students, nor advanc'd above a Gram- &c. p. 26.  
mer-School, before the whole College was unfortunately  
destroy'd by Fire. And the great Service Col. Nichol-  
son did this Society, and the Cause of Religion, in  
his Province, while he was Governour, has been

## The History of Virginia.

often acknowleg'd by them, in Publick and Private.

We have nothing further to observe relating to *Virginia*; but that on the Death of Mr. *Notte*, my Lord *Orkney's* Deputy in the Government of this Colony, Col. *Hunter* was appointed his Successor in that honourable Post, *A. D.* 1707. On which he embark'd for his Province, and in his Passage was taken by the French, and carry'd into *France*: From whence he return'd into *England*, and now waits for a Convoy to *Virginia*.

We have only to add a List of the Chief Officers, Civil and Military, as is done in the other Parts of this Treatise.

Col. *Hunter*, Governour.  
*Edmund Jennings*, Esq; President.

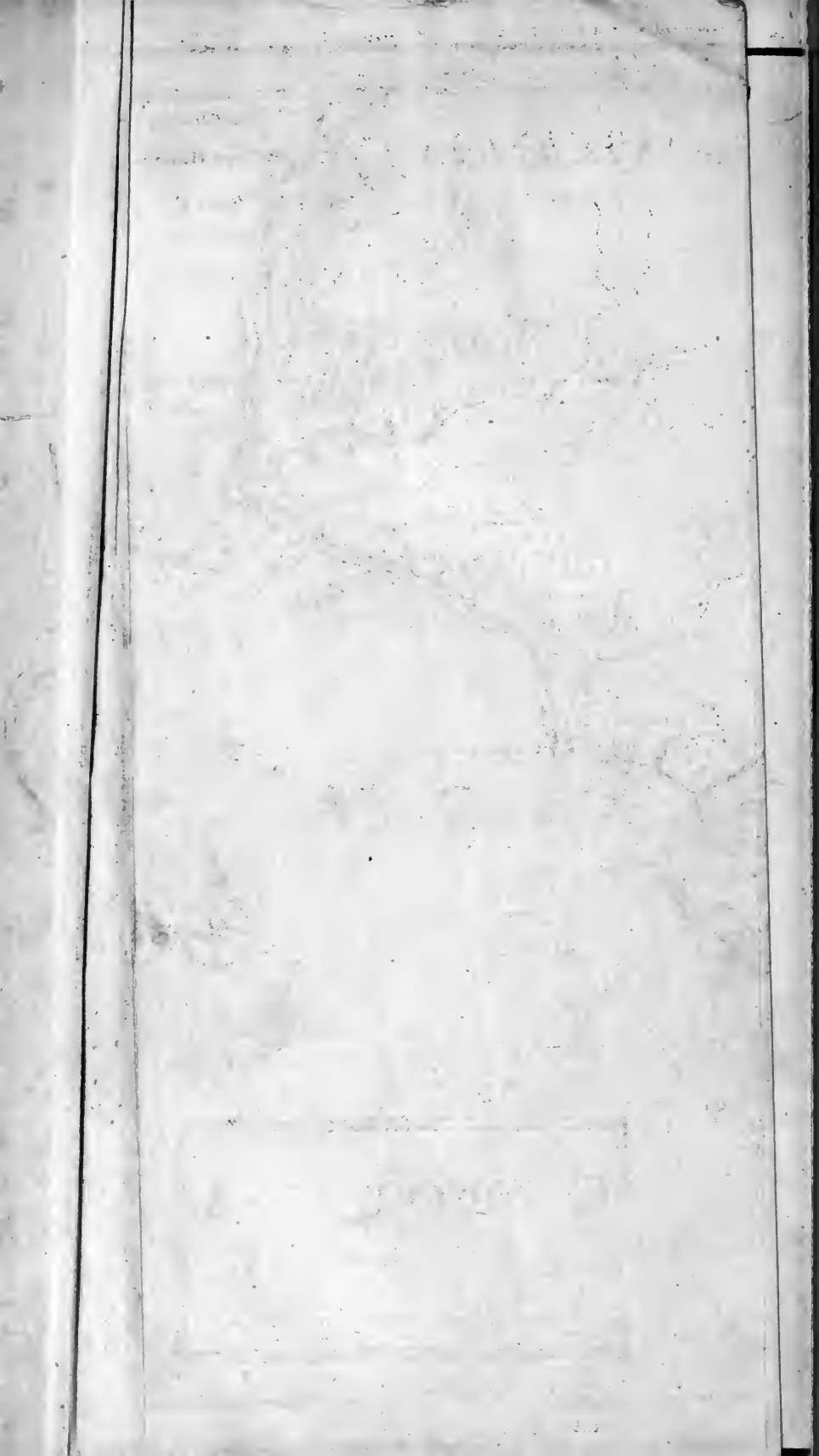
<i>Dudley Diggs</i> , Esq;	}		
<i>Benjamin Harrison</i> , Sen' Esq;			
<i>Robert Carter</i> , Esq;			
<i>John Custis</i> , Esq;			
The Reverend Mr. <i>James Blaire</i> ;			
<i>Philip Ludwell</i> , Esq;			} Counsellors.
<i>Henry Duke</i> , Esq;			
<i>Robert Quarry</i> , Esq;			
<i>John Smith</i> , Esq;			
<i>John Lewis</i> , Esq;			
<i>William Churchill</i> , Esq;	}		

Commissary to the Bishop of *London*, the Reverend Mr. *James Blaire*.

Auditor of the Revenue, *Dudley Diggs*, Esq;  
Secretary, *Edmund Jennings*, Esq;  
Receiver General, *William Bird*, Esq;  
Collector of the Customs, Col. *Gawen Corbin*.  
Attorney General, *Stephen Tompson*.







---



---

T H E  
**H I S T O R Y**  
 O F  
**C A R O L I N A.**

---

C H A P. I.

*Containing an Account of the Discovery and Settlement of this Province, and of all the Wars, Factions, Disturbances, and other Events there, from that time to the present.*

**W**E are not ignorant of the Pretences of *Discovery* the Concern'd in this Province, who affirm, 'twas discover'd by *Sebastian Cabot*. Mr. *Archdale*, one of the Proprietors, in his printed Description of *Carolina*, says, *Henry the VIIIth. about the Year 1500. furnish'd Sir Sebastian Cabot with Shipping, (He was born at Bristol, tho his Father was a Venetian,) to make a Discovery; and he fell upon the Coast of Florida, and having sail'd along the Continent a considerable way North-East, return'd.* But this does not appear in any authentick Historian; nor that *Sir Sebastian Cabot* ever got so far to the South.

*Carolina* is the Northern part of the vast Region of *America*, which was discover'd by *John Ponce de Leon*, in the Year 1512. He made Land about 30 Degrees from the *Aequator*, near the River of *San Mattao*, the most Southerly part of this Province. He sail'd thither from the Island of *Porto Rico*, and gave the Country the Name of *Florida*, for that the Face of it has the Resemblance of a continual Spring.

Castell of  
America.

The Spaniards, who passionately desir'd to secure it to themselves, eight Years afterwards sent *Vasquez de Ayllon* to make a further Discovery of it, as belonging to *Charles V.* in whose Name *de Leon* had taken Possession of it. He came upon the North Coast, and call'd the North North-West River by the Name of *Jordan*. He did nothing memorable, except this infamous Action, of inviting many of the Natives aboard his Ships, where when he had got them, he hoisted Sail, and carry'd them into miserable Bondage.

In the Year 1526. *Charles V.* Emperor of *Germany* and King of *Spain*, sent *Pamphilio Narvesi* to *Florida*, who stay'd so long in the South-West part of this Country, which is the most barren, that, says my Author, *they were fain to eat one another*, his Crew having spent their Provisions.

Ten Years afterwards *Ferdinando a Soto* came hither in the search of Gold and Silver Mines, having a little Army of 900 Foot, and 500 Horse. Himself, and three Parts of his Soldiers, dy'd, either thro' Want, or by Sicknes, or the Indians: and the rest were led back by *Lewis Moscos* to *New Spain*, tho not without great Difficulty, for the Natives setting upon them several times in their March, kill'd all that fell into their Hands.

This unfortunate and expensive Expedition so discourag'd the Spaniards, that for several Years they made no more Attempts in these Parts, and indeed they search'd no further than that Part of the Continent which lies opposite to the Gulph of *New Spain*, and not within and beyond the Streights of *Bahama*, which includes that part of the Country we are now treating of, and which is the most fertile and rich, abounding in several merchantable Commodities.

The

The French perceiving the *Spaniards* neglected this long Tract of Land, Admiral *Coligny*, in the Reign of *Charles IX.* procur'd two of the King's Ships to be sent thither, the Command of which he gave to *Jean Ribaut*, who after a Voyage of two Months, arriv'd at the River of *Dolphins*, between that of *San Matteo*, and that of *May*, lying about the 30th Degree.

The next River to that of *May*, he call'd the *Scine*. The next to that, the *Somme*; then the *Loire*; then the *Charente*, and the *Garonne*. At the Mouth of *Albemarle* River, then call'd the *Great River*; the Port being safe and commodious, he built a Fort, which he called *Charles Fort*, and gave it the Name of *Port Royal*, in 32 Degrees of Latitude, bordering on *Virginia*, now *North Carolina*, where the first Settlement was made by any European Nation.

The Civil Wars raging in *France*, *Ribaut's* Soldiers mutiny'd, for want of Supplies. The Natives, 'tis true, were very kind to them, out of Hatred to the *Spaniards*; but they could not furnish them with many Necessaries which they wanted; and the Admiral was so engag'd in Politicks at home, that he had not Leisure to provide for the Wants of his Colony. So *Ribaut* having made some Discoveries in the North-East part of *Florida*, return'd to *France*, and in his Return, if Credit may be given to an old Author, his Company were reduc'd to such Extremity, that they kill'd and eat one of their own Men; and probably would have done so by others, had they not accidentally met with an *English* Ship, the Master of which furnish'd them with some Provisions. A Peace being concluded 2 Years after in *France*, between the Papists and Protestants, *Coligny*, who was then in Favour at Court, procur'd other Ships to be sent to this Country, which was now call'd *Carolina*, from Fort *Charles*, as that was from the French King. The Command of those Ships, and the Men aboard, was given to *Lewis Laudoner*, who was order'd to carry on the Settlement. He arriv'd here the 20th of *June*, 1554. with 3 Ships, and was kindly receiv'd by the *Indians*, but could find no Gold and Silver Mines, tho he spent much Labour and Time in search after them. His Provisions

sions being almost all gone, and the Natives either unable, or unwilling to furnish him with more, *Laudoner* resolv'd to return also to *France*; and as he was preparing to depart, *Jean Ribaut* arriv'd with 3 Ships, which had so good an Effect on the *Indians*, that they seem'd to be as welcome to them as to the *French*. The Kings of *Homoloa*, *Seravatri*, *Almacam*, *Malica*, and *Castri*, waited upon *Ribaut*, to congratulate his Arrival, and promis'd to conduct him to the *Apalataean* Mountains, which part *Carolina* from *Virginia*.

The *French* conceiv'd great Hopes of this Settlement, but all vanish'd on the Arrival of the *Spaniards*, who with a Squadron of Ships and Land Forces, drove the *French* out of their Forts, kill'd *Ribaut*, and 600 Men, after having given them Conditions of Life, and oblig'd *Laudoner*, with a few of his Countrymen who remain'd alive, to return to *France*.

The *French* King took no notice of this Act of Violence committed on his Subjects, because they were Protestants; and indeed 'tis thought *Coligny* intended by this Settlement, to secure a Retreat for himself, and his Brethren of the Reform'd Religion, in case they were conquer'd in *France*. *Peter Melanda* commanded the *Spaniards*, who dislodg'd the *French*, and so provok'd the *Indians* by his Cruelty and Injustice, that they were very ready to revenge themselves when Opportunity offer'd, as it did not long after; for Capt. *De Gorgues*, a *French* Gentleman, at his own cost, fitted out three stout Ships, and with 280 Men sail'd to *Carolina*, where he took the Fort, and put all the *Spaniards* within it to the Sword. They had built two other Forts, which he easily reduc'd, and serv'd the Garrisons as he did that of Fort *Charles*. He demolish'd them, and was assist'd by the Kings of *Homoloa*, and *Seravatri*.

The *French* travell'd into the Dominions of the great King of *Apalacha*, near the Mountains, where they converted many *Indians* to Christianity. These *Indians* were more civil than those to the Northward, their Kings Dominions larger, and their Manners, in a great measure, resembled the *Mexicans*.

We do not find that Monsieur de Gorgues made any Settlement here; or that the Spaniards attempted to recover the Country; which from the Year 1567. lay deserted by all European Nations, till the Reign of King Charles II. of England. In the Year 1622. several English Families flying from the Massacres of the Indians in Virginia and New-England, were driven on these Coasts, and settled in the Province of Mallica, near the Head of the River of May, where they acted the Part of Missionaries among the Mallicans and Apalachites. The King of the Country is said to have been baptiz'd; and in the Year 1653. Mr. Brigstock, an Englishman, went to Apalacha, where he was honourably entertain'd by his Countrymen, who were there before him; and from his Relation of the Country ours is taken.

It will not be unacceptable to the Curious, to see a Description of Carolina, as it was before the English settled there, which we find very distinctly related in a Discourse Printed A. D. 1644. *The nearest River, of any Note, to Virginia, falling into the Sea, is the Jordan, which lies in 32 Degrees; from whence, about 20 Leagues downwards to the South, is the Promontory of St. Helens, near Port-Royal, which the French chose for the best and surest Place to begin their Plantations. Between the River Jordan and St. Helens, are Oristanum, Ostanum, and Cayagna; Oristanum lying 6 Leagues from St. Helens; Ostanum 4 Leagues from Oristanum; and Cayagna 8 Leagues from Ostanum. From St. Helens to Dos Baxos Haven is 5 Leagues. From thence to the Bay de Asapo, 3 Leagues; thence to Cafanufium 3, to Capula 5, to Saron 9, to S. Alcany 14, and to S. Peter 20 Leagues, lying in 31 Degrees of Latitude. The next Place is San Mattæo, 5 Leagues from St. Peter.*

'Twill be difficult for an Inhabitant of the present Carolina, to reconcile all these Names to the Modern, and the old Description to the New; wherefore we shall not pretend to it, at least but occasionally, and where we can be almost sure that we are in the right.

This Country having been abandon'd by all European Nations for near 100 Years, it seem'd reasonable then, that any one who would be at the Expence of settling

settling upon it, and cultivate it, should possess it, and the Pretence of *Sebastian Cabot's* discovering it gave the Crown of *England* a Title to it, which King *Charles II.* asserted: For some Noblemen and Gentlemen begging it of him, he made a Grant of it, by Patent, bearing date the 24th of *March, 1663.* to *Edward Earl of Clarendon,* then Lord High Chancellor of *England,* *George Duke of Albemarle,* *William Lord Craven,* *John Lord Berkley,* *Anthony Lord Ashley,* *Sir George Cartaret,* *Sir William Berkley,* and *Sir John Colliton:* Who, to use the Words of the Grant Charter, being excited with a laudable and pious Zeal for the Propagation of the Gospel, beg'd a certain Country in the Parts of *America* not yet cultivated and planted, and only inhabited by some barbarous People, who had no Knowledge of God, &c. wherefore the King granted them all that Territory in his Dominions in *America* from the North End of the Island call'd *Lucke-Island* which lies in the Southern *Virginian Sea,* and within 30 Degrees of *N. Latitude;* & to the West as far as the *South Seas;* and so Southerly, as far as the River *San Mattheo* which borders on the Coast of *Florida,* and is within 30 Degrees of *North Latitude,* and so West, in a direct Line, as far as the *South Seas* aforesaid: With all Royal Fisheries, Mines, Power of Life and Limb, and every thing necessary in an absolute Propriety, paying a Quit-rent of 20 Marks Yearly.

We are not to enter into the Merits of the Cause nor inquire by what Right King *Charles* became possess'd of this Province, and *Carolina* to be a part of his Dominions in *America;* 'tis enough for us, that he gave the Proprietaries such a Charter, and that they proceeded towards a Settlement by virtue of it, which was in a few Years effected. Whatever has been said of the French and Spaniards, 'tis but just that if one Nation does not think a Country worth cultivating, and deserts it, another, who has a better Opinion of it, may enter upon it, by the Law of Nature and Reason.

The Proprietaries, after they had got their Charter, gave due Encouragement for Persons to settle in this Province, and there being expresse Provision made in it for a Toleration, and Indulgence to all Christians in the free Exercise of their Religion, great Num-



pers of Protestants, Dissenters from the Church of England, retir'd thither.

This Toleration appears so firm by this Charter, that we wonder any Palatine could presume to break in upon it. The King granted the Proprietaries full and free License, Liberty and Authority, by such legal Ways and Means, as they shall think fit, to give into such Person and Persons, inhabiting, and being within the said Province, or any Part thereof, who really in their Judgments, and for Conscience sake, cannot, or shall not conform to the Liturgy, Form, and Ceremonies of the Church of England, and take and subscribe the Oaths, and Articles, made and establish'd in that behalf, or any of them, such Indulgences and Dispensations in that behalf, for, and during such Time and Times, and with such Limitations and Restrictions, as they, &c. shall think fit.

Let us now see what the Proprietaries did, pursuant to the Power the King had invested them with, to grant Liberty of Conscience. We cannot have a better Authority than the *Case of the Dissenters in Carolina*, publish'd lately by a Gentleman of this Province.

*The first Proprietors were so sensible that nothing could P. 27.*  
 please the People of that Province, and enrich it, but an universal and absolute Toleration, that they made the most express and ample Provision for such a Toleration that ever was made in any Constitution in the World, as may be seen in the 96, 101, 102, 106 Articles of the Fundamental Constitutions: Which provide, as the Lords Proprietaries word it in those Constitutions, That since the Natives of that Place, who will be concern'd in our Plantations, are utterly Strangers to Christianity, whose Idolatry, Ignorance, or Mistake, give us no Right to expel or use them ill, and that those who remove from other Parts to plant there, will unavoidably be of different Opinions concerning Matters of Religion, the Liberty whereof they will expect to have allow'd them; and that it will not be reasonable for us, on this account, to keep them out; therefore, that sure Peace may be maintain'd, amidst the Diversity of Opinions, and our Agreement and Compact with all Men may be duly and faithfully observ'd, the Violation whereof, upon what Pretence soever, cannot be without great Offence to Almighty God, and great Scandal

P. 36.

*Scandal to the true Religion, which we profess: And also that Jews, Heathens, and other Dissenters, from the Purity of the Christian Religion, may not be scar'd, and kept at a Distance from it, but by having an Opportunity of acquainting themselves with the Truth and Reasonableness of its Doctrines, and the Peaceableness and Inoffensiveness of its Professors, may by good Usage and Perswasion, and all those convincing Methods of Gentleness and Meekness, suitable to the Rules and Designs of the Gospel, be won over to embrace, and unfeignedly receive thy Truth.* Therefore the said Constitutions provided for their Liberty, but declar'd, *That no Person above seventeen Years of Age, shall have any Benefit or Protection of the Law, which is not a Member of some Church or Profession, having his Name recorded in some one religious Record.*

Thus did these Lords Proprietaries take care, that Persons of all Professions in Religion should be protected and secur'd in the free Exercise of them; and the Reader thus prepossess'd with the Laws of the Country, on which the Government of the Colony is intirely founded, will be the better able to judge of the Principles of those Men, who in the Sequel of this History, we shall find endeavouring to over-turn the most considerable Articles of these Fundamentals; for great Numbers of Protestant Dissenters from the Church of *England*, removing with their Families to *Carolina*, when there were so many Inhabitants, that a Form of Government was necessary, the Proprietaries agreed on that abovemention'd, call'd, the Fundamental Constitutions, consisting of 120 Articles, sign'd by the Duke of *Albemarle*, then Palatine of the Province; the Lord *Craven*, the Lord *Ashley*, Sir *John Colliton*, the Lord *Cornbury*, the Lord *Berkley*, Sir *George Cartaret*, the 1st of *March*, 1699. Which Constitutions, as is expressed in the last Article, *shall be, and remain the sacred and unalterable Form and Rule of Government in Carolina for ever.*

They were drawn up by that famous Politician the Earl of *Shaftsbury*, one of the Proprietors, and the only one that could be suspected of having the least Inclination to favour the Dissenters. The first Article of these Fundamentals, is, that a *Palatine* shall be chosen out of one of the Proprietaries, who shall con-

George  
Duke of Al-  
bemarle  
Palatine

tinue during Life, and be succeeded by the eldest of the other Proprietaries. The Palatine has the executive Power in most Cases, and the rest of the Proprietaries have their Places and Privileges. Mr. Archdale, in the before-mention'd Treatise, says, They center'd all their Power in four of them, viz. in a Palatine of their own choosing, and three more, who were authoriz'd to execute the whole Powers of the Charter. This is call'd the Palatine's Court; and their Deputies in Carolina execute it as they are directed by their Principals.

By the Fundamental Constitutions, there are to be three Hereditary Noblemen in every County, one call'd a Landgrave, and 2 call'd Cassiques. The Parliament consists of the Proprietors, or their Deputies, the Governour and Commons; and by the Fundamentals should have 25 Landgraves, and 50 Cassiques to make a Nobility: But the Number of Landgraves and Cassiques is very small, and they are not summon'd to make an Upper-House, on that Account; so the Governour and the Proprietors Deputies arrogate that Title. The Commoners are chosen by the Free-holders of every County, as the Commons in *England*; and all were at first to sit in one House, and have equal Votes. This Parliament should meet once in every two Years, and oftner, if Occasion require. The Courts of Justice are, besides those of the Palatine's Court, the Chief Justice's Court, the High-Constables Court, the Chancellor's Court, the Treasurer's Court, the Chamberlain's Court, the High-Steward's Court: Besides which, there are the Great Council and the Hundred Courts. Mr. Archdale, on this Head, tells us, " The Charter generally, as in other Charters, agrees on " Royal Privileges and Powers, but especially at that " Time it had an over-plus Power to grant Liberty " of Conscience, tho at home was a hot persecuting " Time; as also a Power to create a Nobility, yet " not to have the same Titles as here in *England*: " And therefore they are there by Patent, under " the Great-Seal of the Province, call'd Land- " graves and Cassiques, in lieu of Earls and Lords, " and are by their Titles to sit with the Lords Pro- " prietors Deputies, and together make the Upper " House,

“ House, the Lower House being elected by the  
 “ People. These Landgraves are to have four Ba-  
 “ ronies annex’d to their Dignities, of 6000 Acres  
 “ each Barony; and the Cassiques two Baronies, of  
 “ 3000 each, and not to be divided by Sale of any  
 “ Part. Only they have Power to let out a third  
 “ Part for three Lives, to raise Portions for younger  
 “ Children. Every County has a Sheriff and four  
 Justices of the Peace. Every Planter pays 1 *d.* an  
 Acre Quit-Rent to the Proprietaries, unless he buys  
 it off. All the Inhabitants and Free-men; from 16  
 to 60 Years old, are bound to bear Arms, when com-  
 manded by the *Great Council*.

The Proprietaries enter’d into a Joint-Stock, and  
 fitted out Ships on their own proper Charges,  
 to transport People and Cattle thither, which Ex-  
 pence amounted to 12000 *l.* besides as much or more  
 disburs’d by single Proprietors to advance the Colo-  
 ny; and all their Rents and Incomes have since the  
 Beginning been laid out in Publick Services.

Many Dissenters of good Estates went over, and  
 many other Persons, in hopes to mend their For-  
 tunes. And if they could tell how to improve the  
 Opportunities that were put into their Hands there,  
 they had seldom any Reason to repent of going thi-  
 ther.

Tho the Difficulties and Dangers they met with  
 at first were a little discouraging, all free Persons,  
 who came over, were to have 50 Acres of Land for  
 themselves, 50 more for each Man-Servant, and 50  
 more for each Woman-Servant Marriageable; and not  
 Marriageable, 40 Acres. Each Servant out of his  
 or her Time was to have 50 Acres, paying the Quit-  
 Rent of 1 *d.* an Acre.

The Proportion of Land was much greater by the  
 first Instructions which the Proprietaries sent their  
 Governours, but they afterwards thought fit to re-  
 duce it to the present Allotment. Some Gentlemen  
 who did not care to be liable to the yearly Quit-  
 Rent of 1 *d.* an Acre, bought their Lands out-  
 right.

The common Rate of purchasing now, is 20 *l.* for  
 a 100 Acres, and 10 *s.* a Year Quit-Rent. The  
 Proprietors, in all their Leases, never forget to ex-  
 cept

cept all Mines, Minerals, and *Quarries of Gemms* and Precious Stones.

Things being thus establish'd, the Lords Proprietaries appointed Col. *William Sayle*, to be Governour of their Province, about the Year 1670. The First Plantations that came to any Perfection, were about *Albemarle* and *Port-Royal* Rivers. But *Affley* and *Cooper* Rivers drew People that way, for the Convenience of Pasture and Tillage, for which Reason that Part of the Country became most inhabited.

Col. Will:  
Sayle Go-  
vernour.

In 1671. The Proprietaries sent Cap. *Halsted* with a Supply of Provisions and Stores for the Colony, and created *James Cartaret*, Sir *John Yeomans*, and *John Lock*, Esq; Landgraves.

The Constitutions having been found deficient in some Cases, Temporary Laws were added, and the Form of Government settled thus.

A Governour nam'd by the Palatine.

A Council, }  
consisting }  
of }  
7 Deputies of the Proprietors.  
7 Gentlemen, chosen by the Parliament.  
7 of the eldest Landgraves and Cassiques.

An Admiral.	High-Steward.
A Chamberlain.	High-Constable.
Chancellor.	Register of Births, Burials, and Marriages.
Chief-Justice.	Register of Writings.
Secretary.	Marshal of the Admiralty.
Surveyor.	
Treasurer.	

All which were nominated by the Proprietors respectively. The *Quorum* of the Council were to be the Governour and 6 Councillors, of whom 3 at least were to be Proprietors Deputies; and because there were not Inhabitants to make a Parliament, according to the *Fundamental Constitutions*, 'twas order'd to consist of the Governour, the Deputies of Proprietors, and twenty Members chosen by the Freeholders; of whom ten were to be elected by *Berk-*  
ley-

ley's County, and ten by *Colliton* County ; which number was encreas'd, as more Counties were laid out, and more People came to settle in the Province.

The Temporary Laws were made in the Year 1671. At which time *William*, Earl of *Craven*, was Palatine. On which Office he enter'd, after the Death of the Duke of *Albemarle* ; who, as has been said, was Palatine, when the *Fundamental Constitutions* were sign'd, but dy'd soon after. In the same Year *Cap. Halsted* was order'd to make Discoveries up *Ashley* River, and a Model of a Town was sent, which it will be well, if the People of *Carolina* are able to build 100 Years hence ; but the Proprietaries, as appears by their Constitutions and Instructions to their Governours, thought 'twas almost as easy to build Towns, as to draw Schemes.

The next Governour to *Col. Sayle* was *Sir John Yeomans*, Baronet ; in whose time many of the before-mention'd Transactions happen'd, but we have not been able to distinguish the Events in his Government from those in *Sayle's*.

About the Year 1680. the Proprietaries made *Joseph West*, Esq; one of the first Planters, their Governour. He was a Man of Courage, Wisdom, Piety, and Moderation : And such an One was necessary in his time ; for tho many Dissenters had fled from the Rage of their Enemies in *England*, yet there were not wanting Men of other Principles who by Factions disturb'd the Peace of the Infant Colony. *Mr. Archdale's* Word will, in this Case be more acceptable to the Reader : " The most desperate Fortunes first ventur'd over to break the Ice, which being generally the ill Livers of the pretended Churchmen, tho the Proprietors commisionated one *Col. West* their Governour, a moderate, just, pious, and valiant Person ; yet having a Council of the loose principled Men, they grew very unruly, and had like to have ruin'd the Colony, by abusing the *Indians*, whom in Prudence they ought to have oblig'd in the highest degree, and so brought an *Indian* War on the Country, like that in the first planting of *Virginia*, in which several were cut off ; but the Governour, by his manly

manly Prudence at least in a great measure extinguish'd the Flame, which had a long time threatned the Dissolution of the Colony. The two Factions were that of the Proprietaries and that of the Planters, like Court and Country Party in England. This Division got to such a Head, that one Mr. John Culpeper was sent Prisoner to England, with a Charge of High-Treason against him, for raising a Rebellion in Carolina; for which he was try'd at Westminster-Hall, and upon hearing the Matter, it appear'd only to be a disorderly Quarrel among the Planters and Inhabitants of the Province, so he was acquitted.

Col. West held a Parliament in Charles Town, A. D. 1682. In which several Acts were pass'd and ratify'd by him, (*Andrew Percivall, Esq; William Owen, Esq; and Maurice Matthews, Esq;* Deputies of the Proprietaries); as, *An Act for High-ways, for suppressing Drunkenness and prophane Swearing, for Observation of the Lord's Day, and for settling the Militia.*

'Twas in this Governour's Time, that the Westoes, a Nation of the Indians, were troublesome to the Colony, and attempted the Subversion of this hopeful Settlement, as the Act of Parliament to raise Money for repelling them words it. There was not much Blood shed, or Money spilt; for 4 or 500 l. paid the Charge of the War, and other publick Expences.

The Lords Proprietaries erected a Commission for *Maurice Matthews, Esq; William Fuller, Esq; Jonathan Fitz, Esq; and John Boon, Esq;* to decide all Causes between the English and Indians. And; Mr. West is charg'd with dealing in Indians: For which, and opposing the Proprietaries Party, he was remov'd, in the Year 1683. and *Joseph Moreton, Esq;* appointed Governour in his stead.

'Twas about this time, that the Persecution rais'd by the Popish Faction, and their Adherents, in England, against the Protestant Dissenters, was at the height; and no Part of this Kingdom suffer'd more by it than *Somerset-shire*. The Author of this History liv'd at that time with Mr. Blake, Brother to

Moreton,

Esq; Governour.

the famous General of that Name, being educated by his Son-in-law, who taught School in *Bridgwater*; and remembers, tho then very young, the Reasons old Mr. *Blake* us'd to give for leaving *England*: One of which was, That the Miseries they endur'd, meaning the Dissenters then, were nothing to what he foresaw would attend the Reign of a Popish Successor; wherefore he resolv'd to remove to *Carolina*: And he had so great an Interest among Persons of his Principles, I mean the Dissenters, that many honest substantial Persons engag'd to go over with him.

I must prevent all Prejudice to what I have said, by declaring, that this Book is written by one who is not himself a Dissenter, but verily believes, the true Church of *England* is the most Orthodox and the most Pure Church in the World. And by the true Church of *England*, he understands all those who live up to the Doctrine it professes; who by their Piety, Charity, and Moderation, are Ornaments of our Holy Religion, and who do not blindly espouse a Name out of Interest, or from the Impressions of Education; who pity, and not hate, such as dissent from them; who are loyal to their Prince, submissive to their Superiours, true to their Country, and charitable to all: Of such a Temper is every true Church-man; and may their Number daily encrease, till we are all of One Mind and One Religion, as we have but one God and One Saviour.

If the Reader will pardon this Digression, he shall have no more; and so much 'twas necessary to say, that he may not think, whatever is said of Mr. *Blake*, or his Brethren, is out of Respect to his Profession, but as a Christian: For tho I doubt not there may be many good Christians of the same Principles, I should esteem them more, if they would be convinc'd and conform; that the Union so often recommended by our Gracious and Glorious Queen *Anne*, may be universal.

I say the more of Mr. *Blake*, because his Family is one of the most considerable in this Province; where he arriv'd in the Year 1683. with several other Families, the Followers of his Fortune. What Estate



state he had in *England*, he sold, to carry the Effects along with him; and tho the Sum was not many Thousands, if it did at all deserve the plural Number; yet 'twas all that his Great Brother left him, tho for several Years he commanded the *British* Fleet; and in a time when our Naval Arms were victorious, and the Treasures of *New-Spain* seldom reach'd home.

By Mr. *Blake's* Presence in *Carolina*, the *Sober* Party, we call them so in opposition to Mr. *Archdale's* *Ill Livers*, began to take Heart, and the other to be discourag'd in their irregular Courses. The Gentleman I just mention'd, in his *Description of Carolina*, writes thus: *In Governour Moreton's Time, General Blake's Brother, with many Dissenters, came to Carolina; which Blake being a wise and prudent Person, of an heroick Temper of Spirit, strengthened the Hands of the sober inclin'd People, and kept under the first loose and extravagant Spirit, &c.* The Governour, as we are told, marry'd Mrs. *Elizabeth Blake*, his Daughter; and by this Alliance, the Strength of their Party was so encreas'd, that we hear little of the other till Mr. *Colliton's* Government.

There being some Complaints against Mr. *Matthews*, and the other Commissioners for deciding Causes between the *English* and the *Indians*, they were discharg'd, and the Commission abrogated. The Lords Proprietaries order'd the *Indians* 400 Miles from *Charles Town*, to be taken into their Protection.

The County of *Berkley*, between *Stono* and *Sewee*; was now laid out; and soon after *Craven* County, on the North of *Berkley*; and *Colliton* County, on the South: All which Counties were divided into squares of 12000 Acres, for the several Shares of the Proprietaries, Landgraves, and Cassiques.

Mr. *Moreton*, at his entering upon his Office, call'd a Parliament, which met in Form, and pass'd several Acts; as, *For raising 500 l. for defraying the Publick Charge of the Province; for regulating the Surveyor General's Fees; for raising the Value of Foreign Coin; for Trial of small and mean Causes under 40 s. for Damage of protested Bills of Exchange; for ascertaining Publick Officers Fees; to suspend Prosecution*

for Foreign Debts; to inhibit the trading with Servants or Slaves; for laying out, and making good High-Ways; for preventing the taking away Boats and Canoos; for marking of all sorts of Cattle; to prevent unlicens'd Taverns and Punch-Houses, and ascertaining the Rates and Prices of Wine, and other Liquors; to prevent Runaways. All which Acts were sign'd by Joseph Moreton, Esq; Governour, John Godfrey, Esq; John Boon, Esq; James Moor, Esq; Maurice Matthews, Esq; Andrew Percivall, Esq; Arthur Middleton, Esq; Counsellors and Deputies; and Mr. Joseph Oldys, Clerk to the Parliament. At this time, Robert Gibbs, Esq; was Treasurer of the Colony; John Moor, Esq; Secretary; John Boon, Esq; Robert Daniel, Esq; Mr. Bernard Schinkingh, Mr. Peter Hearn, and Cap. Florence O Sullivan, were appointed Commissioners for stating and passing the Publick Accounts. Maurice Matthews, Esq; was also Surveyor-General. The Trade of dealing in Indians continu'd, and several of the Proprietors Deputies were concern'd in it: Whether the Governour, Mr. Moreton, favour'd it or not, we cannot undertake to determine. 'Tis certain, he did not long enjoy his Office: For it appears by the Copies of the Original Instructions sent by the Proprietaries to his Successor, that in the following Year the Pallatine made Sir Richard Kyrle Governour. He was a Gentleman of Ireland; and dying within the Year, Joseph West, Esq; was again chosen Governour by the Council; and being a Man of great Interest, the Proprietaries thought fit to confirm him in his Government: But they turn'd out Maurice Matthews, Esq; James Moor, Esq; and Arthur Middleton, Esq; from being Deputies and Councillors, for disobeying their Orders, and sending away Indians. They also displac'd their Secretary John Moor, Esq; and put Rob. Quarry, Esq; in his Place.

Sir Rich.  
Kyrle Go-  
vernour.  
Joseph  
West, Esq;  
Governour

Thus we see the latter has enjoy'd honourable Offices many Years in the American Colonies; with the Interest of which he must, by this means, be very well acquainted.

In Mr. West's second Government, the Right Honourable the Lord Cardross remov'd to Carolina, and, with ten Scots Familles, settled at Port-Royal, esteem'd

esteem'd the most convenient Place in this Province for Commerce, as being the best Port. The Lord *Carrdrosse* having been disgusted with the Government of the Province, for some ill Usage he met with, return'd to *Scotland*, and the *Spaniards* dislodg'd the *Scots*, who had seated themselves on that fine River. This Lord was of the House of *Buchan*, and in King *William's* Reign enjoy'd the Title of Earl of *Buchan*.

Dissenters continuing to come hither from all Parts of *England*, the Colony thriv'd and increas'd in Numbers and Riches.

*James Colliton*, Esq; of *Barbadoes*, Brother to Sir *Peter Colliton*, Baronet, a Proprietary, being honour'd with the Title of Landgrave, left the Island he liv'd in, and transported himself and Family to *Carolina*, where he seated himself at old *Charles Town*, on *Cooper-River*, built a handsome House there; and being made Governour, his Seat is to this Day call'd the Governour's House. Had this Gentleman had as much Honour and Capacity as his Brother *Peter*, we should have had no Occasion to excuse our selves for keeping to the Truth of History in his Behalf. One of his Successors writes in this Manner of his Government: 'The Party Governour *Moreton* had gone a great way in suppressing, grew now so strong among the Common People, that they chose Members to oppose whatsoever the Governour requested; insomuch that they would not settle the Militia Act, tho' their own Security depended on it, and that it would be Grounds of their further Strength. The Reason of the Discontent the People lay under, were Disputes about the Tenure of their Lands, and Payment of their Quit-Rents, which were not settled till Mr. *Archdale's* Government.

Mr. *Colliton* call'd a Parliament, A. D. 1687. This Assembly not liking the Proprietaries *Fundamental Constitutions*; and thinking they could supply the Deficiencies in them, appointed a Committee to examine them: And these Gentlemen drew up a new Form of Government, differing in many Articles from the former; to which they gave the Title of *Standing Laws*, and Temporary Laws. This

Committee were *James Colliton, Esq;* Governour *Paul Grimbball, Esq;* and *William Dunlop, Esq;* Deputies; *Bernard Schinking, Thomas Smith, John Farr* and *Joseph Blake, Esqs;* Commoners. But neither the Lords Proprietaries, nor the People of *Carolina* accepted of them; and thus the *Fundamental Constitutions* keep their Ground to this Day.

Mr. *Colliton* gave such Discontent in his Administration, that he was banish'd the Province; a few Governours of Colonies were ever so unhappy as to meet with.

Thomas  
Smith,  
Esq; Go-  
vernour.

Mr. *Archdale* tells us, Mr. *Smith* succeeded Mr. *Colliton*, and that he succeeded Mr. *Smith*; but then the latter must have been twice Governour: For we find several other Gentlemen, who had that Title and Office before the Year 1694. when Mr. *Archdale* says, Governour *Smith* wrote over to the Proprietaries, to advise them to send one of their Number to *Carolina*. For

Col. Rob.  
Quarry  
Governour

Col. *Robert Quarry* was Governour about the Year 1690. After him, Mr. *Southwell*. And in the Year 1692. Col. *Philip Ludwell* held this Government. In which 'tis certain, he was succeeded by the above-mention'd *Thomas Smith, Esq;* Landgrave of this Province.

Mr.  
Southwell  
Governour  
Col. Philip  
Ludwell  
Governour  
Thomas  
Smith,  
Esq; Go-  
vernour.

We are not doubtful of any Error in this Order of the Governours, except in Mr. *Southwell's*: our Informations having been uncertain as to him.

‘ Mr. *Smith*, says Mr. *Archdale*, was a wise, sober, well-living Man; who grew so uneasy in the Government, by Reason he could not satisfy People in their Demands, that he wrote over, *Anno 1694*. ‘ *It was impossible to settle the Country, except a Proprietary himself was sent thither, with full Power to hear their Grievances.* The Proprietaries took Governour *Smith's* Letter into Consideration, and the Lord *Ashley* was pitch'd upon by all the Lords as a Person every way qualify'd for so good a Work; but he desir'd to be excus'd, on Account of his particular Affairs in *England*. Upon which Mr. *Archdale* was chosen by the Proprietaries, to be sent over with large and ample Powers. Which having receiv'd, he embark'd and sail'd to *Carolina*. When he

he arriv'd, and enter'd upon the Government, in John *Archdale* Esq; Go-  
*August*, 1695. he found all Matters in great Confu- Archdale  
 sion, and every Faction apply'd themselves to him, Esq; Go-  
 in hopes of Relief. In order to which he summon'd vernour.  
 an Assembly, and made a kind Speech to them. The  
 Parliament chose *Jonathan Amary Esq;* to be their  
 Speaker; and having presented a dutiful Address to  
 the Governour, proceeded to do Business. But the  
 Divisions among them were so great, that had not  
 Mr. *Archdale* exercis'd a great deal of Patience, nei-  
 ther his Power as Governour, nor his higher Title  
 of Proprietary, could have brought that Assembly to  
 any Temper; which he at last effected, and the  
 Disorders of the Province were remedy'd.

The Parliament presented an Address of Thanks to  
 the Governour, to be transmitted to the Proprietaries,  
 and all things ended well. In his time the *Tamma-*  
*sees*, an Indian Nation, who formerly liv'd under  
 the Spanish Government, and now under the Eng-  
 lish, made an Incurfion into the Territories of ano-  
 ther Indian Nation, near *Santa Maria*, not far from  
*St. Augustino*, took several Prisoners, and intended  
 to sell them for Slaves at *Barbadoes* or *Jamaica*, as  
 had been usual among them. Mr. *Archdale* hearing  
 of it, sent for the King of the *Tammasees*, and order'd  
 him to bring those Indians to *Charles Town*, which  
 he did. They were Papists; and the Kings of *Eng-*  
*land* and *Spain* being at that time Confederates, the  
 Governour gave the King of the *Tammasees* Orders to  
 carry them to *St. Augustino*, with a Letter to the  
 Governour; which may serve to give us an Idea of  
 the Power of an Indian King, who receives Orders  
 from a Governour of a small Province, as *Carolina*  
 was then at least, whatever it is now.

The Spaniard who commanded in *St. Augustino*, re-  
 turn'd Mr. *Archdale* a Letter of Thanks; and not long  
 after another Indian King was sent by the Spanish  
 Governour, with a Letter of Complaint, of wrong  
 done the Spanish Indians by those ally'd to the Eng-  
 lish.

The Spanish Indians were called *Churchcates*; of  
 whom the *Apalachicoles*, English Indians, had kill'd  
 three. The Governour commanded that Nation,  
 and all others depending on the English, to forbear

molesting those within the Spanish Jurisdiction; which had so good an Effect, that when Mr. *Robert Barrow*, Mr. *Edward Wardell*, and other Englishmen, were afterward cast away to the Southward of *Augustino*, the barbarous Indians offer'd them no hurt; and when they arriv'd at that Town; the Governour supply'd them with all Necessaries.

Col. *Bull*, one of the Council, and a greater Trader with the Indians, engag'd that Nation which dwelt about *Cape Fear*, to submit to the English, who however were afraid to trust them; for a Vessel coming from *New-England* being shipwrack'd on that Coast, the Passengers, to the Number of 52, despair'd of their Lives from those Barbarians, but resolv'd to defend themselves as well as they could: Accordingly they entrench'd in their little Camp. The Indians came down, and by Signs of Friendship invited them to come forth; which they were afraid to do. At last, when their Provisions were almost all spent, some of them ventur'd out, were kindly receiv'd, and furnish'd by the Indians with Necessaries. The King invited them to his Town, treated them; and 4 or 5 of them travelling to *Charles Town*, gave the Governour notice of their Misfortunes; which hearing, he sent a Ship to fetch the rest; and they arriv'd safely at the Capital of *Carolina*.

In Mr. *Archdale's* Time, two Indians quarrelling in their Drinking, one of them presently kill'd the other; whose Wife being by, immediately dismember'd the Murderer, to revenge her Husband's Death, cutting off his Privities with a Knife. The Governour happening to be near the Place where the Murder was committed, order'd the Criminal to be pursu'd. He was taken in a Swamp about 16 Miles from the Town; to which he was sent under a Guard. The Nation to whom the slain Indian belong'd, hearing of his Death, their King came to Mr. *Archdale*, and desir'd Justice upon the Murderer. Some of whose Friends would have bought him off as usual; but nothing less than his Death would satisfy the injur'd Nation; and, according to the Custom of his own Country, the Governour order'd him to be shot by the Kinsman of the Deceas'd. As he was leading to Execution, his King came to him, and bid him

die like a Man, since he must die, adding; he had often forewarn'd him of Rum, the Liquor which he was drunk with when he kill'd the Man, and now he must loose his Life for not taking his Council.

When he came to the Tree, he desir'd not to be ty'd to it, but to stand loose, saying, *I will not stir when he shoots me.* So he was shot in the Head, and fell down dead.

This Piece of Justice hinder'd a War between the Nations to which these two Indians belong'd. The Indians inhabiting the Country about the River *Pemlico*, were almost all consum'd by a Pestilential Disease, while this Governour was in *Carolina*; and the *Coranines*, a bloody and barbarous People, were most of them cut off by a neighbouring Nation.

In his Time several Families remov'd from *New-England*, to settle at *Carolina*, and seated themselves on the River *Sewee*, in *North Carolina*. These are all the Events which happen'd during Mr. *Archdale's* Government, at least he has thought fit to communicate no more to the Publick; and as inconsiderable as they may appear to some Persons, who are us'd to turn over the *Græcian* and *Roman* Histories, if they will give themselves the Trouble to examine the Affairs of these two Empires, they will find them as trivial, in the beginning at least, if they can distinguish the *History* from the *Fable*.

We cannot expect much Business in the Infancy of a Colony; and yet *Carolina* is not so young, but Factions have been as rampant there, as if the People had been made wanton by many Ages of Prosperity.

Mr. *Archdale*, to use his own Phrase, Return'd for *England*, being not sent for home. And *Joseph Blake*, Joseph Esq; Son of the before-mention'd Mr. *Blake*, being <sup>Blake</sup> become a Proprietary, was look'd upon as the fittest <sup>Esq; Go-</sup> Person to succeed him in his Government; in which <sup>vernour.</sup> Office he behav'd himself to the Satisfaction of the Country, which he govern'd with equal Prudence and Moderation.

In his time Major *Daniel* brought from *England* new Constitutions, consisting of 41 Articles, wherein as ample Provision was made for Liberty of Conscience, as in the Fundamental Constitutions. These  
new

John Earl of Bath Palatine. new Laws were call'd, the last *Fundamental Constitutions*, and sign'd by John Earl of Bath, Palatine; Anthony Lord Ashley, the Lord Craven, the Lord Cartaret, the Earl of Bath, Sir John Colliton, William Thornburgh Merchant, Thomas Amy, and Wil. Thornburgh; but they were never confirm'd in Parliament at Carolina.

Mr. Blake, tho he was himself a Dissenter, finding there was no settled Maintenance for the Church of England Minister, procur'd an Act of Assembly (in which there were a great Number of Dissenters) for the settling a very convenient House, with a Glebe, two Servants, and 150 *l. per Annum* upon the Minister of Charles Town for ever. 'Twas by his Influence that Act pass'd, and he gave his Assent to it; he, as Governour, having a negative Voice to all Bills. His Lady also was one of the greatest Benefactors towards the Ornaments of the Church. And this Friendship deserv'd a more grateful Return than they met with from those who succeeded in the Government.

Mr. Blake dying about the Year 1700. after he had been Governour 4 or 5 Years, the Proprietaries Deputies met, according to their Instructions in such Cases, and proceeded to the Election of a new Governour; which Post is generally conferr'd on the eldest Landgrave, if there's no Objection to him, and no Person sent from England with that Character.

Joseph Moreton Esq; being the eldest Landgrave, was elected Governour by the Deputies: but Capt. James Moor, one of these Deputies, knowing the Party he had among them, objected against Mr. Moreton, as if he had made a Breach of the Trust repos'd in him by the true and absolute Lords and Proprietaries, by accepting of a Commission from King William, to be Judge of the Admiralty, when he had at the same time a Commission from the Lords Proprietaries for the same Office.

Tho this Objection was answer'd by Mr. Moreton's Friends; That it did not appear by the Charter, the Proprietaries can impower any one to try Persons for Facts committed out of their Dominions, which is necessary for such a Judge; and the Proprietaries could not grant it; yet such was Mr. Moor's Interest, that on this his



his Objection Mr. *Moreton* was set aside, and his Opponent Mr. *Moor* chosen Governour. Mr. *Moreton* inform'd and complain'd to the Proprietaries, but was never redrest.

Col. James Moor Governour.

From this Election I date the Rise of all the Misfortunes that have since befallen this Colony, and that have given the Government of *England* so much Trouble.

The Earl of *Bath* was dead, and his Son *John Lord Granville*, lately advanc'd to the House of Peers, was Palatine. All the World knew how zealous that Gentleman had been for promoting a Bill against Occasional Conformists in *England*, and that he shew'd his Aversion to Dissenters even in the Court of *Stannaries* in the *West*, while he was Warden. The Bitterness of his Spirit appear'd in the Speeches he made to the Representatives of that Court; and was such, that he was not long employ'd by a Government, which is founded on Principles of Justice and Moderation; which has in all things promoted Union, and which has united the Hearts of all the Subjects of the British Empire more than all the Princes could do since the *Conquest*, and many Ages before it.

John Lord Granville Palatine.

In an ill time therefore did this Palatine countenance the Divisions in *Carolina*, by encouraging this and the succeeding Governour in their vain Endeavours, to establish that for a Law there, which had been rejected with such Marks of Abhorrence in *England* by our *Illustrious Representatives*.

Mr. *Moor* was easily confirm'd in his new Dignity by the Palatine; and as he is said to have sought after it, to enrich himself, so he made use of it to that end, he being in mean Circumstances, if the Representation of the principal Inhabitants of the Colony does not deceive us.

Let us give the Reader the proper Words, that we may not be accus'd of Partiality, which we detest in all things that hurt the Truth. But we know very well, that Faction will often accuse Fact of Partiality; and an Historian may write Things true, and yet by writing the Truth only of one Side, and concealing what is to its Disadvantage, it may give a plausible Appearance to a bad Cause; wherefore we

we solemnly declare, that after a full Enquiry we have not been able to learn any thing that could excuse the Disorders we are about to relate, and vindicate the Administration in *Carolina*, while the Lord *Granville* was Palatine. Whether that Lord or his Governours ought to be blam'd most, let the World judge.

Case of  
Diff. in  
Car. p. 29,  
30.

Mr. *Moor*, says the Author of the above-mention'd Representation, having thus boldly gotten the Government, resolv'd to make the best use of his Authority, and finding himself too poor, with the Countenance of his Office, to make any considerable Profit of the Indian Trade, he laid the Design of getting it wholly into his Power. He to that end procur'd a Bill to be brought into the Assembly, then sitting, for regulating the Indian Trade: Which Bill was so drawn, that had it pass'd, he would have engros'd all that beneficial Commerce. But Mr. *Robert Stephens*, and Mr. *Nicholas Trott* (who had not then forsaken the Country Interest) and some others, so plainly shew'd the ill Aim of that Act, that 'twas thrown out of the Assembly: Which Mr. *Moor* dissolv'd, perceiving they would not answer his Ends.

We do not think our selves oblig'd to keep to the Words of this Representation, which are too rough in some Places; but we keep religiously to the Sense; and having refer'd the Reader in the Margin to our Authority, he cannot suppose we endeavour to impose on him.

The Governour call'd a new Assembly about the latter end of the Year 1701. At the choosing of which, tho the Right of Electing be in the Freeholders only, he so influenc'd the Sheriff, that Strangers, Servants, Aliens; nay, Malatoes and Negroes were poll'd, and return'd.

Such as at the Place of Election oppos'd these Practices, were abus'd, and some assaulted by Mr. *Moor's* Favourites. By this means having got several into the Assembly, Men of no Sense and Credit, who would vote as he wou'd have them; he there kept them from being thrown out, on the Petition of those who were unjustly excluded.

*Colliton* County sent a Representation against him to the Palatine, containing in Substance the same, as that

that we have spoken of before ; therefore we cannot suspect the Truth of it.

When the Governour was afraid any of the Mem- Ibid. p. 34s  
bers he was sure was in his Interest would be turn'd out, on Petitions, he prorogu'd the Assembly : And when at last they were suffer'd to sit, the Inquiry into the Sheriff of *Berkley* County's Return was obstructed, by setting on foot an ill contriv'd Design of raising Forces to attack St. *Augustino*, a Fort belonging to the Spaniards, to the Southward of *Carolina*. If any Member of the Assembly undertook to speak against it, and to shew how unable the Province was at that time to undertake such an Expedition, he was presently look'd upon by him, and his Adherents, as an Enemy and Traitor to his Country ; and accordingly revil'd and affronted ; tho the true Design of the Expedition, as the Representation from *Colliton* County tells us, was *no other than catching and making Slaves of Indians, for private Advantage*. He would have had this Military Enterprize been undertaken before the War with *Spain* was proclaim'd ; but the Assembly carry'd that in the Negative.

Before we treat of this Expedition, we must observe what pass'd further in the Assembly. Mr. *John Ash*, one of the Members, propos'd to have the last *Fundamental Constitutions*, which Mr. *Daniel* brought over, confirm'd ; but he was oppos'd by Mr. *Trott* Ibid. and Mr. *How*, the Governour's Creatures.

This Mr. *Trott* had himself been Governour of *Providence*, and behav'd himself so arbitrarily, that he was complain'd of to King *William* some Years before. *Trott* and *How* expos'd the Constitutions as ridiculous ; and the Country was thus left in an unsettled Condition.

There's one Article in this Representation which is very extraordinary : *That the said late Governour Moor did grant Commissions to Anthony Dodsworth, Robert Mackoone, and others, to set upon, assault, Coll Coun- kill, destroy, and take as many Indians as they possibly by Repr. could ; the Profit and Produce of which Indian Slaves Article 5. were turn'd to his private Use. Whereas such Undertakings, unjust and barbarous in themselves, will in all Probability draw upon us an Indian War.*

We have said enough to give an Idea of the Condition the People of *Carolina* were in under such a Government, and have taken it all from Memorials presented by their Agents to the Lords Proprietaries. The next thing that comes in our way is the War of *Augustino*.

Two thousand Pounds were rais'd by an Act of the Assembly, to defray the Charge of this Expedition. The Governour prest as many Merchant Ships as were necessary to transport the Troops he intended to embark; who were order'd to rendezvous at *Port Royal*.

The Number of Men which were list'd for this Enterprize were 1200, 600 English, and 600 Indians. Col. *Moor* took the Command on himself, as General of all the Forces that should be rais'd within the Limits of his Government.

Col. *Rob. Daniel*, a very brave Man, commanded a Party who were to go up the River in *Periaga's*, and come upon *Augustino* on the Land side, while the Governour sail'd thither and attack'd it by Sea. They both set out in *August*, 1702. Col. *Daniel* in his Way took *St. John's*, a small Spanish Settlement; as also *St. Mary's*, another little Village, belonging to the Spaniards. After which he proceeded to *Augustino*, came before the Town, enter'd and took it; Col. *Moor* not being yet arriv'd with the Fleet.

The Inhabitants having notice of the Approach of the English had pack'd up their best Effects, and retir'd with them into the Castle, which was surrounded by a very deep and broad Moat.

They had laid up Provisions there for 4 Months, and resolv'd to defend themselves to the last Extremity. However Col. *Daniel* found a considerable Booty in the Town. The next Day the Governour arriv'd, and a Council of War was immediately call'd, in which 'twas resolv'd to land.

Accordingly the Governour came ashore, and his Troops following him, they entrench'd, posted their Guards in the Church, and block'd up the Castle. The English held the Possession of the Town a whole Month, but finding they could do nothing for want of Mortars and Bombs, they dispatch'd away a Sloop for *Jamaica*; but the Commander of the Sloop, instead

stead of going thither, came to *Carolina*, out of Fear or Treachery. Finding others offer'd to go in his stead, he proceeded in the Voyage himself, after he had lain some time at *Charles-Town*.

The Governour all this while lay before the Castle of *Augustino*, in Expectation of the Return of the Sloop: Which hearing nothing of, he sent Col. *Daniel*, who was the Life of the Action, to *Jamaica*, on the same Errand.

This Gentleman being hearty in the Design, procur'd a Supply of Bombs, and return'd towards *Augustino*. But in the mean time two Ships appear'd in the *Offing*, which being taken to be very large Men of War, the Governour thought fit to raise the Siege, and abandon his Ships, with a great Quantity of Stores, Ammunition, and Provision, to the Enemy. Upon which the two Men of War enter'd the Port of *Augustino*, and took the Governour's Ships. Some say he burnt them himself. Certain it is, they were lost to the English, and that he return'd to *Charles-Town* over Land, 300 Miles from *Augustino*. The two Men of War that were thought to be so large, prov'd to be two small Frigats, one of 22, and the other of 16 Guns.

When Col. *Daniel* came back to *Augustino*, he was chas'd, but got away; and Col. *Moor* retreated with no great Honour homewards. The *Periagas* lay at St. *John's*, whether the Governour retir'd, and so to *Charles Town*, having lost but two Men in the whole Expedition. *Arratommakaw*, King of the *Yanioseaves*; who commanded the *Indians*, retreated to the *Periagas* with the rest, and there slept upon his Oars, with a great deal of Bravery and Unconcern. The Governour's Soldiers taking a false Alarm, and thinking the *Spaniards* were coming, did not like this slow Pace of the *Indian King* in his flight; and to quicken him in it, bad him make more Haste: But he reply'd, No; tho your Governour leaves you, I will not stir till I have seen all my Men before me.

The First Representation, call'd also, *The present* Ib. p. 30: *State of Affairs in Carolina*, reflects a little too bitterly on Col. *Moor* on this Head; and one would suspect the Truth of what it contains, if it was not  
con-

confirm'd by the second. We are told there, *They sent Plunder to Jamaica by their trusty Officers, under Colour of seeking Supplies, and sending for Bombs and Mortars.* Which is a malicious Turn given by Col. *Moor's* Enemies to Col. *Daniel's* going to *Jamaica*, who by the Dispatch he made there shew'd he went really for Mortars; and had the Governour staid till he had return'd, the Castle of *Augustino* had perhaps now been in *English* Hands; for the *Spaniards* had not above 200 Men aboard the two *Figats*. This Expedition, as unfortunate as it was in it self, was much more so in the Consequence of it; for it brought a Debt of 6000 *l.* on the Province. The Assembly had been under a Prorogation during the Governour's Absence, and when he return'd they met. The first thing they went upon, was to raise Money to pay off the Debt above-mention'd, and then they took into Consideration the Danger of the Country, as it lay expos'd to the Southward. But while these Bills were passing, another for the better regulating Elections, pass'd the Lower House twice, and was sent up to the Governour and Council, by whom 'twas rejected without so much as a Conference. Upon which several of the Members, jealous of their Privileges, and being so order'd by those that sent them, enter'd their Protestation, and left the House; but return'd the next Day, offering to sit longer if the rest of the Assembly would join with them, in asserting their Right. The whole Assembly consists of but 30 Members, and 15 of them protested against the irregular Proceedings of the Governour. Instead of tempering Matters, when they return'd to the House, they were abus'd and treated with the most scandalous Reflections, unbecoming an Assembly that represented a whole Province. And as they were insulted within Doors, they were assaulted without; for a Day or two after Lieut. Col. *George Dearsby* drew his Sword upon *Thomas Smith*, Esq; a Landgrave, and once Governour of the Colony, threatening his Life. *John Ash*, Esq; a Member of the Assembly, was not only abus'd in the Streets by a Company of Drunken Fellows, but forc'd aboard a Ship belonging to Cap. *Rhett*, and threatned to be hang'd, or sent to *Jamaica*, or left

See the  
Representation of  
the Mem-  
bers of  
Colliton  
County.

on some Desert-Island. This Mr. *Ash* is the Man who was employ'd as Agent for the People of *Carolina*, to represent their Grievances in the first Memorial, call'd, *The present State of Affairs in Carolina*; and the Persons who thus barbarously treated him, were *George Dearsby*, *Nicholas Nary*, *Thomas Dalton*, and others, whom, says the Representation of *Colliton County*, Article XI. *the Governour had treated immediately before the Riot began, and us'd such Expressions to them, as gave them, next their Drink, the greatest Encouragements for what they acted*; telling them, *The protesting Members would bring the People on their Heads for neglecting to pay the Countrys Debts. After the Riot began, of Part of which he was an Eye-Witness, having first drunk with some of them, he withdrew himself out of the way.* This Riot continu'd 4 or 5 Days; and *Edmund Bellinger*, Esq; a Landgrave, and Justice of Peace, attempting to suppress it, was call'd opprobrious Names by the Rioters, and *Rhett* can'd him for a considerable time. The Rioters assaulted Mr. *Joseph Boon*, a Merchant, deputed by *Colliton County*, to present the above-mention'd Second Representation to the *Palatine* and *Lords Proprietaries*, and put him in Danger and Fear of his Life, without any Provocation. The same they did by Mr. *James Byres*; who with the rest complain'd to the Governour; and receiving no Satisfaction, they ask'd him, whether he did not look on himself, as Governour, oblig'd to keep the Peace of the Province: The Governour reply'd, *That's a Question I am not oblig'd to answer.* He told them, 'twas a Justice of Peace's Business.

The Rioters went one Night to the House of one *John Smith*, a Butcher in *Charles-Town*, and forcing open the Door, threw down a Woman big with Child, and otherwise misusing her; she brought forth a dead Child, with the Back and Skull broken. These Instances are enough to shew any Man the Temper of this Governour and his Party; who were the same that stickled so much for the unhappy Bill we must speak of in the Sequel of this History. What follow'd upon this Riot, is told us in a late Tract, which I shall make use of in the Author's own Words, 'As this Riot was rais'd, encourag'd, and

Case of  
Dis. in  
Car. 19.

Sir Nath.  
Johnson  
Governor.

countenanc'd by the said Governour and Council ;  
And as no Assistance could be obtain'd to quell it,  
so all Methods to enquire into, and punish it, have  
been render'd ineffectual, and the Course of Justice  
intirely stop'd. For Sir *Nathaniel Johnson* was  
made Governour in the Room of the said *Moor*.  
The said Governor *Moor* was presently made At-  
torney General; and Mr. *Trott*, another of the  
chief Abettors of the Riot, the Chief Justice of the  
Common Pleas; who in this Province is sole  
Judge. Sir *Nathaniel Johnson* was General of  
the *Leward Islands*, in the Reign of the late King  
*James*; but he quitted his Government upon the  
Revolution, and retir'd to *Carolina*, where he  
liv'd privately till the Death of the late King *James*.  
Upon which he first took the Oaths to the Govern-  
ment; and some time after was made Governour  
of the Province. And he has since his being Go-  
vernour appointed such Sheriffs, as prevent all  
Prosecutions of this Riot at their Assizes or Quar-  
ter Sessions (which are the only Courts of Justice  
in this Province) where Crimes of this Nature can  
be try'd; and where the said Mr. *Trott* is sole  
Judge, by returning such Jurors as were known  
Abettors of the said Riot: So that there is a total  
Failure of Justice, and nothing but Corruption in  
the whole Frame and Administration of Govern-  
ment.

*Colliton-County* Representation tells us particu-  
larly, that Mr. *Bullinger* did what in him lay to have  
the said Riot inquir'd into. He gave in the Record of  
it to the Bench; and some of the Grand Jury urg'd  
to have it presented, but to no purpose. The first  
Representation informs us, that the Grand Jury pre-  
sented it to the Court as a great Grievance, that the  
Riot was not look'd into, and the Rioters prosecu-  
ted; yet no Justice against them could be obtain'd;  
the Judge giving for Answer, 'Twas before the Coun-  
cil, his Superiors: The present Governour, That  
it was an Action done before his coming to the  
Government; that he thought the time of Prose-  
cution laps'd, but would take care the like should be no  
more.



This Answer had in the last part of it a Face of Moderation ; and such an Air was necessary, because an Assembly was about being elected. The *Conspirators*, as my Author terms them, saw that a new Parliament might set all things to rights again, and therefore when the time of a new Election came, which, according to their Constitution, is once in two Years ; they resolv'd to procure a Commons House of Assembly of the same Complexion with the former, and by more illegal Practices. If those they had us'd in the former Elections would not do their Business, their Designs took Effect ; and such a Commons House of Assembly was return'd, as fully answer'd their Expectations. Ib. p. 20.

The first Representation brought over by Mr. *Ash*, informs us, That at the Election for Berkley and Craven County, the Violence in Mr. Moor's Time, and all other illegal Practices, were with more Violence repeated, and openly avow'd by the present Governour, and his Friends.

The second Representation adds, *Jews, Strangers, Sailors, Servants, Negroes, and almost every Frenchman in Craven and Berkley Counties, came down to elect, and their Votes were taken, and the Persons by them voted for, were return'd by the Sheriffs.*

The Assembly meeting, chose *Job Hom, Esq;* to be their Speaker, and this was that Parliament, who, to oppress the Protestant Dissenters, brought in a Bill contrary to the first and last Fundamental Constitutions to the true Interest of the Colony, and the Right of every Freeholder there. 'Twas entitl'd, *An Act for the more effectual Preservation of the Government, by requiring all Persons that shall hereafter be chosen Members of the Commons House of Assembly, and sit in the same, to, &c. and to conform to the religious Worship in this Province, according to the Church of England, and to receive the Sacrament of the Lord's Supper according to the Rights and Usage of the said Church.*

Every Dissenter that was turn'd out of the House, by virtue of this Act, made room for the most bigoted of the Faction to get in ; for it provided, that the Person who had the most Votes next to such Dissenter, should be admitted in his Place ; and those that oppos'd the Dissenters being generally, according to the

before-mention'd Author, Men of violent and persecuting Principles, the Faction secur'd the Power in their own Hands.

There were 12 Members for this Bill, and 11 against it, in the Lower House; and in the Upper, *Joseph Moreton*, Esq; a Landgrave, and one of the Proprietary's Deputies, was deny'd the Liberty of entering his Protest against it. The Bill pass'd the 6th of *May*, A. D. 1704. and was sign'd by Sir *Nathaniel Johnson*, Col. *Thomas Broughton*, Col. *James Moor*, *Robert Gibbs*, Esq; *Henry Noble*, Esq; *Nicholas Trott*, Esq;

Case of  
Diff. Part  
2. P. 57.

The Governour and Proprietaries Deputies, upon passing this Act, allarm'd all the Dissenters, who according to the Orthodox Minister of *Charles Town*, the Reverend Mr. *Marston's* Letter to the Reverend Dr. *Stanhope*, are the *sobereft, most numerous, and richest People of this Province*; and this Assembly was compos'd of many Men of *very loose and corrupt Morals*.

We have shewn in the Beginning of the History of *Carolina*, that by the Fundamentals of the Province, the Dissenters could not be justly excluded from any Rights of the Members of it; we have shewn here what a sort of Convention, and by what Government countenanc'd, this Assembly was; and there's no need of exaggerating Matters, to make the thing look black; wherefore we shall proceed in our History.

It cannot be imagin'd, that a People who had been us'd so ill, wou'd sit still, and tamely bear such barbarous Usage; especially considering those that were concern'd in the Riot were some of the worst, and those that suffer'd by it, some of the best Men in the Province.

Col. *Joseph Moreton*, and *Edmund Bellinger*, Esq; Landgraves, and Deputies of the Lords Proprietaries, all the other Members of *Colliton* County, and several of the greatest Worth and Reputation in *Berkley* County, prevail'd with Mr. *Joseph Ash* to come for *England*, to represent the miserable State of the Province to the Proprietaries.

The Faction being apprehensive of their Danger in such a Proceeding, did their utmost to prevent Mr.

Mr *Ash's* Voyage; and 'twas not without the greatest Difficulty that he got away from *Carolina* to *Virginia*, where his Powers and Instructions were convey'd to him, as Agent for the Gentlemen and Inhabitants above-nam'd.

Coming to *England*, he apply'd himself to the Lord *Granville*, then Proprietary of the Province: But finding he was entirely in the Interests of the prevailing Party in *Carolina*, he despair'd of seeing the Grievances he came to complain of, redress'd: He therefore drew up the first Representation, often cited in this Treatise, printed a Sheet of it, and intended to go through with it; but dy'd before he could finish it; and his Papers, after his Death, were betray'd into his Enemies Hands.

How this Agency was lik'd in *Carolina*, we may suppose; and that the Author of, *The Case of the Dissenters in Carolina*, does not impose upon us, in telling us, *The Governour and his Agents prosecuted and insulted several of the Inhabitants, and particularly Landgrave Smith, on the account of some private Letters which they sent to the said Ash, while he was in Virginia and England, and which were found among the Papers betray'd to the Governour's Agents.*

Mr. *Ash* may probably represent Things with too much Partiality, especially if what Mr. *Archdale* says of him be true; *Their first Agent seem'd not a Person suitably qualify'd to represent their State here, not that he wanted Wit, but Temper.*

*Desc. of  
Car. p. 25.*

What Share the Governour had in this Business, appears also in the same Tract. Sir *Nathaniel Johnson*, by a Chymical Wit, Zeal, and Art, transmuted or turn'd this Civil Difference into a religious Controversy; and so setting up a Standard for those called High Church, ventur'd at all to exclude all the Dissenters out of the Assembly, as being those principally that were for a strict Examination into the Grounds and Causes of the Miscarriage of the *Augustino* Expedition.

*P; 23.*

The Party did not stop here; for on the 4<sup>th</sup> of *November* an Act pass'd, and was sign'd by the Governour, and the Deputies above-nam'd; entitl'd, *An Act for establishing Religious Worship in this Province, according to the Church of England; and for*

## The History of Carolina.

*the erecting of Churches for the Publick Worship of God, and also for the Maintenance of Ministers, and the building convenient Houses for them.*

Which Act Mr. Archdale acquaints us, notwithstanding its splendid Gloss, favour'd of a persecuting Spirit, and of a haughty Dominion over the Clergy it self; for they set up a High Commission Court, giving them Power to place and displace Ministers, and act much in the Nature of the High Commission Court erected by King James II. in England. These Commissioners were Sir Nathaniel Johnson, Thomas Broughton, Esq; Col. James Moor, Nicholas Trott, Esq; Col. Robert Gibbes, Job How, Esq; Ralph Izard, Esq; Col. James Risbee, Col. George Logan, Lieut. Colonel William Rhet, William Smith, Esq; Mr. John Stroude, Mr. Thomas Hubbard, Richard Beresford, Esq; Mr. Robert Seabrook, Mr. Hugh Hicks, John Ashby, Esq; Capt. John Godfrey, James Serurier, alias Smith, Esq; and Mr. Thomas Barton.

It will not be improper to give a Character of this James Serurier, who has been mightily employ'd by the present Government in Carolina; and we cannot do it better, than in using the same Words Mrs. Blake, Mother of the Proprietary Joseph Blake, Esq; writes to the Lords Proprietaries. *Towards the Satisfaction of the Augustino Debt, an Act was contriv'd, for forcing the Currency of Bills of Credit to the Value of 6000 l. These Bills were declar'd current in all Payments, and the Refuser of them sueable in double the Value of the Sum refus'd; whereby the boldest Stroke has been given to the Property of the Settlers in this Province, that ever was known in any Country not govern'd by Arbitrary Power. And the bad Consequences of this forc'd Currency, in relation to Trade with Strangers, are so great, that they can scarcely be express'd. But there has nothing of this been weigh'd by your Lordship's Deputies here, or by the pack'd Members of our Commons House of Assembly. Besides all this, the People are not satisfy'd how many Bills are truly sent abroad; and the great Concern Mr. James Smith, alias Serurier (who cheated the Scots Company of a considerable Sum of Money, and with his Keeper made his Escape from London hither) had in this Contrivance, gives a Jealousy of*

indi-

*indirect Practices.* By this the Reader understands what Inconveniencies the *Augustino* Expedition brought upon the Colony, and what sort of Persons were Promoters of this Occasional Bill in *America*. But to shew that this Faction in the Assembly had nothing less in their View, than the real Advancement of Religion, and the Church of *England*; the Reverend Mr. *Edward Marston*, Minister of that Church in *Charles Town*, was censur'd by them, for three Passages of a Sermon preach'd there by him; two of which Passages were not in the said Sermon; and that which was amounted to no more, than that the Clergy had a Divine Right to a Maintenance. They depriv'd him of his Salary settl'd on him by Act of Parliament, and of 50 *l.* besides due to him by an Act of Assembly: Tho the chief Reason was his having visited Mr. Landgrave *Smith*, when he was in Custody of a Messenger, being committed by the Commons House, and living Friendly with the Dissenters.

*Case of  
Diss. Car.  
p. 23.*

Of this Assembly the same Reverend Divine says, *They made some very odd and unjustifiable Laws, which have occasion'd great Feuds and Animosities here.* And in his Representation to the Lords Proprietaries; *Most of the late Members of Assembly have been constant Absenters from the Holy Sacrament: So 'tis no Wonder they have inserted an absurd Oath in a late Act, &c. I cannot think it will be much for the Credit and Service of the Church of England here, that such Provisions should be made, for admitting the most loose and profligate Persons to sit and vote in the making of our Laws, who will but take the Oath appointed by the late Act.* And of the High Commissioners 'tis said, *Eleven of the Twenty were never known to receive the Sacrament of the Lord's Supper.*

*See his  
Letter to  
Dr. Stan-  
hope, Part  
2. p. 57.*

*p. 62.*

*p. 63.*

And that this furious Faction were no Friends to the Church of *England* is plain, by their Delign to wrest the Ecclesiastical Jurisdiction out of the Hands of the Right Reverend Father in God, *Henry Lord Bishop of London*. Mr. *Marston* being threaten'd in Col. *Risbee's* House, *That at the next Sessions of Assembly he should see the Bishop of London's Jurisdiction abolish'd there.* And of this *Carolina* Parliament he adds further, *Our Lower House of Assembly imprison by a Vote of the House, sine die, and bid Defiance to*

*p. 67.*

P. 60. the Habeas Corpus Act, tho made in Force there by an Act of Assembly. The Governour was very cholerick with the Minister, because he had made Landgrave Smith a Visit, at the House of the Messenger; and a Bully lash'd him causelessly with his Whip, and tore his Gown from his Back. His Creatures also in the Assembly were the occasion of his Sufferings.

P. 58. If I am accus'd of being partial in representing this Matter, I answer, that besides the Memorials publish'd by the Agent of Carolina, Mr. Archdale's Tract and others, I have diligently inquir'd into the Truth of the Fact, and have not been able to learn the least hint that makes against it, or vindicates the Party that is complain'd of, and were powerfully protect'd by the Lord Granville; notwithstanding it was made out to him, that the Assembly in passing the *Occasional Bill* in Carolina, were guilty of the most notorious ill Practices, and were Men of corrupt Principles and Manners. That Bill was brought into the House the 4th of May, and carry'd so precipitately, that it pass'd the 6th, four Days before the time to which they were prorogu'd. There never were above 23 Members present, from the 26th of April to the 6th of May. There was but one more for it than against it; and of the latter many were Members of the Church of England.

Part I. p.  
38.

There's one thing very remarkable in the Act, which is the Stile: *Be it enacted, by his Excellency John Lord Granville, and the rest of the true and absolute Lords and Proprietors of Carolina, &c.* A Stile never assum'd by them till very lately. From whence we may observe how pleas'd that Faction is every where with the Despotick and Absolute Power, inso-much as to usurp the Name, when they cannot obtain any thing more. *The Case of the Dissenters in Carolina*, is so full of Irregularities in the Course of this Affair, that we must refer the Reader to it. We have taken the most material, and now are to see what was done in *England* relating to this Matter.

The principal Merchants in *London* trading to *Carolina*, drew up a Petition to the Lord Granville against passing this Act, or to order its Repeal. Which Petition they lodg'd with Mr. Boone, the Agent

gent of *Carolina*, who solicited the Palatine seven Weeks before he could prevail to have a Board of Proprietaries call'd.

Mr. *Archdale*, one of the Proprietaries, oppos'd the ratifying the Bill against the Dissenters at the Board, and with such solid Reasons, that 'tis amazing to find the Palatine make this short Answer to all of 'em: *Sir, you are of one Opinion, and I am of another; and our Lives may not be long enough to end the Controversy: I am for this Bill, and this is the Party that I will head and countenance.*

What other Tone could he have talk'd in had he been Sultan of *Carolina*? Mr. *Boon* pray'd he might be heard by Council. The Palatine reply'd, *What Business has Council here? It is a prudential Act in me; and I will do as I see fit. I see no harm at all in this Bill, and am resolv'd to pass it.* He should have added, *Car tel est notre Plaisir.*

As all Methods to procure Justice from this Board were ineffectual, in the Case of the Dissenters, the same were they in Mr. *Marston's* Case, and the Abuses he met with from the Party, the Lord *Granville* was resolv'd to head and countenance. And what that Party was in *England*, and how they have seen their unreasonable Attempts baffl'd and exploded, is too well known, to need any Remembrance here.

The Bill which occasion'd all the Complaints in *Carolina*, having pass thus illegally and arbitrarily, the Dissenters in this Province being notoriously known P. 12. to be above two thirds of the People, and the richest and soberest among them, according to Mr. *Marston's* Evidence, 'twas not likely that they would suffer themselves to be insulted and persecuted without seeking Redress. The very Assembly who pass the Bill, about half a Year afterwards pass another to repeal it, when the House was full; but it was lost in the Upper House; and the Governour, in great Indignation, dissolv'd the Commons House, by the Name of the Unsteady Assembly. P. 41. The Society for propagating the Gospel in *America* and elsewhere, meeting in *St. Paul's* Church, taking the Act for the Establishing of Religious Worship, &c. into Consideration, resolv'd not to send or support any Missionaries

naries in that Province, till the said Act, or the Clause relating to the Lay Commissioners, was annull'd.

There being no Hopes of any Redress of the Grievances the Inhabitants of this Colony suffer'd in *Carolina*, nor from the Lords Proprietaries in *England*, they resolv'd to bring the Matter before the House of Lords in *England*, not doubting but to have entire Justice done them by that august Assembly; where the Language of their Palatine was never heard from the Throne, at least in this Reign, or the last; both which are the Glory of the *British* Annals.

Mr. *Boon* was not only impower'd by the principal Inhabitants of *Carolina* to act as their Agent, but he was assisted in his Agency by several eminent Merchants of *London*, who sign'd the Petition to the House of Lords; as Mr. *Micaiah Perry*, Mr. *Joseph Paice*, Mr. *Peter Renew*, Mr. *Christopher Fowler*, and others.

The Effect of which was, after a full hearing of the Cause at the Lord's Bar, that most Honourable House, who have done such great Things for the Liberties of *England*, voted an Address to the Queen, in behalf of the Province of *Carolina*: But the Reader cannot be better satisfy'd, than to have it in their own Words; by which the State of the Case will be best seen.

The Hum-  
ble Ad-  
dress of the  
Right Ho-  
nourable  
the Lords  
Spiritual  
and Tempo-  
ral in Par-  
liament as-  
sembled,  
Die Mar-  
tii 12,  
1705.

‘ The House having fully and maturely weigh’d  
‘ the Nature of these two Acts, found themselves  
‘ oblig’d in Duty to Your Majesty, and in Justice to  
‘ your Subjects in *Carolina* (who by the Express  
‘ Words of the Charter of Your Royal Uncle King  
‘ *Charles II.* granted to the Proprietors, are declared  
‘ to be the Liege People of the Crown of *England*,  
‘ and to have Right to all the Liberties, Franchises,  
‘ and Privileges of *Englishmen*, as if they were born  
‘ within this Kingdom: And who by the Words of  
‘ the same Charter, are to be subject to no Laws,  
‘ but such as are consonant to Reason, and as near as  
‘ may be to the Laws and Customs of *England*) to  
‘ come to the following Resolutions.



‘*First*, That it is the Opinion of this House, that the Act of the Assembly of *Carolina*, lately pass’d there, and since sign’d and seal’d by *John Lord Granville*, Palatine, for himself, and for the Lord *Cartaret*, and the Lord *Craven*, and Sir *John Colliton*, four of the Proprietors of that Province, in order to the ratifying it, entitled, *An Act for the establishing Religious Worship in this Province, according to the Church of England, and for the erecting of Churches for the publick Worship of God, and also for the Maintenance of Ministers, and building convenient Houses for them.* So far forth as the same relates to the establishing a Commission for the displacing the Rectors or Ministers of the Churches there, is not warranted by the Charter granted to the Proprietors of that Colony, as being not consonant to Reason, repugnant to the Laws of this Realm, and destructive to the Constitution of the Church of *England*.

‘*Secondly*, That it is the Opinion of this House, That the Act of the Assembly of *Carolina*, entitled, *An Act for the more effectual Preservation of the Government of this Province, by requiring all Persons that shall hereafter be chosen Members of the Commons House of Assembly, and sit in the same, to take the Oaths, and subscribe the Declaration appointed by this Act, and to conform to the Religious Worship in this Province, according to the Rites and Usage of the said Church,* lately pass’d there, and sign’d and seal’d by *John Lord Granville*, Palatine, for himself, and the Lord *Craven*, and also for the Lord *Cartaret*, and by Sir *John Colliton*, four of the Proprietors of that Province, in order to the ratifying of it, is founded upon Falsity in Matter of Fact, is repugnant to the Laws of *England*, contrary to the Charter granted to the Proprietors of that Colony, is an Encouragement to Atheism and Irreligion, destructive to Trade, and tends to the depopulating and ruining the said Province.

*May it please your Majesty ;*

*We your Majesty's most dutiful Subjects, having thus humbly presented our Opinion of these Acts, we beseech your Majesty to use the most effectual Methods to deliver the said Province from the arbitrary Oppressions, under which it now lies; and to order the Authors thereof to be prosecuted according to Law.*

To which Her Majesty was graciously pleas'd to answer :

*I thank the House, for laying these Matters so plainly before me; I am very sensible of what great Consequence the Plantations are to England, and will do all that is in my Power to relieve my Subjects.*

It appear'd to the House, that some of the Proprietors absolutely refus'd to join in these Acts. This Matter being referr'd to the Lords of the Committee of Trade, they examin'd into it; and finding all the Fact charg'd upon the Promoters of these Bills, true, represented to Her Majesty, the 24th of *May*, 1706. That the making such Laws is an Abuse of the Power granted to the Proprietors by their Charter, and will be a Forfeiture of such Power. They further humbly offer'd to her Majesty, That she would be pleas'd to give Directions for re-assuming the same into her Majesty's Hands by *Scire Facias*, in her Majesty's Court of *Queen's-Bench*. Which Representation was sign'd by the Right Honourable the Lord *Dartmouth*, the Honourable *Robert Cecil*, Esq; Sir *Philip Meadows*, *William Blathwayte*, Esq; *Matthew Prior*, Esq; and *John Pollexfen*, Esq;

On the 10th of *June*, her Majesty was pleas'd to approve of the said Representation; and accordingly having declar'd the Laws mention'd therein to be NULL and VOID, did Order, That for the more effectual Proceeding against the said Charter, by way of *Quo Warranto*, Mr. Attorney, and Mr. Solicitor General do inform themselves fully concerning what may be most necessary for effecting the same.

Thus

Thus did our most Gracious Sovereign hear the Cry of the Oppress'd, right the Innocent, and do Justice on the Oppressor. For no Distance of Country can put any of her Subjects out of her Protection; nor no Difference of Opinion (provided they are kept within the Bounds of Duty and Religion) prevent her favouring alike all her People, and doing her utmost to make them all happy, as the infinite God has made her Reign to her self, and her Empire, in a distinguish'd manner.

The Assembly which pass'd these two memorable Acts were dissolv'd in the following Year, and a new one summon'd to meet at *Charles Town*. At the Election, *Craven* and *Berkley* Counties were so streightned by the Qualifying Act, that they had not 20 Men to represent them, unless they would choose a Dissenter, or a Man not fit to sit in the Assembly. Nineteen of the Party against the *Occasional Bill* were chosen, and one Mr. *Job How* was elected by the Interest of the *Goosecreek* Faction, a Branch of the former. The *French*, who were Free-holders, voted for them, being induc'd to it, by a *Frenchman's* being set up for a Candidate. They also procur'd Masters of Ships, particularly Cap. *Cole*, who lay in the Harbour, to vote on their Side. This Election was made in the Town, and the Faction gave out, An Assembly was chosen, who would repeal the Church-Act, and not pay the *Augustino* Debt, threatening if they did, the House and Town should quickly be too hot to hold them.

In *Colliton* County, there were but 14 Men would qualify themselves: Therefore none of the Dissenters appear'd, and there were but 10 Votes out of 200 that appear'd at the Election. The 10 Electors voted for 14 Candidates, and the Sheriff return'd 10 that had the Majority of Votes.

On *Jan. 2. 1705.* the Members met, but not enough to make a House, and choose a Speaker. Mr. *Stephens*, one of the Members, ask'd Mr. *How*, in the Governour's Presence, to attend; but he refus'd. Before Night the House was compleat, and waited on the Governour, and ask'd if he would direct them to choose a Speaker? He answer'd, he thought 'twas too late; but if they would venture they must do it  
with

with speed, for he was not well, and 'twould endanger his Health to sit up. So they presently chose Mr. *Seabrook*, and presented him to the Governour; who approv'd of the Choice.

The next Day the House met, the Speaker in the Chair, and the Members were call'd upon to qualify themselves: Six did, and three more were ready to do it, and Debates arising about Qualifying, the House adjourn'd.

The House meeting again, a Report was, as 'tis said, industriously spread, that the Members had forfeited 50 *l.* a Man for adjourning before they were qualify'd. Mr. *How* and Mr. *Wigginton* attended in their Places, and offer'd to qualify themselves; but Mr. *Bornwell* coming with a Message, the House waited on the Governour; who spoke to this Purpose:

### GENTLEMEN,

*You are building on a wrong Foundation, and then the Superstructure will never stand; for you have dissolv'd your selves by adjourning, before there was a competent Number of Members to adjourn, and I cannot dissolve you if I would, you not being a House. All this I know very well, as being my self many Years a Member of the House of Commons in England; and therefore as I am Head, I would advise you to go back no more to the House, but go every Man about his own Business: For if you should persist in settling and making Laws, besides the incurring the Penalties of the Act, the Laws would be of no Force, &c.*

The Speaker refus'd to return to the Chair, and the Members dispers'd. The Governour and Council disowning the Assembly, Mr. *Wigginton* declar'd, 'Twas his Opinion the House was dissolv'd. But their Dissolution was aggravated, by the Pleasure the Government took in making them *Felo de se*, their own Murderers.

Then another Assembly was call'd, the Choice of which was carry'd on with greater Violence than the former. *Job How*, Esq; was chosen Speaker, and the Members for the most Part qualify'd themselves

elves according to the Qualifying Act. The Faction had not then heard of the Proceedings against them in *England*, which indeed were not come to a Conclusion. They continu'd their Irregularities as if they were the most innocent Men in the Province, and the only true Patriots. They pass'd an Act for their Continuance two Years after the Death of the present Governour, or the Succession of a new one: The Reason is told us in the Preamble, *Whereas the Church of England has of late been so happily establish'd among them, fearing by the Succession of a new Governour, the Church may be either undermin'd, or wholly subverted, to prevent that Calamity befalling them, he it enacted, &c.* Mr. Job How, Speaker of the Assembly, dying some time after, Col. *William Rhett* was choien in his Place. But what has been since done in these Affairs, we know not more than in general, that the two Acts have been repeal'd, and the Party who drove things on with such Fury, have entirely lost their Credit, and that the Proprietaries are oblig'd to them for the Cause now depending; wherein if they are cast, the Government of the Province will be forfeited to the Crown. They may thank themselves for it, or at least their late Palatine the Lord *Granville*; for since the foregoing Pages were written, that Lord dy'd.

How things may be manag'd now, is not difficult to be foreseen, from the good Intelligence between the Persons we have just mention'd; and the Fall of this Faction is a terrible Example to all Colonies, not to let any Prejudice or Passion hurry them on to do things which they cannot answer to their Superiours in *England*.

'Tis not yet known who will be *Palatine* of this Province, there being some Disputes in the Succession. 'Tis suppos'd the Lord *Craven* will succeed the late Lord *Granville*, who assign'd his Propriety to the Duke of *Beaufort*.

## C H A P. II.

*Containing a Geographical Description of Carolina; as also an Account of the Climate, Soil, Product, Trade, First Inhabitants, &c.*

**T**IS very well known, that the Province of *Carolina* has been a long time divided into two separate Governments, the one call'd *North Carolina*, and the other *South Carolina*; but the latter being the more populous, goes generally under the Denomination of *Carolina*, and as such we have treated of it in the foregoing Pages. The Proprietaries of *North Carolina* are the Proprietaries of *South Carolina*; tho' the Governours are different, in other things they are exactly the same. And we shall put them together in the Geographical Description; as also in our Account of the Climate, Soil, Product, Trade, first Inhabitants, &c.

*Carolina*, as has been said, contains all the Coast of *North America*, between 31 and 36 Degrees of Northern Latitude. Its Breadth is not to be computed, King *Charles II.* having granted the Proprietors all the Land Westward in a direct Line from the above-mention'd Degrees to the South Seas. 'Tis in Length three hundred Miles. Its Situation is most convenient for Trade, the Coast pleasant and safe, not stormy, or frozen in the Winter.

As to the Climate, Mr. *Archdale* says of it, *Carolina is the Northern Part of Florida, viz. from 29 Degrees to 36 ½, and is indeed the very Center of the habitable Part of the Northern Hemisphere; for taking it to be habitable from the Equinoctial to 64 Degrees, the Center of Carolina lies in about 32. which is about the middle of 64, lying Parallel with the Land of Canaan, and may be called the temperate Zone comparatively, as not being pester'd with the violent Heats of the more Southern Colonies, or the Extremes and violent Colds of the more Northern Settlements. Its Production answers the Title of Florida, quia Regio est Florida. Carolina North and*

Def. of  
Car. p. 6.

and South is divided into 6 Counties; of which two are in *North Carolina*, *Albemarle* and *Clarendon*; and four in *South*, *Craven*, *Berkley*, *Colliton*, and *Cartarett* Counties.

The first is *Albemarle* County, to the North, bordering on *Virginia*. 'Tis water'd by *Albemarle* River; and in this Part of the Country lies the Island *Roanoke*, where *Philip Amidas* and *Arthur Barlow*, whom Sir *Walter Rawleigh* sent to *Virginia*, landed. This County may be said to belong to *Virginia*, as *New England*, &c. did, which justifies King *Charles's* Grant. When *Carolina* was first settled, *Albemarle* was more planted than any of the other Counties, and consisted of near 300 Families. But the Plantations upon *Ashley* River in time grew upon it so much, that most of the Planters here remov'd thither. This River is full of Creeks on both Sides of it, which for Breadth deserve the Name of Rivers, but they do not run far into the Country. At *Sandy Point*, it divides it self into two Branches, *Noratoke* and *Notaway*; and in the North Point lives an *Indian* Nation, call'd the *Mataromogs*. Next to *Albemarle* is *Pantegoe* River; between them is *Cape Hattoras*, mention'd in the History of *Virginia*. Next to it is *Neuse* River. The *Coranines*, an *Indian* Nation, inhabit the Country about *Cape Look-out*.

Next to *Albemarle* is *Clarendon* County; in which is the famous Promontary, call'd *Cape Fear*, at the Mouth of *Clarendon* River, call'd also *Cape Fear* River. Hereabouts a Colony from *Barbadoes* formerly settled. The *Indians* in this Neighbourhood are reckon'd the most barbarous of any in the Province. The next River is nam'd *Waterey* River, or *Winyann*, about 25 Leagues distant from *Ashley* River: 'Tis capable of receiving large Ships, but inferior to *Port Royal*, nor is yet inhabited. There's another small River between this and *Clarendon* River call'd *Wingon* River, and a little Settlement honour'd with the Name of *Charles Town*, but so thinly inhabited, that 'tis not worth taking Notice of. We come now to *South Carolina*, which is parted from *North* by *Zantee* River. The adjacent County is call'd,

*Craven County*; it is pretty well inhabited by *English* and *French*; of the latter there's a Settlement on *Zantee River*, and they were very instrumental in the irregular Election of the *Unsteady Assembly*. The next River to *Zantee* is *Sewee River*; where some Families from *New England* settled: And in the Year 1706. the *French* landing there, they were vigorously oppos'd by this little Colony; who beat off the Invaders, having forc'd them to leave many of their Companions dead behind them. This County sends 10 Members to the Assembly. We now enter

*Berkley County*, passing still from North to South. The Northern Parts of this Shire are not planted, but the Southern are thick of Plantations, on Account of the two great Rivers, *Cooper* and *Ashley*. On the North Coast, there's a little River call'd *Bowal River*; which, with a Creek, forms an Islands, and off of the Coasts are several Isles, nam'd the *Hunting-Islands*, and *Sillivants Isle*. Between the latter and *Bowal River*, is a Ridge of Hills; which, from the Nature of the Soil, is call'd the *Sand-Hills*. The River *Wando* waters the North-West Parts of this County, and has several good Plantations upon it, as Col. *Daniel's* on the South Side, and Col. *Dearsby's* lower down on the North. It runs into *Cooper River* near the latter, and they both unite their Streams with *Ashley River* at *Charles Town*. The late Assembly enacted, That a Church should be built on the South-East of *Wando River*, and another upon the Neck of Land, lying on the North-West of *Wando*, but we do not see that this Act was obey'd.

*Charles Town*, the Capital of this Province, is built on a Neck of Land between *Ashley* and *Cooper Rivers*, but lying most on *Cooper River*, having a Creek on the North Side, and another on the South. It lies in 32 Deg. 40 Min. N. Lat. 2 Leagues from the Sea. This the only free Port in the Province, which is a great Discouragement to it, and a vast Injury to Trade: 'Tis fortify'd more for Beauty than Strength. It has 6 Bastions, and a Line all round it. Towards *Cooper River* are *Blake's Bastion*, *Granville Bastion*, a Half Moon, and *Craven Bastion*. On the South Creek are



are the Pallifades, and *Ashley* Bastion; on the North a Line; and facing *Ashley* River are *Colliton* Bastion, *Johnson's* Cover'd Half-Moon, with a Draw-bridge in the Line, and another in the Half-Moon. *Cartarett* Bastion is next to it. If all these Works are well made, and can be well mann'd, we see no Reason why they should not defend as well as beautify the Town; which is a Market Town, and thither the whole Product of the Province is brought for Sale. Neither is its Trade inconsiderable; for it deals near 1000 Miles into the Continent: However, 'tis unhappy in a Bar, that admits no Ships above 200 Tuns. Its Situation is very inviting, and the Country about it agreeable and fruitful: The High-ways extremely delightful, especially that call'd *Broad-way*, which for three or four Miles make a Road and Walk, *so pleasantly green, that, says my Author, I Archd. believe no Prince in Europe, by all his Art, can make* p. 9. *so pleasant a Sight for the whole Year.* There are several fair Streets in the Town, and some very handsome Buildings; as Mr. Landgrave *Smith's* House on the Key, with a Draw-bridge and Wharf before it; Col. *Rhett's* on the Key; also Mr. *Boon's*, Mr. *Loggan's*, Mr. *Schinking's*, and 10 or 12 more, which deserve to be taken Notice of. As for publick Edifices, the Church is most remarkable: 'Tis large and stately enough; but the Number of the Professors of the *Anglicane* Worship encreasing daily, the Auditory begin to want Room, and another Church. This is dedicated to St. *Philip*; and by the Act, which appointed the High Commission Court, 'twas enacted, *That Charles Town, and the Neck between Cooper and Ashley River, as far up as the Plantation of John Bird, Gent. on Cooper River, inclusive, is, and from henceforth shall for ever be a distinct Parish, by the Name of St. Philip's in Charles Town;* and the Church and Cæmetry then in this Town were enacted to be the Parish Church and Church-Yard of St. *Philip's* in Charles Town: Mr. *Williams* was the first Church of England Minister in Carolina: A Person, of whom since Mr. *Marston* has said so much, we shall say no more. One Mr. *Warmel* was sent over after him. The Reverend Mr. *Samuel Marshal* was the first establish'd Minister at Charles Town; and his

Successor was Mr. *Edward Marston*, the present Rector of *St. Philips*; he came over seven Years ago. Mr. *Kendal*, Minister of *Bermudas*, was invited to this Colony; and Mr. *Corbin*, an Acquaintance of Mr. *Marston's*, coming by chance, he got him settl'd in this Province.

See Mr. Marston's Letter to Dr. Stanhope, Part 2. of Case of Dissent. p. 58.

The Society for propagating the Gospel sent over one Mr. *Thomas*, to convert the Roman Catholick Indians; but he did not obey his Mission. On the contrary, 'twas by his Influence on some Men of Interest here, that Mr. *Kendal* was displac'd: Upon which he went distracted.

Mr. *Warmell* was also us'd so ill by him, that he also dy'd distracted; and Mr. *Corbin* was forc'd to leave the Colony, by the causeless Quarrels of the Inhabitants; in which the Dissenters had the least Hand. 'Twas by their Procurement that the 150*l.* a Year, &c. was settled on the Orthodox Minister of this Church. The Church stands near the cover'd Half Moon.

There's a Publick Library in this Town, and a Free-School has been long talk'd of: Whether founded or not, we have not learn'd. The Library is kept by the Minister for the time being. It owes its Rise to Dr. *Thomas Bray*; as do most of the *American* Libraries, for which he zealously sollicitated Contributions in *England*.

Not far off, by *Cartarett Bastion*, is the Presbyterian Meeting-house; of which Mr. *Archibald Stobe* is Minister. Between *Colliton* and *Ashley* Bastion is the Anabaptist Meeting-house, Mr. *William Screven* Minister. The French Church is in the Chief Street: Besides which there is a Quakers Meeting-house, in the Suburbs of it, properly so call'd, on the other Side of the Draw-bridge, in the Half Moon, toward *Ashley* River.

To the Southward is the Watch-house; and the most noted Plantations in the Neighbourhood of *Charles Town*, are *Ferguson's*, *Underwood's*, *Gilbertson* and *Garnett's*.

We may see by this Description that the Town is full of Dissenters, and would flourish more, were not the Inhabitants uneasy under the Government there. For one may imagine they who fled from

England, to avoid Persecution, cannot be well pleas'd to meet with it in *America*; nor to cross the *Atlantic*, to live under Oppression abroad, while their Relations and Friends at home enjoy all the Blessings of a peaceful and gentle Administration.

There are at least 250 Families in this Town, most of which are numerous, and many of them have 10 or 12 Children in each; in the whole amounting to about 3000 Souls.

In *Charles Town* the Governour generally resides, the Assembly sit, the Courts of Judicature are held, the Publick Offices kept, and the Buliness of the Province is transacted.

The Neck of Land between *Cooper* and *Ashley* Rivers is about 4 Miles over; and the Banks of both of these are well planted. The chief Settlements on *Cooper* River are *Mathew's*, *Green's*, *Gray's*, *Starkey's*, *Grimboll's*, *Dickeson's*, and *Izard's*; the latter on *Turky Creek*. About a Mile from thence is the Mouth of *Goose-Creek*, which is also very well planted. Here Mr. *William Corbin* above-mention'd liv'd, and had a Congregation of Church of England Men; and one of the Churches propos'd to be built by the Assembly which pass'd the two fatal Acts we have spoken of, was to be erected.

Mr. *Thomas*, a Missionary sent by the Society before-mention'd, settled here, by Capt. *How's* and Col. *Moor's* Sollicitations; as did Mr. *Stackhouse*, and the Reverend Dr. *Lejau*.

Mr. *Marston* in his Letter to the Reverend Dr. *Stanhope*, accuses Mr. *Thomas* of being the Occasion of the ill Usage that made Mr. *Kendal* run distracted. He complains he never had University Education, saying, *That the best Service your Society can do this young Man, Mr. Thomas, is, to maintain him a few Years at one of our Universities, where he may better learn the Principles and Government of the Church of England, &c. and some other useful Learning, which I am afraid he wants.*

Sir *John Yeaman's*, and Mr. *Landgrave Bellerger's* Plantations are here; as also Col. *Gibbs's*, Mr. *Schinking's*, and *Colliton's* Company. Between this and *Back River* are Col. *Moor's* and Col. *Quarry's* Plantations.

*Back River* falls into *Cooper River*, about 2 Miles above *Goosecreek*, and its Western Branch a little higher. Here another Church was propos'd to be built. The most noted Plantations are Capt. *Comming's*, and Sir *Nathaniel Johnson's*, bordering on the Barony of Mr. *Thomas Colliton*.

We must now take a View of *Ashley River*, where we first meet with Mr. Landgrave *West's* Plantation on one side, and Col. *Gibbs's* on the other. Mr. *Baden's* over against Col. *Godfrey's*; Mr. *Simond's* opposite to Dr. *Trevillian's*; and Mr. *Pendarvis's* to Mr. *West's*, Mr. *Colliton's* to Mr. *Marshal's*, and others, almost contiguous.

This Part of the Country belongs to the Lord *Shaftsbury*. On the South-West of *Ashley River* is the great *Savana*. One of the Churches intended to be erected in this County, was to have been built on *Ashley River*.

*Dorchester* is in this Shire, bordering on *Colliton* County. 'Tis a small Town, containing about 350 Souls. There's a Meeting-House belonging to the Independants, the Pastor of which is Mr. *John Lord*. Next to it is *Stono River*, which divides *Berkley* from *Colliton* County. To which we must now proceed, observing only that *Berkley* County sends ten Members to the Assembly. The same does,

*Colliton* County; which *Stono River* waters, and is join'd by a Cut, near Mr. *Blake's* Plantation, to *Wadmoolaw* River. The North-East Parts of this Division of the Province is full of Indian Settlements; and the *Stono*, and other Rivers, form an Island, call'd *Boones* Island, a little below *Charles Town*, which is well planted and inhabited. The two chief Rivers in this County are *North Edistow*, and *South Edistow*. At the Mouth of the latter is Col. *Paul Grimboll's* Plantation; and for two or three Miles up the River, the Plantations are thick on both sides, as they continue for three or four Miles higher on the North-side, and branching there, the River meets with the *North Edistow*.

Two Miles higher is *Wilton*, by some call'd *New London*, a little Town, consisting of about 30 Houses. Landgrave *Moreton*, Mr. *Blake*, Mr. *Boon*,

*Boon*, Landgrave *Axtel*, and other considerable Planters, have Settlements in this Neighbourhood, which is Sir *John Colliton's* Precinct.

A Church was to have been built on the South-side of the *Stono*, had that Project gone on, and the Act taken effect. This County has 200 Freeholders, that vote in Election for Parliament Men. There's an Orthodox Church in this Precinct, of which Mr. *Williams* is Minister.

*Cartarett* County is not yet inhabited, but is generally esteem'd to be the most fruitful and pleasant Part of the Province; this and *Colliton* County are distinguish'd from the other by the Name of the *Southward*. In it is the great River *Cambage*, which joining with the River *May*, forms with the Sea Island *Edelano*.

The Country upon the River *May* was inhabited by the *Westoes*, an Indian Nation already mention'd. There's a pleasant Lake and Valley in it; and the first English that came to *Carolina*, thought of settling hereabouts; but the Indians advis'd them to the contrary, because the Harbour of *Port Royal* was the finest in *Florida*, and would have tempted the Spaniards to disturb them.

The Scots settled here, under the Lord *Cardross*, but were soon forc'd to abandon their Settlements, as has been elsewhere hinted. *Port Royal* River lies 20 Leagues from *Ashley* River, to the South, in 31 Degrees, 45 Minutes, North Latitude. It has a bold Entrance, 17 Foot low Water on the Bar. The Harbour is large, commodious, and safe for Shipping, and runs into a fine fruitful Country, preferable to the other Parts of *Carolina*. It spends its self, by various Branches, into other large Rivers. This Port is not 200 Miles from *Augustino*, and would be a great Curb to the Spaniards there, where their Settlement is not very considerable.

Next to it is the River of *May*, and then *San Matteo*; which is the last of any Note in the English *Florida*, a Name this Province highly deserves.

The Air of this Country is healthy, and Soil fruitful, of a sandy Mould, which near the Sea appears ten times more barren than it proves to be. There's a vast Quantity of Vines in many Parts on the Coasts,

bearing abundance of Grapes, where one would wonder they should get Nourishment. Within Land the Soil is more mix'd with a blackish Mould, and its Foundation generally Clay, good for Bricks.

Its Products are the chief Trade of the Inhabitants, who send it abroad, according as the Market offers; and 'tis in demand in *America* or *Europe*. But the chief Commerce from hence is to *Jamaica*, *Barbadoes*, and the *Leward* Islands. Yet their Trade to *England* is very much encreas'd; for notwithstanding all the Discouragements the People lie under, seventeen Ships came last Year, laden from *Carolina*, with Rice, Skins, Pitch, and Tar, in the *Virginia* Fleet, besides stragling Ships.

Its principal Commodities are Provisions, as Beef, Pork, Corn, Pease, Butter, Tallow, Hides, Tann'd Leather, Hoghead and Barrel Staves, Hoops, Cotton, Silk; besides what they send for *England*. Their Timber Trees, Fruit Trees, Plants, and Animals, are much the same with those in *Virginia*; in which History may be seen a large Account of them: But since Mr. *Archdale* has been a little particular in his, and has added a short Description of the Natives, &c. we will communicate what he says to the Reader.

P. 9.

'Tis beautify'd with odoriferous Woods, green all the Year; as Pine, Cedar, and Cypress. 'Tis naturally fertile, and easy to manure. Were the Inhabitants industrious, Riches would flow in upon them; for I am satisfy'd, a Person with 500*l.* discreetly laid out in *England*, and again prudently manag'd in *Carolina*, shall in a few Years live in as much Plenty, as a Man of 300*l.* a Year in *England*; and if he continues careful, not covetous, shall increase to great Riches, as many there are already Witneses, and many more might have been, if Luxury and Intemperance had not ended their Days.

As to the Air, 'tis always serene, and agreeable to any Constitutions, as the first Planters experienc'd. There's seldom any raging Sickness, but what is brought from the Southern Colonies; as the late Sickness was, which rag'd, *A. D.* 1708. and carry'd off

‘ off abundance of People in *Charles Town*, and other  
‘ Places.

‘ Intemperance also has occasion’d some Distempers.  
‘ What may properly be said to belong to the Country  
‘ is, to have some gentle Touches of Agues and Fe-  
‘ vers in *July* and *August*, especially to new Comers. Ibid.  
‘ It has a Winter-Season, to beget a new Spring.  
*It was there*, adds my Author, *at twice, five Years, and P. 7.*  
*had no Sickness, but what I got by a careless violent*  
*Cold; and indeed I perceiv’d that the Fevers and Agues*  
*were generally gotten by Carelessness in Cloathing, or In-*  
*temperance.*

‘ Every thing generally grows there that will grow  
‘ in any part of *Europe*, there being already many  
‘ sorts of Fruits, as Apples, Pears, Apricocks, Necta-  
‘ rines, &c. They that once tast of them, will despise  
‘ the watry washy Tast of those in *England*. There’s  
‘ such Plenty of them, that they are given to the  
‘ Hogs. In 4 or 5 Years they come from a Stone to  
‘ be bearing Trees.

‘ All sorts of Grain thrive in *Carolina*, as Wheat,  
‘ Barley, Peas, &c. And I have measur’d some  
‘ Wheat-Ears 7 or 8 of our Inches long. It produces  
‘ the best Rice in the known World, which is a good  
‘ Commodity for Returns home; as is also Pitch, Tar,  
‘ Buck, Doe, Bear Skins, and Furs, tho the last not  
‘ so good as the Northern Colonies.

‘ It has already such Plenty of Provisions, that it in  
‘ a great measure furnishes *Barbadoes, Jamaica, &c.*  
‘ There are vast Numbers of wild Ducks, Geese, Teal;  
‘ and the Sea and Rivers abound in Fish. That which  
‘ makes Provisions so cheap, is the Shortness of the  
‘ Winter: For having no need to mow for Winter  
‘ Fodder, they can apply their Hands in raising other  
‘ Commodities.

‘ The Rivers are found to be more navigable than  
‘ was at first believ’d; and ’twas then prudently con-  
‘ triv’d, not to settle on the most navigable; but on  
‘ *Ashley* and *Cooper* River, those Entrances are not so  
‘ bold as the others; so that Enemies and Pirates have  
‘ been dishearten’d in their Designs to disturb that  
‘ Settlement.

‘ The new Settlers have now great Advantages  
‘ over the first Planters, since they can be sup-  
‘ ply’d

ply'd with Stocks of Cattle and Corn at reasonable Rates.

I shall conclude this Account of *Carolina*, with an Extract of a Letter from thence, from a Person of Credit; in whose Words I communicate it to the Publick: He speaks of the *Southward*.

The many Lakes we have up and down breed a Multitude of Geese, and other Water-Fowl. All along *Port Royal River*, and in all this part of *Carolina*, the Air is so temperate, and the Seasons of the Year so regular, that there's no Excess of Heat or Cold, nor any troublesome Variety of Weather: For tho' there is every Year a kind of Winter, yet it is both shorter and milder than at *Ashley* or *Cooper River*; and passes over insensibly, as if there was no Winter at all. This sweet Temperature of Air, causes the Banks of this River to be cover'd with various Kinds of lovely Trees; which being perpetually green, present a thousand Landships to the Eye, so fine, and so diversify'd, that the Sight is entirely charm'd with them. The Ground is very low in most Places near the River; but rises gradually, at a distance, with little Hills, adjoining to fruitful Plains, all cover'd with Flowers, without so much as a Tree to interrupt the Prospect. Beyond these are beautiful Vales, cloath'd with green Herbs, and a continual Verdure, caus'd by the refreshing Rivulets that run through them. There are a great many Thickets, which produce abundance of Simples. The Indians make use of them for the Cure of their Diseases. There are also Sarsaparilla, Cassia Trees, Gumms, and Rosin, very good for Wounds and Bruises; and such a prodigious Quantity of Honey, which the Bees make every where, that the Store of it is not to be exhausted. Of this they make excellent Spirits, and Mead as good as *Málaga Sack*. The Bees swarm five or six times. There's a kind of Tree, from which there runs an Oil of extraordinary Virtue, for Curing Wounds. And another Tree, which yields a Balm, thought to be scarce inferiour to that of *Mecca*.

Silk is come to a great Improvement here, some Fami-



Families making 40 or 50 Pound a Year, and their Plantation Work not neglected, their little Negro Children being serviceable in feeding the Silk-Worms. And we must do Sir *Nathaniel Johnson* the Justice, to own he has been the principal Promoter of this Improvement, as also of Vineyards. He makes yearly 3 or 400 *l.* in Silk only.

But 'tis objected, Since the Climate is so proper, since Grapes are so plentiful, and the Wine they make so good, why is there not more of it? Why do we not see some of it?

To which I answer, That the Inhabitants either think they can turn their Hands to a more profitable Culture, or impose upon us in their Reports; for I would not think them so weak, as to neglect making good Wine, and enough of it, if they could, and thought it worth their while.

They manufacture their Silk with Wool, and make Druggets. The French Protestants have set up a Linnen Manufacture; and good Romalls are made here.

A French Dancing-Master settling in *Craven* County, taught the Indians Country-Dances, to play on the Flute and Hautboit, and got a good Estate; for it seems the Barbarians encourag'd him with the same Extravagance, as we do the Dancers, Singers, and Fiddlers, his Countrymen.

Tho we have said enough of the *Virginian* Indians, who are much the same with the *Carolinian*; yet since we find Mr. *Archdale* speaks of them in particular, let the Reader see what he has said of 'em.

‘ Providence was visible in thinning the Indians,  
 ‘ to make Room for the English. There were two  
 ‘ potent Nations, the *Westoes* and *Saramas*, who  
 ‘ broke out into an usual Civil War before the Eng-  
 ‘ lish arriv'd; and from many Thousands reduc'd  
 ‘ themselves to a small Number. The most cruel  
 ‘ of them, the *Westoes*, were driven out of the Pro-  
 ‘ vince; and the *Saramas* continu'd good Friends,  
 ‘ and useful Neighbours to the English. It pleas'd  
 ‘ God also to send unusual Sicknesses among them;  
 ‘ as the Small-Pox, &c. The *Pemlico* Indians in P. 2, 3.  
 ‘ North Carolina, were lately swept away by a Pesti-  
 ‘ lence; and the *Caranine*, by War. The Natives  
 are

P. 7.

‘are somewhat tawny, occasion’d chiefly by oiling  
 ‘their Skins, and by the naked Rays of the Sun. They  
 ‘are generally freight body’d, comely in Person,  
 ‘quick of Apprehension, and great Hunters; by which  
 ‘they are not only very serviceable, by killing Deer,  
 ‘to procure Skins for Trade with us; but those that  
 ‘live in Country-Plantations procure of them the  
 ‘whole Deer’s Flesh, and they will bring it many Miles  
 ‘for the Value of about 6 d. and a wild Turkey of  
 ‘40 Pound, for the Value of 2 d.

They have learn’d one of their worst Vices of the English, which is, Drinking; and that occasions Quarrels among them, one of which we have mention’d in the time of Mr. Archdale’s Government. As to what he would excite us, to their Conversion to Christianity, ’tis a Project which, like a great many other very good ones, we rather wish than hope to see effected.

Mr. Thomas was sent to instruct the *Tammosees* in the Christian Religion, and had an Allowance of 50 l. a Year from the before-mention’d Society, besides other Allowances: But finding it an improper Season, his Mission is respited; the Reason is, those Indians revolted to the English from the Spaniards; and not being willing to embrace Christianity, ’tis fear’d they would return to their old Confederates, if any means were made use of to that purpose.

This Country is in a very flourishing Condition; the Families are very large, in some are 10 or 12 Children; and the Number of Souls in all is computed to be 12000. The Children are set to Work at 8 Years old. The ordinary Women take care of Cows, Hogs, and other small Cattle, make Butter and Cheese, spin Cotton and Flax, help to sow and reap Corn, wind Silk from the Worms, gather Fruit, and look after the House. ’Tis pity this People should not be easy in their Government; for all their Industry, all the Advantages of the Climate, Soil, and Situation for Trade, will be useless to them, if they live under Oppression; and *Pensylvania* will have no occasion to complain; that she tempts away her Inhabitants; being a new Beauty, a fairer, and consequently a powerful Rival.

We shall conclude this History and Account of *Carolina*, with a List of the present Proprietaries, and chief Officers of this Colony.

<i>William Lord Craven,</i>	}	Proprietaries.
<i>Henry Duke of Beaufort,</i>		
The Honourable <i>Maurice</i>		
<i>Ashley, Esq;</i> Brother to		
the Earl of <i>Shaftsbury,</i>		
<i>John Lord Cartaret,</i>		
<i>Sir John Colliton, Baronet,</i>		
<i>Joseph Blake, Esq;</i>	}	Counsellors.
<i>John Archdale, Esq;</i>		
<i>Nicholas Trott, Esq;</i>		

*Sir Nath. Johnson,* Governour, Sallery 200 l. a Year.

<i>Col. James Moor,</i>	}	Counsellors.
<i>Col. Thomas Broughton,</i>		
<i>Col. Rob. Gibbs,</i>		
<i>Mr. Nich. Trott,</i>		
<i>Mr. ----- Ward,</i>		
<i>Mr. Hen. Noble,</i>	j	

Speaker of the Assembly, *William Rhett, Esq;*  
 The Secretary, ——— *Ward, Esq;* His Sallery 50 l.  
 a Year.

The Chief Justice, *Mr. Trott, 60 l.*

The Judge of the Admiralty-Court, *Col. James Moor, 40 l.*

Surveyor General, ——— *How, Esq;* 40 l.

Attorney General, *Col. James Moor, 60 l.*

Receiver General, the same, 60 l.

Naval Officer, *Mr. Trott, 40 l.*

Collector of the Customs, *Col. Thomas Broughton.*

Agent for the Colony in *England, Mr. Joseph Boone.*

---



---

T H E  
**H I S T O R Y**  
 O F  
*H U D S O N ' S - B A Y .*

C O N T A I N I N G

An Account of its Discovery and Settlement, the Progress of it, and the present State ; of the *Indians*, Trade, and every thing else relating to it.

**T** WAS in the Reign of Queen *Elizabeth*, that all the *English* Dominions on the Continent of *America* were discover'd, except *Hudson's* Streights ; which being the most Northerly, should have been treated of first, and put at the Head of the other Settlements ; but the *French* have a large Dominion between the *English* at *Hudson's Bay*, and those at *New England* : And besides there being no Towns nor Plantations in this Country, but two or three poor Forts to defend the Factories, we thought we were at Liberty to place it where we pleas'd, and were loath to let our History open with the Description of so miserable a Wilderness, and so wretched a Colony. For as rich as the Trade to these Parts have been or may be, the way of Living is such, that we cannot reckon any Man happy, whose Lot is cast upon this Bay.

In

In the Year 1576. Cap. *Martin Frobisher* made his first Voyage for the Discovery of a Passage to *China* and *Cathay* by the North-West; and on the 12th of *June* he discover'd *Tierra de Labrador*, in 63 Degrees 3 Minutes, and enter'd a Streight, which is call'd by his Name. On the 1st of *October* he return'd to *England*. In the following Year, he went a second time on the same Discovery, came to the same Streight, and us'd all possible Means to bring the Natives to Trade, or give him some Account of themselves; but they were so wild, that they only study'd to destroy the *English*. Cap. *Frobisher* stay'd here till Winter drew on, and then he return'd to *England*. He made the same Voyage the following Year, and with the like Success.

Six Years afterwards, *A. D.* 1585. *John David* sail'd from *Dartmouth* on the same Adventure, came into the Latitude of 64 Degrees 15 Minutes, and proceeded to 66 Degrees 40 Minutes. In the Year ensuing, he ran to 66 Degrees 20 Minutes, and coasted Southward again to 56 Degrees. Sailing thence in 54 Degrees, he found an open Sea tending Westward, which he hop'd might be the Passage so long sought for; but the Weather proving tempestuous, he return'd to *England*. In *October*, the next Year, he did the same.

After which there were no more Adventures this way, till the Year 1607. when Cap. *Henry Hudson* discover'd as far as 80 Degrees 23 Minutes: At the Mention of which, the Reader will almost freeze as the Writer does; for that Country is so prodigiously cold, that Nature is never impregnated by the Sun; or rather, her barren Womb produces nothing for the Subsistence of Man. In 1608. he set out again; and, having added little to his former Discoveries, return'd. Two Years after which, *A. D.* 1610. he again undertook a Voyage to find out the North-West Passage, proceeded 100 Leagues farther than any Man had done before him, till he could not go forward for Ice and Shoal Water; and finding himself imbay'd, he resolv'd to winter there. In the Spring, *A. D.* 1611. pursuing a further Discovery, he and seven more of his Company were seiz'd, the rest of his Men put into an open Boat, and committed

mitted to the Mercy of the Waves and Savages. By one or the other of which he perish'd, dearly purchasing the Honour of having this large Streight and Bay call'd after his Name.

We know 'tis pretended, that a *Dane* made the Discovery of this Streight, and that he call'd it *Christiana*, from the King of *Denmark*, *Christiern* the IVth. then reigning. But Cap. *Hudson* was the Man who discover'd it to the *English*, and who indeed first sail'd so near the Bottom of the Bay, as he did within a Degree or two.

The same Year that he dy'd, Sir *Thomas Button*, at the Instigation of Prince *Henry*, pursu'd the same Discovery. He pass'd *Hudson's* Streights, and leaving *Hudson's-Bay* to the South, settled above 200 Leagues to the South-West, and discover'd a great Continent, by him call'd *New-Wales*. He winter'd at the Place afterwards call'd *Port Nelson*, carefully search'd all the Bay, from him call'd *Button's-Bay*, and return'd to *Digg's* Island.

In 1516. Mr. *Baffin* enter'd Sir *Thomas Smith's* Bay, in 78 Degrees, and return'd despairing to find any Passage that way.

Thus we see all the Adventures made to the North West, were in Hopes of passing to *China*; but that is a Discovery as latent as the Philosophers Stone, the petual Motion, or the Longitude.

In 1631. Cap. *James* sail'd to the North-West, and roving up and down in those Seas, arriv'd at *Charlton* Island, where he winter'd in 52 Degrees, much beyond *Hudson*, *Button*, and *Baffin*. Cap. *Fox* went out this Year on the same Account, but proceeded no further than *Port Nelson*.

The Civil Wars in *England* put Discoveries out of Mens Heads; the Bold had other Work cut out for them; and we hear of no more such Adventures till the Year 1667. when *Zachariah Gillam*, in the *Nonfuch* Ketch, pass'd thro *Hudson's* Streights, and then into *Baffin's* Bay to 75 Degrees; and thence Southward into 51 Degrees; where in a River, afterwards call'd Prince *Rupert's* River, he had a friendly Correspondence with the Natives, built a Fort, nam'd it *Charles Fort*, and return'd with Success.

The Occasion of *Gillam's* going was this: Monsieur *Radison* and Monsieur *Gooselier*, two *French-men*, meeting with some Savages in the Lake of *Assimponals*, in *Canada*, they learnt of them that they might go by Land to the Bottom of the Bay, where the *English* had not yet been. Upon which they desir'd them to conduct them thither, and the Savages accordingly did it. The two *French-men* return'd to the upper Lake the same way they came, and thence to *Quebec*, the Capital of *Canada*; where they offer'd the principal Merchants to carry Ships to *Hudson's-Bay*, but their Project was rejected. Thence they went to *France*, in hopes of a more favourable Hearing at Court; but after presenting several Memorials, and spending a great deal of Time and Money, they were answer'd as they had been at *Quebec*, and their Project look'd upon as Chimerical. The King of *England's* Ambassador at *Paris*, hearing what Proposals they had made, imagin'd he should do his Country good Service, in engaging them to serve the *English*, who had already Pretences to the Bay: So he perswaded them to go for *London*; where they met with a favourable Reception from some Men of Quality, Merchants, and others, who employ'd *Gillam* before-mention'd, a *New England* Captain, in the Voyage; and *Radison* and *Gooselier* accompanying, they arriv'd at the Bottom of the Bay, and succeeded as we have hinted already.

When *Gillam* return'd, the Adventurers concern'd in fitting him out, apply'd themselves to King *Charles* the II. for a Patent; who granted one to them and their Successors, for the Bay call'd *Hudson's-Bay*, and the Streights call'd *Hudson's-Streights*. The Patent bears Date the 2d. of *May*, in the 22d. Year of that King's Reign, *A. D.* 1670.

The first Proprietors or Company, call'd the *Hudson's-Bay Company*, were,

Prince *Rupert*.  
 Sir *James Hayes*.  
 Mr. *William Young*.  
 Mr. *Gerard Weymans*.

Mr. *Richard Cradock*.  
 Mr. *John Letton*.  
 Christopher *Wrenn*, Esq;  
 Mr. *Nicholas Hayward*.

## The History of Hudson's Bay.

The Bay lies from 64 Degrees North Latitude to 51 Degrees, and is 10 Degrees, or 600 Miles in Length.

Before we proceed any further in the History, it will not be improper to give an Account of the Country, Climate, Product, Trade, and Inhabitants.

The Mouth of the Streights, which is in about 61 Degrees North Latitude, is 6 Leagues over. At the Mouth is an Island, call'd *Resolution*. *Charles* Island, *Salisbury* Island, and *Nottingham*, are in the Streights, and *Mansfield* Island in the Mouth of the Bay.

*Hudson's* Streights, which lead to the Bay, are about 120 Leagues in Length; the Land on both Sides inhabited by Savages, of whom we have little or no Knowledge. The South Coast is known by the Name of the *Tierra Labarador*, the North by as many Names as Men of several Nations have been there, and pretended to the Discovery of it. On the West Side of the Bay, the *English* made a Settlement, built a Fort at Port *Nelson*, and all that Country goes by the Name of *New South Wales*. The Bay here is call'd *Button's*; and *Hudson's-Bay*, which is broadest in this Place, may be near 130 Leagues broad.

On the other Shoar, or the Coast of *Labarador* lie several Islands, call'd the *Sleepers* Isles, and the *Baker's Dozen*. The Bottom of the Bay, by which we understand all that Part of it from Cape *Henrietta Maria*, in *New South Wales*, to *Redonda*, below Prince *Rupert's* River, is about 80 Leagues long, and much of one Breadth all the way, being between 40 and 50 Leagues over.

Here are several Islands; to which the first Adventurers gave the Names of some Great Men in *England*, or some that employ'd them; as Lord *Weston's* Island, Sir *Thomas Roe's* Island, *Charlton* Island, and others. The two opposite Shores are call'd the *East Main* and *West Main*. The former is *Labarador*, and the latter *New South Wales*. The Continent at the Bottom of the Bay is by the *French* pretended to be Part of *New-France*; and indeed to cross the Country from St. *Margaret's* River, which runs



runs into the River of *Canada*, to *Rupert's River*, at the Bottom of *Hudson's-Bay*, is not above 150 Miles.

At *Rupert's River*, the *English* built their first Fort, which they call *Charles Fort*. They never had any Towns or Plantations here, and probably never will. They live within their Forts in little Houses, or Hutts, wherein the Builders consider nothing but to defend them from the Cold and Rains, tho they are not so much disturb'd by the latter as by the former.

There's an Island about 5 or 6 Leagues from the *West Main*, call'd the *Little Rocky Isle*, it being a meer Heap of Rocks and Stones, with some small Brush-Wood growing upon it. 'Tis suppos'd to overflow with great North-West Winds, which make a High-Tide all over the Bay. In this Isle is plenty of Gulls and Sea Swallows. About 3 Miles from the South South-East Part of the Island, lies a dangerous Reaf of Sand, which is dry at Low-Water.

*Charlton* Island is a light white Sand, cover'd over with a white Moiss, full of Trees, Juniper and Spruce, tho not very large. This Isle affords a beautiful Prospect to such as make it in the Spring, after a long Voyage of 3 or 4 Months, in the most dangerous Seas in the World, occasion'd by the vast Mountains of Ice, which drive in the Bay and Streights; against which, if Ships happen to strike, they are dash'd in Pieces as certainly as if they ran against Rocks: For indeed they are Rocks congeal'd, or rather petrify'd by the Violence of the continual Frosts.

To see one Day the Shoar on the *West Main* bare, the Mountains cover'd with Snow, and Nature looking like a Carcass frozen to Death; and the next to behold *Charlton* Island spread with Trees, and the Branches making as it were a green Tuft of the whole, is a Surprize, that must give the greatest Pleasure after the Fatigues of an intollerable Winter Voyage.

The Air even at the Bottom of the Bay, tho by the Latitude 'tis nearer the Sun than *London*, being but in 51 Degrees, is excessive cold for 9 Months, the other three Months very hot, but on a North-West Wind.

The Soil on the *East Main*, as well as the West, bears no manner of Grain. Some Fruits, Gooseberries, Strawberries, and Dew Otter-berries, grow about Prince *Rupert's* River.

The Commodities for Trade here, are Guns, Powder, Shot, Cloth, Hatchets, Kettles, Tobacco, &c. which the *English* exchange with the *Indians* for Furrs, Beavers, Martin, Fox, Moose, and other Peltry; and the Curious, who have any Taste of Commerce, will not think it a Digression to insert a Standard of Trade, which the *Hudson's-Bay Company* fix'd about 25 Years ago; and by which may be seen what Advantage they made of this Traffick. This Paper being put into my Hands, among others relating to the Affairs of the Company, is as follows.

The S T A N D A R D how the *Company's* Goods must be barter'd in the *Southern Part* of the *Bay*.

Guns.	One with the other 10 good Skins; that is, Winter Beaver; 12 Skins for the biggest sort, 10 for the mean, and 8 for the smallest.
Powder.	A Beaver for half a Pound.
Shot.	A Beaver for four Pounds.
Hatchets.	A Beaver for a great and little Hatcher.
Knives.	A Beaver for 6 great Knives, or 8 Jack Knives.
Beads.	A Beaver for half a Pound of Beads.
Lac'd Coats.	Six Beavers for one good Lac'd Coat.
Plain Coats.	Five Beaver Skins for one Red Plain Coat.
Coats.	For Women, Lac'd, 2 Yards, 6 Beavers.
Coats.	For Women, Plain, 5 Beavers.
Tobacco.	A Beaver for one Pound.
Powder- Horns.	} A Beaver for a large Powder-Horn and two small ones.
Kettles.	
Looking-Glasses and Combs.	Two Skins.

'Tis plain by this Standard the Company got prodigioussly, and had they traded much, their Auctions might have been now 300 per Cent. as they were once; but their Returns were small, and their Charges great:

great: Ten thousand Beavers in all their Factories was one of the best Years of Trade they ever had, besides other Peltry.

As to the *Indians*, their Manners, Customs, Language, Government, and Religion, they are the same with the *Canadians*; and *La Hontan* has describ'd them very naturally, excepting that he has rais'd Nature, and made her too polite in this barbarous Clime, where Barbarity her self is in the Height of her Empire.

The *Indians* about *Rupert's River*, and other Places in the Bay, are more simple than the *Canadians*, who have had longer Commerce with the Europeans. They are generally peaceable, and not given to quarrel either with themselves or others, except the *Nodways*, a wild barbarous People on the Borders of *Hudson's Streights*; who sometimes in slight Parties make Incurfions on the other *Indians*, and, having knock'd 8 or 10 on the Head, return in Triumph.

The *Indians* of certain Districhs, which are bounded by such and such Rivers, have each an *Okimah*, as they call him, or Captain over them, who is an Old Man, consider'd only for his Prudence and Experience. He has no Authority but what they think fit to give him upon certain Occasions. He is their Speech-maker to the *English*; as also in their own grave Debates, when they meet every Spring and Fall, to settle the Disposition of their Quarters for Hunting, Fowling, and Fishing. Every Family have their Boundaries adjusted, which they seldom quit, unless they have not Success there in their Hunting, and then they join in with some Family who have succeeded.

Their Notions of Religion are but very slender. They say, there are two *Mumetoës* or Spirits, the one sends all the Good things they have, and the other all the bad. Their Worship consists in Songs and Dances at their Feasts, in Honour of the *Mumetoës* that have favour'd them: But if they are sick or famish'd, they hang some little Bawble, which they set a Value upon, on the Top of a Pole, near their Tent, to pacify the Spirit offended, as they conceive.

Let the Learned say all the fine Things that Wit, Eloquence, and Art, can inspire them with, of the Simplicity of pure Nature, the Beauty and Innocence; these Wretches are an Instance, that this Innocence is downright Stupidity, and this pretended Beauty a Deformity, which puts Man, the Lord of the Creation, on an equal Foot with the Beasts of the Forrest.

The History of *Hudson's Bay* will not afford us much Matter. The Settlements are too inconsiderable, to deserve much Pains to be taken about them. What we know of them is as follows.

Charles Baily, Esq; *Baily*, Esq; Governour: With whom went Mr. Governour *Radison*, the Frenchman before-mention'd, and 10 or 20 Men, who were to stay on the Place; his Residence being at *Rupert River*, where a mean Fort has been built.

Mr. *Baily* appointed Mr. *Thomas Gorst* to be his Secretary, and order'd him to keep a Journal of their Proceedings there, which is now in my Custody; but the Events it contains are too trivial to be remember'd: what are most curious I shall report; and the Reader must excuse me, if they are of no more Importance: They serve to give him an Idea of an Infant Colony, in one of the rudest Parts of the World.

The chief Indian near the Fort had the Name of Prince given him. Two other Indians were call'd *Peter* and the *Chancellor*; who with their Wives and Families came to the Governour, to beg Subsistence, declaring they could kill nothing, and were almost starv'd. For if these Barbarians could meet with no Game, they had no Meat.

Thus we see in what a miserable Condition these English there were like to be, if Supplies did not come regularly from *England*. Mr. *Baily* having fed the Prince, the Chancellor, his *Cocamish*, or Wife, and the rest of them, sent them up the Falls a fishing, and follow'd them in his *Canoo*, to hunt up in the Country; but could meet with no Game, except 2 Moose, and no People to trade with. These Moose are but indifferent Meat; however the Air is sharp, to make it relish as well

as Venison, and 'twas accordingly very well-come.

Some Days afterwards the Indians return'd. The Prince brought a young Deer: The Chancellour and his Wife some Fish and Moose. The greatest Part of the Autumn Fowl here, are Geese, of which there's then Plenty, and they begin to come about the Beginning of *September*, a sure sign that the People must take their Leave of Summer, and prepare for a long Winter of near forty Weeks.

The English had now worse Hutts than afterwards, and no Covering for them but Moose Skins. There was at this time a Factory at *Port Nelson*, where Captain *Gooselier* arriv'd in *August*, 1673. He search'd the River for Indians, but met with none. He saw several *Wigwams*, where they had lately been, and suppos'd them to be gone up the Country. He saw also the Relicts of Sir *Thomas Button's* Ship; and one of his Company, Mr. *Cole*, brought home a piece of Shot, a piece of her Bulk-head, and a small piece of Cable, which had lain there about 60 Years.

This Captain was order'd to search for *Severn* River, but could not find it, tho' 'twas in the old Draughts of this Bay.

About the Beginning of *October* the Geese fly away to the Southward; a terrible Sight to the poor Europeans in the Bay; for by that they know the hard Weather is approaching, and begin to provide Wood for Winter before the Snow falls.

Now Mr. *Baily* and his little Colony fell to patching up their Cabbins, and prepare for the Enemy; and they had nothing to fear but the Season. He sent a Sloop to *Point Comfort*, between *Rupert* River and *Charlton* Island, to kill Seals, to make Oil for their Lamps, they having no Candles, and the Nights being long.

About the 10th of *October* the Ice begins to congeal on the Shores; but often warm Weather comes after that, and thaws it. The 23d of *October* several Indians came to the Fort to trade; and among others, one from *Quebec*. In one Night the Snow was a Foot deep, and by the 6th of *November* the River was frozen over.

About the middle of the Month Partridges come, of which they kill'd 5, as white as Snow. The English that were there, diverted themselves, while the Weather permitted, with killing Partridges; but truly there seems not to have been much Plenty of them, for four Men, in a Weeks time, kill'd but 36. They Fowl'd for them about *Peter's River*, and *Frenchmans River*; the one above, and the other below *Rupert's*. But in *December* and *January* the Frosts were so severe, they could not stay out. The Governour's Boys Feet and Face were spoil'd by the Frost, in catching of Partridges.

The Snows in the Woods, when at the deepest, are 7 or 8 Foot; sometimes they do not exceed 4 Foot, as in the Year 1673. and then least Moose is to be had. The 25th of *January*, 3 Indians brought Beaver to the Fort, and a little fresh Meat. They reported, that as they pass *Moose River*, about 10 Days Journey from *Rupert's*, they saw some dead Bodies of Indians, which they suppos'd to be *Onachanoes*, most of that Nation being destroy'd by the *Nodwayes*, who were then about *Moose River*; and, as they threaten'd, intended to visit the English in the Spring; they were accordingly as good as their Words. The 1st of *February* there was such a Change of Weather, that it rather thaw'd than froze. The English with living on Salt-Meats, were all down with the Scurvy in this Month: For tho they continu'd to catch Partridges, there were so few caught; they went but a very little way among them.

Several Indians came in *March*, and built their *Wigwams* at the East End of the Fort, intending to stay there all Winter, that they might be ready for Trade in the Spring. The Nation that took up their Quarters near the Fort were the *Cuscididabs*; and the King sent Mr. *Baily* word, he would come to him speedily. The Governour on the 23d of *March*, accompany'd by *John Abraham*, and others, travell'd on the Ice to *Point Comfort*, where were some Indian Tents, to buy what fresh dry'd Meat he could; the Store at the Fort being almost spent.

About the 20th of *March* it began to thaw; and the *Nodwayes* still threatenng the English with War, the Governour prepar'd every thing necessary in the  
Fort

Fort for his Defence. On the 25th of *March*, 6 Men, as Ambassadors, came from King *Cuscudidah*, to notify his Approach, and that he would be at the Fort next Day; which he made good, and was troubled that the Governour was absent. He brought a Retinue with him, but little Beaver, the Indians having sent their best to *Canada*.

The English at the Fort stood on their Guard, and Mr. *Cole* commanded them in the Governour's Absence; for whom the King sent 2 Indians. And the 31st of *March*, the Governour return'd, with a small Supply of *Moose* Flesh. On the 1st of *April*, the Geese, the Promise of the Spring, begin to return again, and prodigious Quantities were caught.

All this while the Indian King stay'd at the *Wigwams*, near the Fort; and the reason of it was, They were apprehensive of being attack'd by some Indians, whom the French Jesuits had animated against the English, and all that dealt with them. The French us'd many Artifices to hinder the Natives trading with the English; they gave them great Rates for their Goods, and oblig'd Mr. *Baily* to lower the Prices of his, to oblige the Indians, who dwelt about *Moose* River, with whom they drove the greatest Trade.

The French, to ruin their Commerce with the Natives, came and made a Settlement, not above 8 Days Journey up that River, from the Place where the English traded. 'Twas therefore debated, whether the Company's Agents should not remove from *Rupert's* to *Moose* River, to prevent their Traffick being intercepted by the French.

On the 3d of *April*, 1674. a Council of the principal Persons in the Fort was held, where Mr. *Baily*, the Governour, Capt. *Gooselier*, and Capt. *Cole*, were present, and gave their several Opinions. The Governour inclin'd to remove. Capt. *Cole* was against it, as dangerous; and Capt. *Gooselier* for going thither in their Bark to trade, when the Indians belonging to King *Cuscudidah* were gone a hunting, and there was no fear of the Fort's being surpriz'd.

The Indians went to building their Wigwams near the Fort, and rais'd their *Wauscohegein*, or Fort, so near the English, that the Palifadoes join'd. One of those Barbarians being jealous of his Wife, and finding her in the Fort, pull'd out a Hatchet, which he had hidden under his Coat, and gave her a desperate Wound in the Head; but she did not die of it. The Indian fearing the Governour wou'd punish him for striking in the Fort, fled to the Woods. Upon which Mr. *Baily* order'd that no Indian, but King *Cuscudidah*, and his chief Courtiers, should be admitted into the Fort, and a Watch was set upon the Gate.

As the Ice grew rotten and melted, the Indians who ventur'd on the Rivers fell frequently in; but they all swam like Ducks, and seldom or never were any of them drown'd. The great Thaw began about the 20th of *April*, and then all the English having spent their Beer, and Winter-Liquor, return'd to drinking of Water.

Geese and Swans were now to be had, and that supply'd in some measure their Want of Provision. The Governour having been cheated by the Indians at *Point Comfort*, in his *Moose Flesh*, went thither, and oblig'd them to make Satisfaction.

On the 20th of *May*, 12 Indians, Subjects to King *Cuscudidah*, came in seven Canoos, and the King meeting them, conducted them to the Fort, where they told him, there would be few or no *Upland* Indians come to trade that Season, the French having perswaded them to come to *Canada*: However Mr. *Baily* order'd the Sloop to be got ready, and resolv'd to go up the River.

Upon the Arrival of this new Company, among whom was the King's Brother, a Feast was made; the Manner of which was this; They all sat down together, and one Man, a Kinsman of the King's, broke the Meat and Fat in small Pieces, according to the Number of Men there. After a short Speech made by the King, the Substance of which was, for them to take Courage against their Enemies, and other Stories. The Company shouted, and then the Man who broke, distributed the Meat about to them, they crying, *Ob! Ho!* as much as to say, *I thank*



thank you. 'Tis incredible, to tell the Abundance of fat Beaver, Moose Flesh, and Fat, they eat together with the Broath, and Fat as black as Ink, which they drink. Then every Man had a small Piece of Tobacco distributed to him, and they all fell to Smoaking. Some afterwards danc'd, some sung, and a Man beat a Drum, which was a Skin put over a Kettle, and lac'd a-thwart. They continue this commonly all Night, and when they go home, carry what Meat is left to their Sqwaws, it being very rare for them to admit the Women to their Feasts.

On the 22d of *May*, the Indians at their *Wigwams*, near the Fort, had a *Powwow*, or sort of Conjuring; which is thus, There's a small Tower built, with *Wyth* Sticks, about 8 Foot high, the Top being open; but the rest cover'd very close with Skins, that none may see into it. In the Night, the Man that *Powwows* goes into the Tower; the rest sit nigh it, and in their Places ask him several Questions, which in a manner they know already; as, When any Strangers will be here? The *Powwower* guesses at the time, and answers accordingly. The *Maneto*, or their God, told them, the *Nodways* would come down upon them e're long, and advis'd them to be upon their Guard, as also against the *Mistigooses*, or English.

They *Powwow* often, and upon several Occasions. If it happens not as they expected it would, then the *Maneto* is *Muchocauwan*, or very bad; and if it falls out to their Desires, then *Maneto* is *Moruchfice*, or good. When they kill a Moose, their *Maneto* is *White* and *Good*. When they kill none, then he is *Black* and *Naught*. They *Powwow* very much when they celebrate any Marriages. Every Man has commonly two Wives, whom they keep in great Subjection, and make 'em do all Slavery; as draw *Sledds*, cut Wood, make Fires, and dress Moose Hides. The Men only hunt, and kill the Game: The Women fetch the Beast that is kill'd, and take Care to preserve the Flesh.

The next Day the Governour, and some English and Indians arm'd, went down to the Bottom of the Bay, to *Frenchmens* River, to seek for the *Nodways*, but could meet with none.

At the latter end of *May* the Geese go to the Northward, to breed. On the 27th, about 50 Men, Women and Children, came in 22 Canoes, to trade, but brought little or no Beaver with them. They were of the Nation call'd *Pishhapocanoes*, near a-kin to the *Eskeimoes*, and both alike a poor beggarly People: By which we may perceive the French ran away with the best of the Trade.

The Governour having got every thing ready for a Voyage to *Moose River*, sent Capt. *Gooselier*, Capt. *Cole*, Mr. *Gorst*, my Author, and other English Indians, to trade there. They got about 250 Skins; and the Captain of the *Tabittee* Indians inform'd them, the French Jesuits had not brib'd the Indians, not to deal with the English, but to live in Friendship with the Indian Nations in League with the French. He blam'd the English for trading with such pitiful Nations, as the *Cuscudidahs* and *Pishhapocanoes*, advising them to settle at *Moose Sebee*, and the *Upland* Indians would come down and trade with them. The Reason they got no more Peltry now, was, because the Indians thought *Gooselier* was too hard for them, and few would come down to deal with him.

My Author, in this Voyage, pass'd by *Robinson* Island, *Willow* Island, and saw several *White Whales*. The Musketoos are extreemly troublesome in *May* and *June*, especially after Rains. The *Nodways* coming down within a Quarter of a Mile of the Fort, the Alarm was given the English and Indians; but the Enemy were afraid to come farther; and Mr. *Baily* with a Party of both, pursu'd them in their Retreat, but could not come near enough to do any Execution.

This Fright being over, Mr. *Baily* sail'd himself for *Moose Sebee*, and brought home 1500 Skins; the *Shechittawams*, 50 Leagues from that River, having come to trade with him. By the 24th of *June* all the Indians had left their Wigwams near the Fort, and were gone abroad to hunt and trade, some with the English, and some by themselves.

The Governour undertook a Voyage to discover *Shechittawam* River; and thence intended to coast along to *Port Nelson*, where as yet was no Fort. In the mean time Mr. *Gorst*, who was left Deputy at the Fort, sent a Yaul, and four Men well arm'd,  
up

up the *Nodways* River, which, as high as they could go for the *Falls*, was 5 Miles broad, full of small Islands and Rocks; in which Geese breed.

By the Beginning of *August*, the English that remain'd at the Fort had almost spent all their Provisions, their Powder and Shot, and began to be in mortal dread of starving. They kill'd Ducks, Teal, and Plover, and some of them were always out, for their Lives depended upon it.

After about 2 Months Voyage, Mr. *Baily* return'd, and gave this Account of his Voyage in the Sloop. On the 16th of *July* he sail'd from *Moose River*, and arriv'd at *Schettawam* River on the 18th, where no Englishman had been before. He stay'd there till the 21st, but could meet with little or no Beaver.

'Tis a fine River, and a good Channel, to the N. W. in 52 Deg. N. L. He treated with the King, and his Son made them a Promise to come with a Ship and trade with them the next Year. In return, they assur'd him, they would provide Store of Beaver, and bring the *Upland* Indians down.

The 21st he set sail towards *Cape Henrietta Maria*, and saw a great Island, stretching N. N. W. and S. S. E. distant about 14 Leagues from the Mouth of *Shechittawam* River. The Island being two Days Journey in Circumference, Indian Paddling, which they account to be 30 Leagues; 'twas nam'd *Viner's* Island.

The 23d, upon a Point, as he and his Crew were sailing along Shore, they spy'd a great Smoak; they stood in for it, and found 7 distress'd Indians there. This Point lay in 52 Deg. 40 Min. The Governour took them in, and gave them Passage to a small River, call'd *Equon*, 100 Leagues to the Southward of it; where they saw the Bodies of some Indians dead on the Ground. There had been a great Mortality among them, and several were starv'd to Death for want of Food; this Country being such a miserable Wilderness, that it affords not sufficient Sustenance for the wretched Inhabitants.

On the 27th of *July*, the Sloop ran upon Ice, and had like to have founder'd. Their Pilot was a *Was-shahoe*, or *New Severn* Indian, and 'twas reported, that

that he had two Rows of Teeth; but he hated so much to see the Compass, that he was very troublesome to the Crew; so the Governour order'd him to be put ashore.

The Indians on *New Severn River* are as poor as the *Eiskemoes*; and indeed all the Northward Indians are more beggarly and brutal than the Southward. The Governour understanding by some *Washahoe* Indians, there was no Beaver to be had, and that the Sea beyond the Cape was full of Ice, resolv'd to return, neither he nor his Company having eaten any thing in two Days, but a few sodden Pease and Oat-Meal.

In their Return they were forc'd a-shore upon *Charlton Island*, where they lay 2 or 3 Days in Distress, and at last got off, with the loss of several Necessaries. After he had return'd to the Fort, on the 30th of *August*, a Canoo arriv'd at *Rupert's River*, with a Missionary Jesuit, a Frenchman, born of English Parents, attended by one of *Cuscudidah's* Family, a young Indian. The Frier brought a Letter to Mr. *Baily* from the Governour of *Quebec*, dated the 8th of *October*, 1673. For the Priest should have been at *Rupert's River* several Months before, but that he was stop'd by the Indians. The Governour of *Quebec* desir'd Mr. *Baily* to treat the Jesuit civilly, on account of the great Amity between the two Crowns; and Mr. *Baily* resolv'd to keep the Jesuit till Ships came from *England*.

He brought a Letter also for Capt. *Gooselier*, which gave Jealousy to the English of his corresponding with the French; his Son-in-law liv'd at *Quebec*, and had accompany'd the Priest part of his Way, with 3 other Frenchmen, who being afraid to venture far among strange Indians, return'd.

The *Tabittee* Indians being within the *Hudson's Bay* Company's Patent, 'twas an Encroachment for the French to trade with them; the Jesuit confess'd they did it. Mr. *Baily* cloath'd him, the Indians having rob'd him; and entertain'd him with great Kindness. The Priest resolving to return to *Europe* in an English Ship, did not like another Journey of 400 Miles Length, thro' many barbarous Nations, over Land, and a Country almost impassable.

The English were frequently alarm'd with Reports of Incurfions from the *Nodways* and *Moose River* Indians, whose Quarrel with him, was their selling too dear. The Governour, to prevent being surpriz'd, order'd all their Merchandize to be put aboard a Bark that was left with them, and went to fish and fowl at *Peter's River*; but got little Fowl, and their Fishing-Tackle began to want Supplies. 'Twas now the 11th of *September*, and so long had these poor Men liv'd in this Desart, holding a precarious Being by their Guns and Fishing Tackle. Their Patience was at last spent, and the Governour declar'd, if he did not hear from *England* in 3 Days time, he would return home aboard the before-mention'd Bark.

On the 17th they were all to depart for *Point Comfort*, to stay there till the 22d, and then make the best of their Way for *England*. For later than the 22d of *September*, no Ships had ever arriv'd: All the Flower and Bread they had left, did not make above 300 Pound. They had but 2 Barrels of good Pease, and 30 Geese in Pickle, to victual their Bark with for their Voyage; and having but a very little Powder in the Store-house, they despair'd of killing much more Game.

In this deplorable Condition were they, when the Jesuit, Capt. *Gooselier*, and another Papist, walking downwards to the Sea-side, at their Devotion, heard 7 great Guns fire distinctly. They came home in a Transport of Joy, told their Companions the News, and assur'd them 'twas true. Upon which they fir'd 3 great Guns from the Fort, to return the Salute, tho they could ill spare the Powder upon such an Uncertainty.

Next Day an Indian came, and gave them notice, that he had heard great Guns last Night at *Attisaw-yem*, or *Point Comfort*. Their Sloop was then at the Point, and they expected every Minute to have the News confirm'd.

One may imagine with what Impatience they waited. The Day was well nigh spent, and no Sloop come, which threw them all into Despair. In the Evening the Sloop appear'd in the River, but having no Ensign out, they concluded they were all lost

lost Men; and in this Extremity of Sorrow, they were soon reviv'd by the Sight of 5 Englishmen, whom they had not seen before, and from whom they understood, the *Prince Rupert*, Capt. *Gillam* Commander, was arriv'd, with the new Governour, *William Lyddal*, Esq;

Wil. Lyddal Esq; Governour The next Day the old Governour, and Mr. *Gorst*, sail'd for *Point Comfort*, where the *Shaftsbury*, Capt. *Shepherd* Commander, arriv'd also from *England*. And the new Governour's Commission and Instructions being read, all Hands set to work, to refit and load the Ships home as soon as possible.

On the 18th of *September* Mr. *Lyddal* landed, and took Possession of the Fort, the Colours flying, and Guns firing, to salute him. Mr. *Baily* deliver'd him the Patent, and after that he was no more call'd Governour. Mr. *Lyddal* finding the Season would be so far spent, before the Ships could be unloaden and loaden again, that it would be impracticable to return; after several Councils, 'twas resolv'd, they should Winter at *Rupert's River*; and Capt. *Gillam*, and Capt. *Shepherd's* Ships Crews were employ'd to cut Timber, to build Houses for them, as also a Brew-house and Bake-house in the Fort.

The Provisions they brought, fell very short of the Complement of Men that were to be fed by them. They had 30 Men to feed in the Fort, and in the Houses; and but 10 Months Bread for them, at 5 Pound of Flower a Head weekly, which was not enough to last them all the Winter at Land, and victual their Ships too. Mr. *Gorst*, who was their Store-keeper, soon brought them to short Allowance, to husband their Store, but the Men murmur'd; and Mr. *Lyddal* order'd they should have full Allowance, saying, *If we starve, we'll starve altogether.*

By this means they were reduc'd to great Streights, and forc'd to pinch harder than they needed have done, had they been good Husbands of their Bread at first.

Such was the State of this Infant Settlement, and it has not mended much since; for Want and Cold have every Year endanger'd the Lives of all that have been there.

Before we proceed in our History, we shall communicate to the Reader a small Dictionary of the Language of the *Indians* at the Bottom of the Bay, which is like the rest distinguish'd by several Dialects, but this is the *Cuscudidah's*.

<i>Arakana</i> , Bread.	<i>Pishshish</i> , a little thing.
<i>Aftam</i> , Come hither.	<i>Pastofigon</i> , a Gun.
<i>Affinne</i> , Shot.	<i>Pistofigon a hish</i> , a Pistol.
<i>Apit</i> , a Fire-Steel.	<i>Pibickeman</i> , a Jack-Knife.
<i>Arremitogisy</i> , to speak.	<i>Petta a shum. e.</i> give me a Piece.
<i>A Notch</i> , presently.	<i>Pe quish a con Gau Mowon</i> , I eat some Pudding.
<i>Chickahigon</i> , a Hatchet.	<i>Spog. m.</i> , a Pipe.
<i>Eskon</i> , a Chissel.	<i>Stenna, i.</i> , Tobacco.
<i>Manitowghigin</i> , a Red-Coat.	<i>Sorb. im. m.</i> Red-Lead.
<i>Metus</i> , Stockings.	<i>Shekahoon</i> , a Comb.
<i>Mokeman</i> , Knives,	<i>Taney</i> , Where.
<i>Mickedy</i> , or } Powder.	<i>Tinesonec. iso</i> , what do you call this?
<i>Pickow</i> ,	<i>Tequan</i> , What do you say?
<i>Mekish</i> , Beads.	<i>Tapoy</i> , that true.
<i>Moustdawbish</i> , a Flint.	
<i>No mun-nifs e to ta</i> , I do not understand you.	
<i>Owma</i> , this.	

Tho, with this, I must leave my Journal; from other good Memoirs, I shall continue the History to the present time.

Mr. Baily, who had very well discharg'd his Trust, returning to *England*, inform'd the Company fully of their Affairs; and now as they advanc'd in Reputation, so they were industrious to encrease their Trade and Settlements. They appointed a *Trader* to act under the Governour and Chiefs of the *Factories*, at other Rivers, according as they were settled.

Port *Nelson* was the next Settlement which they made, and thither they sent *John Bridger*, Esq; with the Character of Governour for the *Hudson's-Bay* Company of the *West Main*, from Cape *Henrietta Maria*, which was included in the Governour of the *East Main's* Patent.

John  
Nixon,  
Esq; Go-  
vernour.

Mr. *Lyddal* was succeeded by *John Nixon*, Esq; in whose time the Company thought of removing their chief Factory from *Rupert's River* to *Chickewan River*, as the Place most resorted to by the *Indians*.

*Charlton Island* was now frequented by the Ships bound to *Hudson's-Bay*, and made the Place of Rendezvous for all the Factors to bring their Merchandise to, and load it there aboard the Company's Ship.

John  
Bridger,  
Esq; Go-  
vernour of  
Port Nel-  
son.

In the Year 1682. Mr. *Bridger* embark'd for *Port Nelson*, where a Factory was to be establish'd, and a Fort built; but before he arriv'd, Cap. *Benjamin Gillam*, Master of a *New-England Ship*, and Son of *Port Nelson*. Cap. *Gillam*, Commander of the *Prince Rupert*, then in the Company's Service, settled at that Factory; but had not been there above 14 Days, before Mr. *Radisson* and Cap. *Gooselier*, who had deserted the *English*, arriv'd from *Canada*.

The Company having dismiss'd them their Service, these two *French-men* in Revenge procur'd some Merchants of *Canada* to undertake a Settlement there. *Gillam* was not strong enough to repel them, but he remain'd at *Port Nelson*; where 10 Days after *Radisson* and *Gooselier's* Arrival, came Mr. *Bridger*. The *French* no sooner perceiv'd he was come, but they sent aboard his Ship immediately, and commanded him to be gone, for that Mr. *Raddison* and Cap. *Gooselier* had taken Possession of the Place for the *French King* their Master.

Mr. *Bridger*, being warranted so to do by the Company's Commission, unloaded some of his Goods, and with all Hands went to Work, in order to make a Settlement.

*Raddison* continu'd at *Port Nelson*; and Mr. *Bridger* and he became very intimate: Which Intimacy lasted from *October*, 1682. to the *February* following, when *Raddison* seiz'd *Bridger* and *Gillam*, with all their People and Effects.

Having kept them some Months in a sort of Imprisonment, about *August* the *French* put several of the Company's and *Gillam's* People aboard a rotten Bark, and they were taken up by an *English Ship* near *Cape Henrietta Maria*. *Bridger* and *Gillam* they carry'd  
with



with them to *Canada*, where *Raddison* and *Gooselier* ran some of their Cargo ashoar, intending to defraud their Employers.

After which they made their Escape, and got into *France*. The Company having Notice of it, writ to him, and he to the Company, promising, if they would forgive the Injury he had done them, and employ him again, at such a Sallery, he would undertake to deliver the *French*, whom he had left there till he came again, to them, and seize all the Furs they had traded for, which would make them Satisfaction for the Wrongs he had done them. Accordingly they forgave him, employ'd him again, and he took *Port Nelson* from his Country-men. But before his Arrival *Cap. John Abraham* had been there with Supplies of Stores; and finding *Mr. Bridger* was gone, he stay'd himself, and was continu'd Governour by the Company, in 1684.

John A-  
braham,  
Esq; Go-  
vernour of  
*Port Nel-  
son*.  
Henry  
Sergeant,  
Esq; Go-  
vernour of  
*Albany  
River*.

In the preceding Year, *Mr. Nixon*, Governour of *Rupert's River*, was recall'd, and *Henry Sergeant*, Esq; made Governour. By whose Instructions we find the chief Factory was remov'd from *Rupert's* to *Moose-Sebee*, or *Chickewan* River, which has ever since been call'd *Albany* River; where a Fort was built, a Factory settled, and the Governour made it the Place of his Residence. 'Tis at the Bottom of the Bay, below *Rupert's* River. He was order'd to come every Spring, as soon as the Trade was over, to *Charlton* Island, and bring what Goods he had with him, to wait for the Arrival of the Company's Ships: From thence he was to visit the other Factories, and see that their Merchandise was sent in due time to *Charlton* Island, to attend the Ships Arrival.

The Governour of *Canada* having given the *Hudson's-Bay* Company to understand, the *French* were very much offended at their Discoveries in these Parts, *Mr. Sergeant* was order'd to be careful that he was not surpriz'd by them.

There is an Island in the Bottom of the Bay, call'd *Hay's* Island, where a Factory had been settled. This Isle and *Rupert's* River were near the *French*, *Albany* being more to the Southward; and of these Factories the Company were most apprehensive that their Enemies would endeavour to dispossess them.

We perceive by these Instructions, that their Servants in the Bay had been very unfaithful to them, and Interlopers invaded their Privileges. They appointed Mr. *Hugh Verner* to be chief at *Rupert's River*, and Mr. *George Geyer* and Mr. *Thomas Savage* to be chief Managers at the *Isinglass River*, which had been lately discover'd; and there were great Expectations of a mighty Advantage to the Company by that Discovery, but it came to nothing, tho' there was a Factory settled there, in order to promote it.

The Company intended to plant a Colony at *Charlton Island*, and order'd Mr. *Sergeant* to build a Fort there, and always keep some Men upon it. Warehouses were also built to receive the Furs that were brought thither from the Factories, and Conveniences were made for the Reception of such as were oblig'd to winter there. The Company always enjoyn'd their Governours to endeavour to save the great Charge they were at in sending constant Supplies of Provisions, by planting Corn and other Grain there. But alas! Tho' the Climate by its Distance from the Sun, should be as warm as ours; yet for Reasons, which the Naturalists will easily give us, 'tis so cold and frosty, that it kills almost all sorts of Roots in the Ground which are sown there; and those Plantations, so often recommended by the Company, were chimerical and impracticable.

Orders were also given to dismiss Cap. *Gillam* their Service, for his Sons Offences; and Cap. *Sandford* had the same Usage, on Account of his Relation to the *Gillam's*; for there's nothing so terrible to a Monopolizer, as an Interloper. Cap. *William Bond*, who had been under Mr. *Baily*, was sent for home; and other Regulations made in the Management of Affairs; But all could not hinder the Ruin of them all by the Enemy.

The Company, by their Governours and Agents, made such Compacts with the Captains or Kings of the Rivers and Territories where they had Settlements, for the Freedom of Trade there, exclusive of all others, that the *Indians* could not pretend they had encroach'd upon them. These Compacts were render'd as firm as the *Indians* could make them, by such

such Ceremonies as were most sacred and obligatory among them.

Now were the Company in Possession of five Settlements, viz. *Albany River*, *Hayes Island*, *Rupert River*, *Port Nelson*, and *New Severn*. Their Trade at each of them was considerable. From *Albany River* they had generally 3500 Beavers a Year; and by Mr. *Sergeant's* great Care and Fidelity, their Commerce increas'd so much, that the *French* began to be afraid all the *Upland Indians* might be drawn down to the Bay. They knew they could do any thing with King *James II.* who then reign'd in *England*, and that no Affront would make that Prince break with *Lewis* the XIVth. Wherefore they resolv'd to drive the *English* out of all their Places in the Bottom of the Bay. First, they took *Hayes Island*, and then the Fort on *Rupert's River*. The *French* Company at *Canada* procur'd a Detachment of Soldiers to be sent under the Chevalier *de Troyes*; who came over Land from *Quebec*, and in a time of profound Peace committed these Acts of Hostility.

'Tis worth observing that the *French* have so good an Opinion of their *American Colonies*, as to take not only all lawful, but even unlawful Means to preserve and enlarge them, as contemptible as they are in themselves; whereas the *English*, who, next the *Spaniards*, have the richest Plantations in that Part of the World, have been as negligent of them as if they were not worth keeping.

The 8th of *July*, 1686. the Chevalier *de Troyes* came before the Fort at *Albany River*; where the Governour, Mr. *Sergeant*, then resided. Two *Indians* had inform'd him of their having surpriz'd the Forts at *Hayes Island*, and *Rupert River*, and had brought with them the great Guns from those Places.

Two Hours after, the *English* heard them discharge their Guns, and saw some of them at a Distance. Upon which part of the Company's Servants declar'd, they would not venture their Lives unless they might be assur'd of Pay, and sent *John Parsons* and *John Garret*, two of their Number, in all their Names, to the Governour, to tell him their Re-  
so-

solutions. Mr. *Sergeant*, by Promises, and giving them Cloaths, and other Necessaries, prevail'd with them to return to their Charge. But in a Day or two they mutiny'd again, and *Elias Turner* the Gunner, possess'd the People with an Apprehension, that it was impossible to hold out the Place; declaring, that for his Part he would throw himself on the *French*. Accordingly he went to the Governour, and desir'd Leave so to do; but being threatned to be shot to Death, in case he attempted it, he was at last perswaded to return to his Post.

The *English* shot at the *French* as long as they appear'd in the *Brushes*, and forc'd them to retire under the Banks, where the Guns from the Fort could not hit them. The *French* shot only at the *English* with small Shot, as any of them appear'd upon the *Flankers*. When they had retir'd under the Banks, they set to work to entrench themselves, and cast up a great Bank of Earth, which cover'd them so, that the *English* could do no Execution upon them.

The Governour all this while imagin'd, the Enemy was only raising a Bank to secure themselves from the Shot of the Fort: But afterwards he perceiv'd they were preparing a Battery; and then he commanded the Guns of the Fort to fire upon them incessantly, which however did them no hurt.

*Frederic Johnson*, who officiated as Gunner, on *Turner's* refusing to act, advis'd Mr. *Sergeant* not to shoot away the Remainder of the great Shot in the Fort, there being not above a Round more; and he suppos'd the *French* must have brought their Guns by Water; if so, he hop'd to sink their Boats; which would have done more Service, than firing upon their Entrenchments. But the *French* had found a Way to bring their great Guns thro' the Woods, and had planted them on their Battery before the *English* saw them.

The Governour sent out *Francis Cave* and *John Michem*, to see if they could observe the Posture of their Enemies; and the Spies brought Word, that they had finish'd their Battery, and mounted their Guns, which they saw them load. This

This so disheartned the People, that assembling themselves together, they agreed to depute the most considerable among them to go to the Governour, and in all their Names press him to make the best Terms he could, and surrender the Fort. Accordingly *Edward Coles, Philip Scovell, Hugh Mitchel, William Arrington, William Holder, John Stephens,* and others, came to Mr. *Sergeant*, and declar'd, they would stand by him no longer; alledging, 'twas in vain to think they should be able to hold out. They added, If any of them should loose a Leg or an Arm, or be kill'd, they had Reason to doubt, whether the Company would take Care of them, their Wives, or Children, instancing the Case of one *Coleburn*; wherefore they demanded of him to capitulate.

In the mean time the *French* fir'd upon the *Flankers*; and the *English*, whatever the Governour commanded them to the contrary, abandon'd their Posts. He refus'd to beat a Parley, and threatned those that would not do their Duty.

The Enemy's Shot had made a Breach in the *Flankers*; and damag'd the Houses in the Fort. Upon which, and the repeated Desires of the Men, who said, *The Year would be so far spent, that they could not hope to get home, but must be starv'd if the Factory should be taken*, the Governour consented to a Parley; Mr. *Bridger* assuring him the Enemy were *Mining* them, and they should certainly be blown up: Cap. *Outlaw* also agreed to capitulate, and the white Flag was hung out. After which a Treaty was concluded, and is as follows.

---

ARTICLES agreed upon between the Chevalier de Troyes, Commander in Chief of the Detachment of the North-West, for the French Company at Canada; and Henry Sergeant, Esq; Governour for the English Company of Hudson's-Bay, July 16. 1686.

Imprimis. *IT is agreed upon to deliver up the Fort, together with all the Goods belonging to the said Company, which are to be schedul'd for the mutual clearing of us the fore-nam'd, and Satisfaction of all Parties.*

II. *That all the Company's Servants at Albany River shall enjoy all Wearing Apparel belonging to themselves.*

III. *That the aforesaid Henry Sergeant, Esq; Governour, shall enjoy and possess all that belongs to himself; and that his Minister, his three Men Servants and Maid Servant, shall constantly be permitted to remain with him, and attend him.*

IV. *That the Chevalier de Troyes shall convey all the Company's Servants to Charlton Island, there to expect English Ships for their Transportation; and if English Ships should not arrive, then the aforesaid Chevalier de Troyes is to assist them with what Vessels the Country affords, for their Conveyance into England.*

V. *That the said Chevalier de Troyes shall deliver to the said Henry Sergeant, Esq; Governour, or to his Store-house-Keeper, such Provisions as shall be*

be thought fitting and necessary to carry them for England, if no Ships come from thence, and in the mean time give them such Sustenance as shall be sufficient for them.

VI. That all the Store-houses shall be lock'd up, and the Keys deliver'd to the said Chevalier de Troyes's Lieutenant; that nothing may be in the said Store-houses embezzled, till the Account be taken, according to the First Article.

Lastly, That the Governour and all the Company's Servants at Albany River, shall come out of the Fort, and deliver it up to the said Chevalier de Troyes; all Men, the Governour and his Son excepted, being without Arms, which is to be forthwith.

Accordingly the Fort was surrender'd, but the French made no Scruple to break so much of the Articles as they could get any thing by; for they plunder'd Mr. Sergeant of all his Goods, and sent him and his Family away in a very ordinary Bark, ill supply'd with Provisions: Such is the Honour of that Nation.

The Company, notwithstanding it appears very plain by the above-mention'd Account, which was sworn to before Samuel Keck, Esq; a Master in Chancery, that the Governour did all he could to defend the Fort, us'd him at his Return to England as barbarously almost as the French had done; but his Majesty was pleas'd to take him into his Service, which was the best Justification of his Conduct.

At this time, Thomas Phips, Esq; was Governour of Port Nelson, which was not then taken by the French; and the Company expected Fort Albany would have been restor'd to them in King James's time, but all their Sollicitations were in vain, and all the Settlements they had, Port Nelson excepted, were abandon'd to the French. King William, in his Declaration of War against the French King, takes this particular Notice of de Troyes's invading Hudson's Bay, and destroying the English Factories there, as the French had done in other Places.

## The History of Hudson's Bay.

But that the French King should invade our Charibbee-Islands, and possess himself of our Territories of the Province of New-York, and Hudson's-Bay, in a hostile manner, seizing our Forts, burning our Subjects Ships, and enriching his People with the Spoil of their Goods and Merchandizes, detaining some of our Subjects under the Hardship of Imprisonment, causing others to be inhumanly kill'd, and driving the rest to Sea in a small Vessel, are Actions not becoming even an Enemy; and yet he was so far from declaring himself so, that at that very time he was negotiating here in England by his Ministers a Treaty of Neutrality and good Correspondence in America. Such was King William's Judgment of his Fraud and Violence, which his Predecessor, with an unparallel'd Complacency, excus'd.

The War breaking out, as has been said, between the two Nations, the *Hudson's-Bay* Company solicited for Soldiers to be sent thither to recover their Settlements; and in the Year 1693. they retook all the Forts and Factories, which the *French* had taken from them in time of Peace.

John Knight, Esq; Governour of Fort Albany.

In which Expedition they met with no more Difficulties than the Chevalier de Troyes had met with. Cap. *Grinnington* was the Person employ'd for this Service; and *John Knight*, Esq; was appointed Governour of Fort *Albany*: But his Government was of no long Continuance; for in a little time the *French* sent such a Power against the *English*, that they again drove them from all their Settlements in the Bottom of the Bay.

The *French* Company made Monsieur de *la Fores* Governour of Fort *Albany*, and garrison'd all the Forts they had taken; which made it necessary for the Government to send a stronger Power than the Company could raise to recover them.

The King of *England*, to protect their Trade, assign'd them two Men of War for their Service, in the Year 1695. as the *Bonaventure*, Cap. *Allen* Commander, and the *Seaford*.

Cap. *Allen*, coming into the River *Hayes*, sent to summon all the Forts to surrender; and the *French* Governour finding he could not defend them



them against the *English*, capitulated, and on the 2d of *August*, 1696. surrender'd *Albany* Fort, upon certain Articles; the Chief of which were, That all those in the Fort, as well French as Indians, and one Englishman, the Governour's Servant, should have their Lives and Liberties, and that no Harm or Violence should be done to their Persons, or any thing that belong'd to them; That they should march out with their Arms, Drums beating, Colours flying, Match lighted at both ends, Ball in Mouth, and carry with them the two Guns they brought from France; That they should all embark with their Cloaths and Goods, without being visited or pillag'd in any thing; and if they met with any French Vessels, there should be a Truce between the English and them; and the said French Vessels should be permitted to take aboard the Persons that came out of the said Fort, with all that belong'd to them. These Conditions were a little too honourable to grant, but not to be comply'd with.

Cap. *Allen* took the Governour, and some of his Men, aboard his own Ship; some he put aboard the *Seaford*, and the rest aboard a Merchant-Man, call'd the *Dering*.

In his Return, he fought the *Mary Rose* Frigate, then a French Privateer of 50 Guns, and was kill'd in the Engagement, which gave the Frenchman an Opportunity to bear away.

As to the other two Forts, they follow'd the Fate of *Albany*, and Mr. *Knight* was restor'd to his Government. At which time, *John Geyer*, Esq; was Governour of Port *Nelson*. Mr. *Knight* had serv'd Mr. *Sergeant* while he was Governour of Fort *Albany*, and was well acquainted with the Trade.

In the Year 1697. the *Hampshire* Frigate, and Owners *Love* Fire-ship, two of the King's Ships, were lost in this Bay, and all the Men drown'd. Indeed the Ice renders it so dangerous, that the Commerce seems not to be worth the Risk that is run for it. Whether those two Ships ran against those frozen Mountains that float in that Sea, or founder'd, is not known; but 'tis certain, they were lost, and that all the Men perish'd.

*The History of Hudson's Bay.*

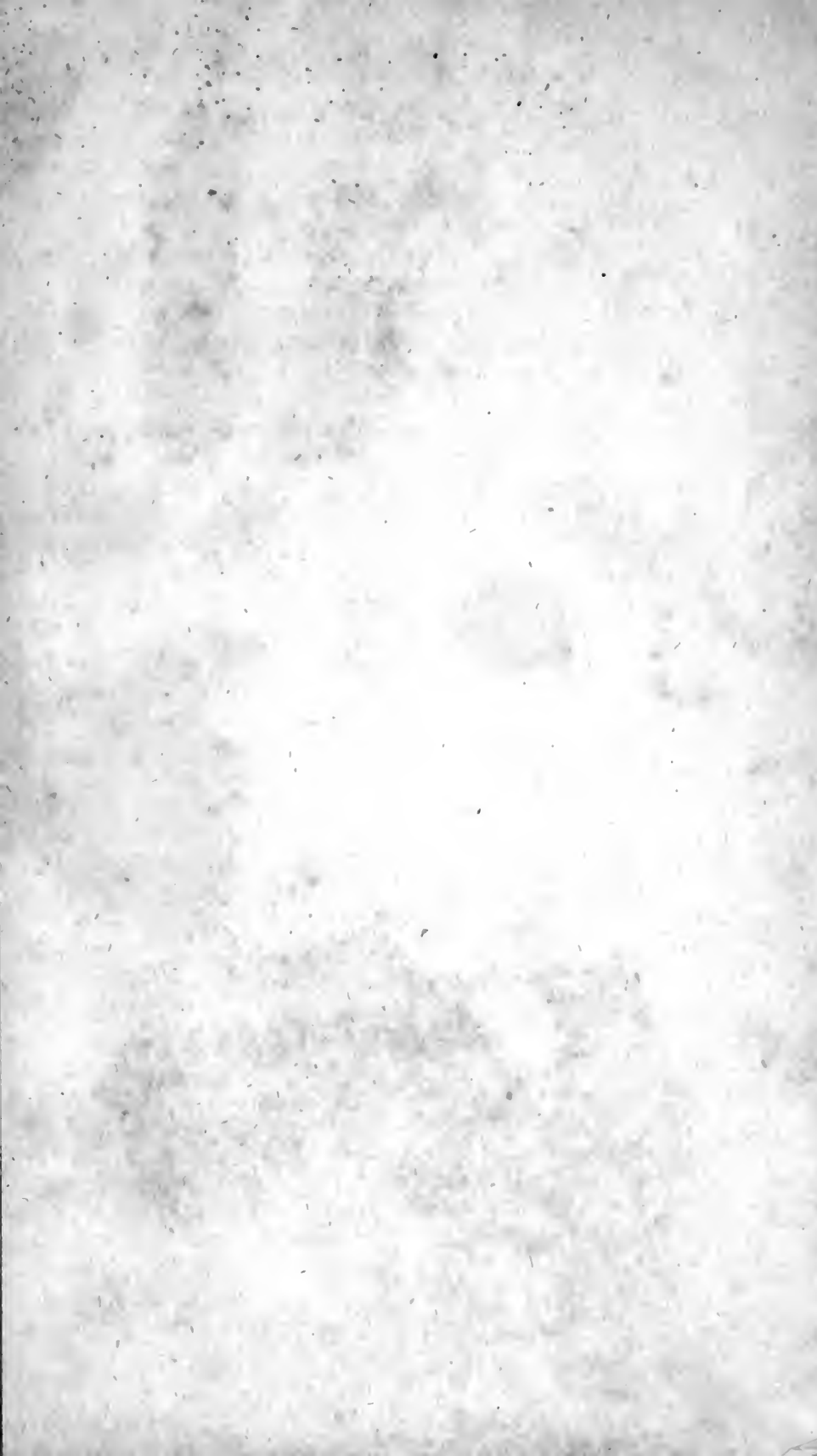
The Trade to this Bay has decreas'd, ever since the use of Beavers has fallen off in *England*. Peltry is not now the Commodity it was, and this Company of Consequence does not make the Figure they did 13 or 14 Years ago.

In the present War, they lost Port *Nelson* to the *French*; and have either given up, or deserted all their Settlements, except Fort *Albany*; where Mr. *Knight* manag'd their Affairs, till the Year 1706. when he was succeeded by

*John Fullerton*, Esq; the present Governour at  
*Albany River*.

---

*The End of the First Volume.*





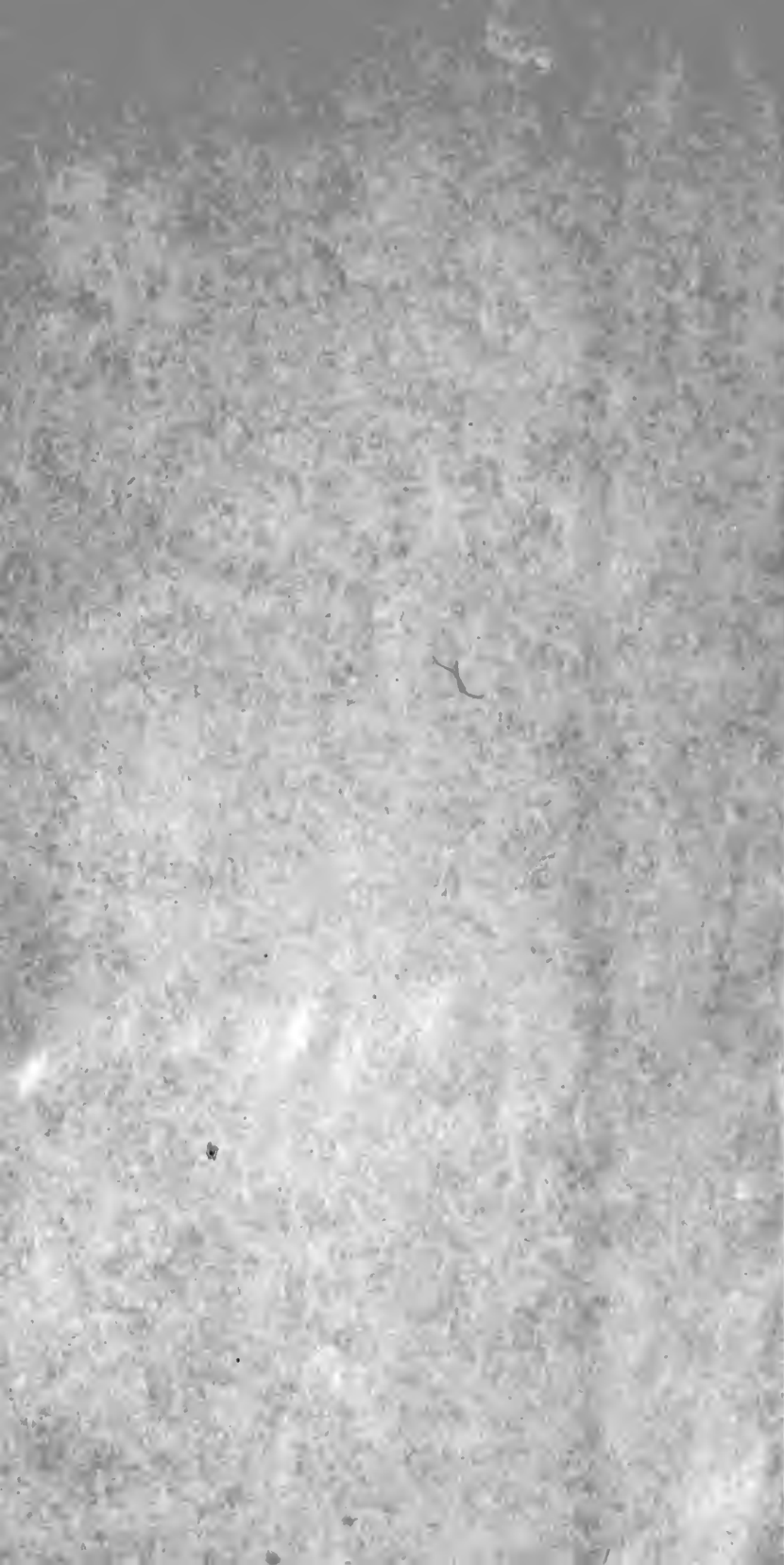














Deacidified using the Baker's process.  
Neutralizing agent: Magnesium Oxide  
Treatment Date: Jan. 2003

## **PreservationTechnologies**

A WORLD LEADER IN PAPER PRESERVATION

111 Thomson Park Drive  
Cranberry Township, PA 15066  
724-779-2111

